SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 10

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: Talent Technique

Only the flesh and the blood type of living creature could practice the Nine Volume Manual. Luo Feng's Mosha body was an energy type living creature, and thus, his power was significantly weaker than his original earthling body and Golden Horned Beast body, even after being injected with the essence from an original real treasure like the "space heart."

Mosha body never surpassed the limit of increasing 100 times. It was destined for Mosha body to be far weaker when it came to strength. He was mainly useful for fleeing, hiding, and disguise. When it came to fighting, Luo Feng had to depend on his original body and the Golden Horned Beast body.

As for a body like Nine Remoteness Ocean, Luo Feng had chosen it because of the boundless ocean of godly power.

"Hahaha!" Luo Feng's laughter swept across the internal world like a shockwave. "Well, this is a happy surprise! The third body can practice the Nine Volume Manual, which means he has unlimited potential. Perhaps he can someday be Nine Remoteness Master's match. I'll call my third body... Remote Ocean body."

It was official. Luo Feng's original body and three additional bodies had been determined. He had his original earthling body, his Golden Horned Beast body, his Mosha body, and his Remote Ocean body.

Luo Feng was filled with boundless pride. With his original earthling body and these three bodies, nothing would stop him from becoming one of the great beings in the universe!

"The seed has been planted," he said. "It'll be up to my efforts to decide whether I remain a weak sapling or grow into the sturdiest tree! I need to study into my Remote Ocean body first."

Remote Ocean body looked exquisite—a giant body standing

nearly 6,000 miles tall. Presently, he sat on the plain with his legs crossed like a giant sculpture.

"My strength is 300 times of that of a sector lord," Remote Ocean body said in a deep voice. "My Remote Ocean body's life gene level is 300 times while the sector lord level World Tree is around 1,000 times. That explains why I was able to successfully breed this Remote Ocean body but not the World Tree body. But it seems too large for a living being of 300 times life gene level..."

Generally speaking, the higher the life gene level, the larger the size. Of course, special organisms of the plant race and rock race had terrifically large bodies even if they had life gene levels that were hundreds of times. After all, even ordinary life forms like Cloud Contact Vines were already over one million miles tall. Life forms of the plant race had a natural size advantage.

"Remote Ocean body is a flesh and blood type living being. How can he be so large?"

Upon careful examination, Luo Feng realized Remote Ocean body had law energy flowing through his bones, muscles, vessels, and blood, and there was information hidden in the energy.

Luo Feng studied the information with his mind. "So, that's the case..." Remote Ocean body whispered. "Even Primal Chaos City Leader doesn't know what talent techniques Nine Remoteness Master has. He must have talent techniques, given that my Remote Ocean body has two talent techniques."

The information contained within the colossal body shed light on some of the mysteries of Nine Remoteness World. Remote Ocean body had two talent techniques. The first one was "Transformed Ocean" and the second was "Creation."

Transformed Ocean allowed Remote Ocean body to instantly turn into an ocean with a diameter of around 60,000 miles, and the time and space within it would be controlled by the ocean. The stronger Remote Ocean body got, the more control the body had

over time and space. While he was still relatively weak, he could only affect time and space to a small extent, but when he became sufficiently strong, he would be like Nine Remoteness Master, whose grip on his Nine Remoteness Ocean had reached its limit. It was so powerful that no other universe masters even dared to enter Nine Remoteness Space.

The second talent technique was Creation. When the body became an ocean, its flesh and blood were all transformed into a Bloody Sea, after which his Creation talent could extract energies from the ocean and reorganize the life genes to create new life forms. He could even create a new race—if he was proficient with the talent—and the new lives would always submit to the master who had created them.

"Such powerful talent techniques...!" Remote Ocean body said in a deep voice. "No wonder the body is so enormous. He wouldn't be able to turn into an ocean with a smaller body. Once he turns into an ocean, he can, in a way, control time and space around the ocean, which makes him significantly stronger.

This kind of incredible attacking skill was a bit like the "Manipulation of Time and Space" talent used by World Trees.

"As for Creation, it might be considered a mediocre skill, but this is likely how the indigenous race in Nine Remoteness World was created. Energy life forms are the easiest to create, as long as there are life cores." Luo Feng nodded. "Although it's a mediocre talent at present, it could be used to create an entire race completely obedient to me.

"Haha!" Remote Ocean body's voice echoed through the internal world. "I've obtained everything I wanted—and even some things I didn't expect! This Remote Ocean Body can affect the space and time around him, and he has a talent technique in space and time. Plus, it's a flesh and blood type of living being."

"Still," muttered Luo Feng. "Why is the size of the Bloody Sea so

bizarre? His talent technique says he can turn into an ocean with a diameter of around 60,000 miles, but that is much smaller than those of the princes and Nine Remoteness Master."

Remote Ocean body frowned and considered the implications of its size. Sector lord princes had Bloody Seas with diameters of around 50 million miles. Undying princes had Royal Seas with diameters of around 600 million miles. Universe knight princes had Royal Seas with diameters from 20 billion to 60 billion miles.

Although Remote Ocean body possessed the Transformed Ocean talent, he could only turn into a sea with a diameter of around 60,000 miles, which was minuscule even by the standards of sector lord princes.

"Transformed Ocean!"

Remote Ocean performed his talent technique.

Hong! Long!

His flesh and bones suddenly melted, changing into a surging Bloody Sea in Luo Feng's internal world. Luo Feng could feel his control on the Bloody Sea, but it was feeble; it was only at the sector lord level. However, he could sense time and space distinctly. Apparently, he had incredible talent in time and space.

"Larger," said Luo Feng. "Larger... Grow larger!"

Luo Feng controlled the Bloody Sea with his mind, but no matter how hard he tried, the diameter remained at 60,000 miles, which couldn't even match that of a sector lord prince.

The Bloody Sea churned in the sky while Mosha body and Golden Horned Beast stood on the plains, contemplating what they were seeing.

Luo Feng was perplexed. "Why...? Why is the volume of my transformed ocean so much smaller than that of the Nine Remoteness Master and the 108 princes?"

The Bloody Sea only had a diameter of only 60,000 miles. However, lots of unique life forms in the universe were 60,000 miles tall or long. As for creatures of the plant race and rock race, plenty of them were larger than that.

After he thought about it for a while, a thought occurred to Luo Feng.

"Something's wrong," he said. "Nine Remoteness Master and the 108 princes... They seem to be different from me somehow. My Transformed Ocean technique can transform my body into a Bloody Sea instantly, but it can also change it back to the original body, too."

"However," said Luo Feng, "those 108 Royal Seas and the Nine Remoteness Ocean haven't changed or even moved for hundreds of millions of years!"

Nine Remoteness Ocean had a diameter of over 10 light years. For an eternity, the Nine Remoteness Ocean had remained in the Ancestral God Secret Region, and the seas of the 108 princes had remained at the center of Nine Remoteness World.

"Primal Chaos City Leader teacher said that Nine Remoteness Master will sometimes go out and fight," said Luo Feng. "And if he dies, the Nine Remoteness Ocean will breed another Nine Remoteness Master. But how is that possible? Transformed Ocean and the original body can't exist at the same time. If the original body were killed, he would fall forever. If the body can be born again... that can only mean that it's not the original body that was killed."

Luo Feng stroked his chin in deep thought. "There's only one way Nine Remoteness Master can do this. He must have transformed his body into the ocean, then created an energy body using his Creation talent. The energy body can then be condensed again, even after being destroyed."

Nine Remoteness Ocean has never moved, Luo Feng realized.

And perhaps it's not because he doesn't want to move. Perhaps he can't move at all. And that means... he never actually leaves Nine Remoteness Space. As vast as the Nine Remoteness Ocean is, it can never move.

Luo Feng quickly extrapolated from what he observed. Gradually, he saw the complete story.

Nine Remoteness master and his princes used some special methods to enlarge their oceans, thought Luo Feng. The tradeoff is that they can't move the oceans freely anymore. Even though they can't move the oceans, the volume gives them nearly boundless godly power, and thus, they become immortal.

Special organisms of the plant race and rock race also found it difficult to move. The larger the bodies were, the more difficult it was for them to move. For an enormous being like Nine Remoteness Ocean, it was unsurprising that he was unable to move at will.

"But how did they enlarge their oceans to such an extent?" Luo Feng muttered.

The Bloody Sea with a diameter of around 160,000 miles kept churning in the sky. What did he need to do to turn it into one with a diameter of 50 million miles? They were at completely different levels. A 50-million-mile ocean had much greater energy, and generally, even if someone became undying, their size did not change. That meant Remote Ocean body's height would remain at 6,000 miles, and the Transformed Ocean would remain 60,000 miles. Yet the oceans of the undying and universe knight princes kept expanding. The largest of which was 60 billion miles.

"How did Nine Remoteness Master and his prince accomplish that?"

Chapter 1002: Creation!

The Bloody Sea churned above the extensive plains as Luo Feng attempted to enlarge its size, but all methods thus far had failed.

After three days of trying, Luo Feng finally admitted defeat.

"Remote Ocean body can't absorb energies because there's no room for further storage. The Bloody Sea has already hit its limit, and it can't be expanded even an inch larger. Nine Remoteness Master, how did you enlarge the Remoteness Ocean?"

Luo Feng, clothed in black, gazed at the turbulent Bloody Sea and murmured to himself, "Why don't you just ask Nine Remoteness Master?"

This was obviously a secret. When Nine Remoteness Master first came into being, he clearly didn't have such an enormous Nine Remoteness Ocean. He must have figured out some special means so that even his princes could have enormous Royal Seas.

"I'll try my second technique, Creation," said Luo Feng. "The idea that I can create life is a great mystery."

Luo Feng's mind merged with the Bloody Sea. The moment he cast the second technique, he felt like he was entering a new domain. The air and the grass were all dissected beneath his gaze; it was like seeing through to the very nature of these life forms.

Luo Feng looked at the weeds on the plain. "Creation," he said, and grass came into being. "Creation," he said again, and a flower was born in the Bloody Sea. "Create Mosha body," he said.

A moment passed, and Luo Feng realized that the Mosha body was too complex to be created instantly.

"Creating plants doesn't give me any sense of accomplishment," said Luo Feng. "I need to create moving lives. I must!"

After only a few moments, and Luo Feng was already addicted to

the process of creation.

World energies could change plants and rivers, but Creation was something more than that. Creation could replicate the constitution of life by observation. Luo Feng presumed that replicating the constitution of life forms was the most basic skill, but those who were proficient—like Nine Remoteness Master—could create an entire species.

Creation was a magical thing. Although the process couldn't improve one's power directly, it would be majestic to create a species.

No wonder master Zuo Shan Ke can guide and lead an entire race, Luo Feng thought. But I'm different from him. I can create life forms with my talent technique, whereas Zuo Shan Ke guided an existing race and led that race to evolve under some special environments.

******

Luo Feng began to experiment. First, he put some small, weak life forms into his internal world. He quickly realized that the weaker the power was, the simpler the life gene constitution was. For those living beings that were too powerful, it was difficult to even see their constitution distinctly, let alone replicate it.

"Nine Remoteness Master became an ocean first, then created an energy body, and finally, created a race," Luo Feng realized after experimenting with his new talent technique for half a month.

The constitution of complex life forms was impossibly intricate, making it exceedingly difficult to create a brand new race. Nine Remoteness Master must have expended a great degree of effort before learning how to create a mature race. His 108 princes must have been instructed to emulate him, but they had all failed, as they couldn't conquer the obstacles. It required an astounding amount of energy to create even a single life form—not to mention a supreme race whose members had life imprints high enough to

think intelligently, train themselves, and become sector lords once they matured.

No wonder sector lord princes can't create new lives, thought Luo Feng. The more advanced the life forms are, the more energy it takes to create them. However... It's easiest to create oneself.

Each drop of the Bloody Sea had come from Remote Ocean body, which was why the Bloody Sea water contained the life genes of Remote Ocean body. If he wanted to create another Remote Ocean body, he didn't need any life constitution, as each drop of the water was comprised of such life constitution.

"Creation!"

Hua! Hua! Hua!

The Bloody Sea started to tremble, and a naked body appeared. It quickly disappeared, however, and its energy was absorbed back into the Bloody Sea.

"Creation!"

Another 300-foot-tall body showed up and disappeared.

"Creation!"

Another body appeared. This one was only three feet in height. It, too, quickly disappeared.

"Creation!"

******

Luo Feng kept trying. After much trial and error, he found out that the largest body he could create was 600 miles tall, which was a smaller version of Remote Ocean body.

"Something's wrong," said Luo Feng. "Remote Ocean body has a life gene level 300 times greater. Why does the newly created Remote Ocean body only have a life gene level of 30 times?"

Luo Feng realized the problem. The new Remote Ocean body was

only 600 miles tall—just one-tenth the original height. His life gene level was only 30 times greater, which was also one-tenth of the original version.

"There are some flaws in 'Creation.'" He laughed. "But maybe this is how it's supposed to be."

There was a vast difference between the talent technique Creation and the evolution of the universe. Even if he could replicate the body's constitution completely, the duplicate was still inferior, as it didn't have any talent techniques and had significantly lower life gene level.

"It would go against the laws of the universe for a Bloody Sea to be able to create a new Remote Ocean body as powerful as the original."

After some time, he realized that each time he created a new Remote Ocean body, it consumed nearly one-tenth of his energies, and the volume of the Bloody Sea shrunk. Each body was being immediately absorbed into the ocean was because the Bloody Sea was reabsorbing the energies to recover its size.

"When the Bloody Sea is complete, it can't absorb any energies," said Luo Feng, "but it can when it suffers some losses."

Luo Feng got an idea.

"Absorb! Absorb!"

Hong!

The world energies flooded into the Bloody Sea. After just a short while, the Bloody Sea finished and regained its original size.

"The Bloody Sea has fully recovered, but the new Remote Ocean body is still right beside it," said Luo Feng. "They draw energies from the same origin. Now... melt!"

The new Remote Ocean body fell into the Bloody Sea and melted into the water. The energies merged with the original sea, and the

volume surged. The Bloody Sea was enlarged, pressing outward against the space around it. The space and time controlled by the Bloody Sea were also expanded.

"Haha! So, this is how it works!" said Luo Feng, overjoyed. "Create a new Remote Ocean body, wait for the Bloody Sea recover, then melt the new Remote Ocean body back into water, thus combining it with the original Bloody Sea!"

******

"Creation!" commanded Luo Feng. "Recover!"

Luo Feng went through the process repeatedly. Each time, the Bloody Sea could absorb more energy.

"Melt! Condense!"

The Bloody Sea was enlarged again.

It expanded ten times in succession.

"Turn back," said Luo Feng.

But when he tried to turn the ocean back into the original body, it failed. The ocean was bloated with energy. It was like an overweight, middle-aged man—too plump from years of overeating to run and jump as he had in his trimmer years! The Bloody Sea was simply too large to turn back into its original body.

"No wonder Nine Remoteness Master can always be revived no matter how many times he dies," said Luo Feng. "It's because those that die are actually the bodies created by the ocean. The original body is Nine Remoteness Ocean itself."

Now that Luo Feng understood the secret completely, he started to laugh. The His echoed across the Bloody Sea.

"Dissipate! Dissipate!"

The sea resolved into world energies and dispersed. Instantly, the world energies that had been added due to his experimentation vanished.

"Turn back," he commanded.

A Remote Ocean original body standing at a height of almost 6,000 miles showed up again. It was the same original body with a life gene level of 300 times greater.

When Nine Remoteness Master obtained an immortal body, his combat power must have been weakened at the same time, thought Luo Feng. After all, he relies on his created bodies to fight outside. You gain some, you lose some... It would take an eternity for Nine Remoteness Ocean to reach its current size. It must have expanded stably for a long time. It would be impossible for Nine Remoteness master to dissipate his godly power and turn into a being with a diameter of 6,000 miles.

Luo Feng now understood why Nine Remoteness Master was invincible. He was already a universe master, and he continuously stored godly power so as to expand Nine Remoteness Ocean. As a result, Nine Remoteness Ocean now had a diameter of over 10 light years.

It seemed his quantitative changes had led to qualitative changes. The Nine Remoteness Ocean could already rival the most powerful true treasure in the universe, and the only downside was that it was immovable.

"I've already figured out the secret behind this," said Luo Feng. He was exhilarated. "But I don't need to expand the ocean yet. There's one more vital thing... Remote Ocean body needs to practice the Nine Volume Manual!"

Luo Feng had been looking forward to this.

******

Remote Ocean body had a life gene level 300 times greater, and finishing the first five volumes of Nine Volume Manual could improve a being's life gene level 48 times. Once Remote Ocean body started to practice, he could theoretically hit 14,400 times.

However, based on Luo Feng's knowledge, even the special life forms of the universe only had life gene levels of a few thousand times greater.

"10,000 times greater," said Luo Feng. "That seems to be the limit of the life gene level of special life forms. I'll personally discover the true limit of a life gene level in the universe!"

Luo Feng felt inspired. If the limit truly was 10,000 times, Remote Ocean body could hit that limit with Nine Volume Manual. However, if the limit was more than 10,000 times, Remote Ocean body would step into a new, previously unknown realm. How could Luo Feng not be excited about the possibilities?

Luo Feng looked forward to this, but the overall premise was that Remote Ocean body first needed to practice the Nine Volume Manual.

"Although he's a special life form, he is a flesh and blood type of living being. He must be able to practice it."

Luo Feng thought so, anyway. He was, however, a bit afraid of the limitations of the universe law. After all, his original earthling body and his Golden Horned Beast body were both ordinary life forms, yet they both had life gene level thousands of times greater after practicing Nine Volume Manual. This time... Remote Ocean body would target the legendary limit!

"Begin!"

Remote Ocean body sat down on the plain with his legs crossed and started to practice Nine Volume Manual.

Chapter 1003: Change after 500 Years

Remote Ocean body would be a great combat power if he could practice the Nine Volume Manual. If he couldn't, then he could only focus on training and godly power support.

"It worked!" Remote Ocean body suddenly laughed. "My life gene level was improved after practicing the Nine Volume Manual. How magical it is! No wonder Zuo Shan Ke is one of the universe supreme masters."

Luo Feng admired his mysterious teacher more. He felt intimidated by the top-tier beings of the universe. If Zuo Shan Ke was able to create the Nine Volume Manual, what about other supreme masters?

I'm nothing compared to them, thought Luo Feng. I must train myself and catch up to them. As for any other issues, I'll wait until I become their rival.

Luo Feng stopped thinking and went back to practice. He only knew that he was not powerful enough yet! He was indeed lucky to have figured out a way to expand the Bloody Sea created by Remote Ocean body—and luckier still that Remote Ocean body was able to practice the Nine Volume Manual.

Although Remote Ocean body could practice the Nine Volume Manual, it would take him a long time to finish the first five volumes. He was even bigger than Golden Horned Beast body, meaning it would take a longer time for him to evolve. Even though Luo Feng was fully experienced, it would take the new body 100 years to finish the first volume.

******

While Remote Ocean body practiced the Nine Volume Manual, the other bodies studied into space law, Star Map, and Moon Policy. 100 years passed like the blink of an eye.

Remote Ocean body opened his eyes gradually after sitting there like a sculpture, and whispered, "I've finished the first volume. My life gene level is now 900 times stronger!"

From 300 times to 900 times... The first volume had improved his life gene level threefold! And all that from only the first volume!

Luo Feng was further amazed. No wonder this technique was restricted by the universe law so that Zuo Shan Ke couldn't pass it on to any other life forms. He could only pass it on to one living being with the help of Heavenly Soul Crystals.

"I can't wait!" said Luo Feng. "If I can improve the life gene level from 300 times to 900 times so easily, then next time it'll be 1,800 times. Continue!"

Remote Ocean body closed his eyes and started the second volume.

******

It was magnificent to feel his improvement every second. After the second volume was finished, Remote Ocean body's life gene level hit 1,800 times, as expected. And when the third volume was finished, he reached 3,600 times.

All the best-case scenarios were coming true.

******

In the primal region, among the Thousand Treasure River, in the palace at the apex.

Six universe knights sat with their legs crossed, listening to Primal Chaos City Leader's teaching.

"Luo Feng told me that it would take him around 600 years to finish breeding his third body and that he would become undying after finishing the third body," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "But it's been almost 1,000 years... Why isn't anything happening?"

Primal Chaos City Leader looked afar and saw a palace in the distance. Inside the palace, the original earthling body sat cross-legged with Tian Chen Emperor guarding him.

"Luo Feng is incredibly lucky that he's got several true treasures," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "Maybe something special happened to him again, and that's why there's a delay. I'll leave him alone to fix it."

Primal Chaos City Leader kept teaching the six universe knights sitting in the palace. He decided to put the problem out of his mind. He was quite satisfied with Luo Feng. And after all, Luo Feng was full of surprises.

******

Time passed. It had been over 1,000 years since Luo Feng had first started to breed his third body, and he had spent that time studying space law and creating secret techniques. He had made satisfactory accomplishments on both ends, and he had been advancing slowly and steadily on the Nine Volume Manual. He finished one volume about every century.

After practicing it for 400 years, Remote Ocean body finished the fourth volume. His life gene level doubled again, hitting 7,200 times stronger!

"A life gene level of 7,200 times!"

Remote Ocean body sat with his legs crossed. His eyes gleamed like stars. He felt the power rushing through his entire body. His life gene level had been only 300 times before—nothing but mediocre. Now, his life level was already 7,200 times stronger, which was far superior to Zhu Chong Emperor.

"Perhaps this is the life gene level of Nine Remoteness Master," Remote Ocean body murmured. "Go on! The fifth volume!"

The original earthling body, Mosha body, and Golden Horned Beast body all opened their eyes and looked forward to the crucial

fifth volume.

******

Remote Ocean body's life gene level gradually improved.

7,200 times...

7,300, 7,400...

8,000, 8100...

9,000, 9100...

"I've already passed 9000 times!" said Luo Feng in astonishment.

He even stopped comprehending space law, dedicating the majority of his mind to Remote Ocean body, as he didn't dare to be careless in this matter. After his life gene level passed 9,000 times, his rate of evolution slowed down considerably.

9,500 times...

9,600...

Remote Ocean body's life gene level had already surpassed that of many extraordinary special life forms. Even many unique life forms couldn't improve themselves past 9,000 times.

At 9,600 times, it became exceedingly difficult to advance any further. It appeared that his life gene level could only be enhanced a bit more. Finally, he was nearing the threshold.

"10,000!"

And with that, its life gene level had reached the final stage.

"My life gene level is 10,000 times now!" Remote Ocean body exclaimed, feeling the power flowing inside of him. But as he continued practicing, he realized this wasn't the final stage after all. "It seems I haven't reached my limit yet. I can improve even further."

After surpassing 10,000 times, his life gene level could still be enhanced, but it was a slow, grueling process. Finally, the life gene

level stopped improving altogether.

Luo Feng gazed upon the fruits of his labor. Each inch of Remote Ocean body's skin, muscles, and bones were as immaculate as the universe itself. Its life gene level had attained the height of perfection. As incredible as the Nine Volume Manual was, not even it could improve such a flawless life gene level. Luo Feng could see the constitution of each individual cell. Even on a microscopic level, Remote Ocean body was perfect in every way.

"Perfect... Sheer perfection!" said Luo Feng. "Remote Ocean body's life gene level surpassed 10,000 times. It's now slightly over 10,000 times...!"

Remote Ocean began absorbing the surrounding world energy.

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

As Remote Ocean body was absorbed the energy, it kept growing taller, multiplying in size.

Luo Feng was exhilarated. Neither the Golden Horned Beast body nor his original earthling body had increased in size from practicing the Nine Volume Manual. However, just as Remote Ocean body had achieved perfection... he started to grow!

Remote Ocean body devoured the surrounding world energy. Although he had perfect life genes, he was only at the sector lord level; Luo Feng could support the world energies he required to grow.

He grew from 6,000 miles tall to 12,000 miles tall.

Then 18,000 miles tall.

Then 25,000 miles tall... And he just kept getting larger. Only after Remote Ocean body reached a height of 55,000 miles did he stop growing.

"Perfect," said Luo Feng. For some reason, he felt certain that this was Remote Ocean body's ideal state.

Just when Remote Ocean body stopped growing...

Hong!

The entire internal world was frozen.

Mosha body was dazed. Golden Horned Beast body kept his head lifted up. The weeds were flattened by the wind, and the sea stopped churning. The water drops were floating. The Bug Clan Queen and her bug army all froze.

The original earthling body stood still. The core—the most important part of Luo Feng—was injected with a most mysterious power. Breeding the third body had caused his core to start to morph, but when this mystical power entered the core, it changed sharply.

The color was changing. Red, green, blue, yellow, and gold... In the end, it turned blurry. This seemingly ordinary core now contained endless enigmas. This mysterious force penetrated the internal world when infusing the core. The force was irresistible. It was as warm and inviting as a mother's hug—appeasing all the living beings of the universe. It was not overbearing, but it was much stronger than that of Primal Chaos City Leader and even Zuo Shan Ke!

When the energy poured into Luo Feng's body, entering the core and the internal world, neither Chaos City Leader nor the universe knights being taught noticed it. It was the time and space protected by Thousand Treasure River and controlled by Primal Chaos City Leader! Yet, in this time and space, even the Primal Chaos City Leader couldn't feel that force.

That mysterious and inconceivable force changed Luo Feng's core while enveloping Remote Ocean body.

******

Gradually, Luo Feng opened his eyes.

"Where am I?" Luo Feng said.

He looked around, confused. A multitude of lights floated around him. Each one contained extraordinary power. Every one of them was more terrifying than Master of Sky Wolf.

"I... I just trained Remote Ocean body to a perfect state, and its size surged nine times," said Luo Feng. "And now, my mind came here...?"

Chapter 1004: I Am the Universe

Luo Feng quickly realized that the place he had been taken to was probably one of the most mysterious places—if not the most mysterious place—in an already exceedingly enigmatic universe.

Luo Feng looked around. "Universe masters are already the pinnacle beings in the universe. Who could possibly be able to harness my mind and bring it here, removing me from the territory of Primal Chaos City Leader, without being noticed? Perhaps... Only the universe itself could do this."

The light spots were floating, but they were all dodging Luo Feng. Luo Feng was bewildered.

Each of these light spots is even more powerful than Master of Sky Wolf. What are they?

Suddenly, one light spot turned into a flash of light, shooting toward Luo Feng.

Xiu!

The spot traveled much faster than lightspeed—as if lightspeed was not the speed limit in this space and time. Before Luo Feng could so much as begin to run away, the light spot hit his mind.

Hong!

Images flooded Luo Feng's mind, whizzing by in quick succession. Luo Feng saw the birth of the universe, the birth of every life form living in the universe, and their destruction. The scenes were overwhelming, and they left his mind, forgotten, about as soon as they entered. It was impossible to remember it all; an infinity's worth of information merged with his mind.

Peng!

Luo Feng's mind was kicked out of that space and time.

******

In the human territory of the universe, primal region, within the domain of Thousand-Treasure River.

Primal Chaos City Leader didn't even notice what happened. Although he could control this region of time and space, his control was nothing compared to the will of the universe itself. If the universe wanted to punish a particular universe master, it could strip him of his control over time and space.

The operation of universe laws was beyond the awareness of Primal Chaos City Leader.

******

Within Luo Feng's palace, his original earthling body, sitting with his legs crossed, opened its eyes.

"Um..."

Confusion flashed in Luo Feng's eyes, followed by shock. Bug clan queen and the bug clan warriors regained consciousness, but they had no idea what had just happened... Only Luo Feng knew that time and space had been momentarily frozen.

Luo Feng immediately examined all of his bodies. Remote Ocean body was still over 55,000 miles tall with a life gene level barely over 10,000 times.

"Nothing on my body has changed," he said. "My original earthling body, the Golden Horned Beast body, the Mosha body, and the Remote Ocean body all are the same. Except... No. Something's different."

Luo Feng instantly noticed the core in the world ring. The core had turned blurry and indistinct, as if endless space and time were contained within it.

"What... What happened to my core?" Luo Feng was astounded. He had never witnessed or heard of anything like this before. "My mind has been bestowed with information containing an incredible talent technique. The core has changed drastically as

well."

Everything happened after my Remote Ocean body reached its ideal state, he thought. The life gene level of my Remote Ocean body had just passed 10,000 times, but it hasn't hit 10,100 yet. Is it at... 10,081 times?

"So, the perfect life gene is 10,081 times of that of an ordinary life form?" Luo Feng extrapolated. He shook his head, deciding not to think about that for now. He started to examine the core again. "My mind was instructed in an incredible talent technique. The change in my core should be beneficial."

Luo Feng recalled the technique he had just obtained. He had forgotten everything about the birth and transformation of the universe, but he could distinctly remember the casting method of a set of talent techniques. He didn't know the details, nor how the set of talent techniques was created. However, the method for performing the technique was sculpted in his mind.

A set of talent techniques bestowed upon me for no reason... It must be a gift from the universe.

"Is it a gift given to me for reaching the perfect life gene level?" Luo Feng speculated.

Talent techniques were generally scripted on the skin or on the life core in the form of law engravings. However, the techniques Luo Feng had been bestowed with this time were scripted directly in his mind.

Talent technique: I Am the Universe!

This technique was extremely powerful. When it was performed, godly power was burned and transformed into a micro-universe, allowing the user to trap his enemies inside the universe. Inside the micro-universe, the enemies' power was significantly weakened, whereas Luo Feng's own power surged within it. If he chose to self-destruct, the enemies would be annihilated instantly!

This talent technique required an overwhelming amount of power. According to the instructions, the prerequisite for performing "I Am the Universe" was having a Remote Ocean body with a perfect life gene level. In addition, Remote Ocean body needed to be undying before he could perform it.

An undying Remote Ocean body, with 30-times amplification of the undying body, and the body needed to be burned—these were the basic requirements for casting "I Am the Universe." Every time it was cast, it would last for at least nine seconds. By Luo Feng's calculations, Remote Ocean body would be completely burned out after only performing it just ten times.

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. "Unbelievable! Incredible! But I love it!"

An undying Remote Ocean body was even stronger than Zhu Chong Emperor, yet the amplification needed to be 30 times or more! And burning his godly power? Even in normal combat, Luo Feng was superior to quite a few universe knights. This new technique would consume one-tenth of his more than 55,000-mile long godly body! A technique that would devour ten percent of his godly body must have been incredibly powerful. Luo Feng could hardly imagine such a thing. It was inconceivable!

For what it's worth, it's extraordinary, Luo Feng thought. Remote Ocean body is stronger than many universe knights' godly bodies, and many universe knights are only several dozen feet tall, which means most of them aren't able to perform this technique. Only those with enormous bodies can perform it.

Luo Feng knew nothing of the secrets behind I Am the Universe. Fortunately, the method for performing it had been seared into his mind.

******

"What am I supposed to do?" Luo Feng was baffled. "If I turn Remote Ocean body into a sea again, the sea will keep expanding. The new Remote Ocean body would be inferior both in size and in

life gene level, which means I wouldn't be able to perform I Am the Universe after becoming undying. Golden Horned Beast body's life gene level can advance again after becoming undying, and he could almost reach 10,000 times. However, he's only around 600 miles long, so his body won't be able to support that technique."

Luo Feng was nervous. Even a large godly body like Golden Horned Beast wasn't enough when performing I Am the Universe.

Unless, that is, Golden Horned Beast body can also gain a perfect life gene level and expand his body, Luo Feng thought. Otherwise, I could only lure enemies into the boundless Remote Ocean and let him perform the technique, but that means the boundless Remote Ocean would not be able to move.

Luo Feng was faced with a choice. Should he turn Remote Ocean body into a sea? If he did, his power would be weakened outside the boundless Remote Ocean. Plus, the only way he would be able to perform I Am the Universe would be if he was lucky enough for his Golden Horned Beast body to also reach the perfect life gene level.

On the other hand, if he chose not to turn into a sea, he would have terrific combat power. His Remote Ocean body, which stood over 55,000 miles tall, would be able to roam the universe. The downside was that his godly power would be consumed quickly, and it would be tricky to supplement the power.

Luo Feng pondered the possibilities for a couple of minutes.

"I chose this body to be immortal," said Luo Feng. "If I don't perform Transformed Ocean, I sacrifice that opportunity. Instead, I'll gain incredible combat power... But even inborn beast gods with immense combat power can still die. Survival is more important than power. As long as I can stay alive, anything is possible. Golden Horned Beast body can also be much stronger someday. Even if I can't perform I Am the Universe when I become undying, I can certainly perform it when I become a universe

knight."

Luo Feng had made up his mind. "There's no need to rush! Besides, the boundless Remote Ocean can still perform it when it becomes undying."

******

Later, the 55,000-mile-tall Remote Ocean body stood high in the sky.

"Transformed Ocean!" Remote Ocean body growled.

This would be the last time he existed in his original Remote Ocean body form. From now on, he would take the form of a sea—the boundless Remote Ocean. Even Remote Ocean body went out to fight, it would do so in the form of a body that was significantly weaker than the original.

Hong! Long! Long!

The Remote Ocean body dissipated immediately. Churning, crimson waves appeared in the sky, forming a Bloody Sea with a diameter of almost 600,000 miles.

"Talent technique, Creation!"

A Remote Ocean body that was more than 5,500 miles tall, with a life gene level of 1,000 times, appeared.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

World energy flooded into the Bloody Sea. The sea immediately recovered the energy lost by the body. The stunted body then merged with the Bloody Sea, and it expanded again.

The Bloody Sea expanded so fiercely and quickly that the universe crystals Luo Feng took from his servant were gone.

******

Undying fighters didn't carry adequate universe crystals, but universe crystals were fairly cheap. After all, the universe crystals

used to build a giant world ring were only worth one or two mixed elements. Luo Feng went to buy more.

"I'll have one million mixed elements worth of universe crystals," said Luo Feng.

"One million worth... Are you sure? A million's worth of universe crystals, Mr. Luo Feng?"

"Yes. Deliver them as soon as possible."

"Right away, Mr. Luo Feng. They will be delivered soon."

Luo Feng purchased universe crystals recklessly and threw them in his internal world. The Bloody Sea kept expanding. It soon surpassed the limit of 50 million miles.

55,000 miles...

60 million miles...

It kept expanding even as the internal world shrank.

Chapter 1005: Luo Feng's World

Hong! Long! Long!

The waves were tumbling, and Luo Feng's internal world became a Bloody Sea completely. Most of the land was devoured. The only land left was an island with a diameter of about 600,000 miles at the center of the Bloody Sea. At the center of the island was a "Dual World Pool" where the Golden Horned Beast digested everything after performing Swallow. At its center was the Golden Horn World Stone. Apart from the island, the internal world—which had a diameter of almost 60 million miles—was filled with a boundless Bloody Sea.

Hong! Long!

The bloody waves were halved, and a huge figure wearing black armor with red trim walked out on the waves. It was the newly created Remote Ocean body, standing at a height of more than 5,500 miles with a life gene level of 1,000 times.

"This is not good," Remote Ocean body murmured. The bloody waves were like springs, and he stood on top of them, riding them up and down. The entire internal world was within his sight. "The internal world has been completely flooded aside from the Dual World Pool, yet the Bloody Sea is still expanding. If the internal world keeps expanding, my core might not be able to withstand it."

Most of Luo Feng's consciousness left the Remote Ocean body and returned to the core. He started to study it carefully.

"Wait..." he said. "My core seems to have changed completely."

Indeed, the core had taken on a strange, blurry appearance after the majestic transformation, and it now seemed to be holding the 60-million-mile internal world with ease.

Normally, the larger an internal world became, the greater the burden it put on the core. For instance, if someone used the move

"Swallowing Metal" to enlarge his internal world, he needed to use gold energies to strengthen his core. Only then could he have an enormous internal world.

For some reason, my core doesn't feel pressured at all, thought Luo Feng. Does it mean the internal world can keep expanding? It's worth a try.

******

Up in the sky above Luo Feng's boundless Bloody Sea, tons of universe-crystal mountains appeared. One of them melted instantly. World energy beyond measure spread out and merged with the internal world. Until now, the Bloody Sea had been absorbing all the energy, but to make sure the Bloody Sea could keep expanding, the internal world needed more energy.

The internal world devoured the world energies like a starving child.

Hong-long! Hong-long!

The world trembled. The Bloody Sea kept growing and growing.

Atop the waves, Remote Ocean body guffawed. "Larger! My internal world can indeed grow larger! Fantastic. But the best way for the internal world to grow larger is for it to swallow metal instead of using universe crystals!"

The purest gold essence that the internal world could not absorb was concentrated on the Golden Horned World Stone and would enhance the core, strengthening it so that it could carry a larger internal world.

******

Once nearly every 1,000 years, the four pinnacle races would engage in war with one another, each time resulting in a tremendous amount of scrap metal left behind. Those remains could be reused if they were refined. Unfortunately, it was expensive to refine the remains, rendering them almost worthless.

When it came to E-level alloy remains, they were always pricey.

"I'll have 100 million mixed elements worth of scrap metal," said Luo Feng.

"Mr. Luo Feng, the amount of material you require is lower than the quota of free items for you," came the response. "They're all free."

Luo Feng grinned. An intact E-level spaceship worth 100 million mixed elements was gigantic, yet the equivalent was being given to him for free. This made scrap metal much more cost-effective than using universe crystals to expand his internal world—especially if they were being given to him for free!

******

The Golden Horned Beast went into a world ring with a diameter of more than 60,000 miles containing vast quantities of remains.

Howl!

Golden Horned Beast enlarged his body using "Deities of the World." He then opened his mouth and performed the talent technique "Swallow." The body opened its ocean-sized mouth, contorting the space within almost 60,000 miles.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

Countless metal alloy remains flooded into his mouth as if swallowed in a vast abyss. The Dual World Pool digested all the metals, and a golden mist permeated, absorbed into the internal world. The internal world started to expand crazily! The gold essence that couldn't be ingested by the internal world was absorbed by the Golden Horned World Sone.

Strangely, the core wasn't changed by the internal world as it expanded. It seemed that swallowing metals wasn't beneficial to the core at all.

"Weird," said Luo Feng. "My core has been morphing ever since I

swallowed the metal to enlarge my internal world when I became a ninth-level sector lord. Is it saturated?"

Even with the help of the Nine Volume Manual, the original Remote Ocean body couldn't improve its life gene level after hitting 10,081 times. Was this also the case for the core? Was swallowing metal no longer useful because it had already reached its peak level?

Doesn't matter, thought Luo Feng. I'll just let him swallow all the metal. He will be exhausted, but it will strengthen my Golden Horned World Stone. Generally, strong Golden Horned Beasts have internal worlds with diameters of 60 million miles, and Golden Horned World Stones are treasured by universe knights. As for mine...

Only a few unique life forms could reach a life gene level of 10,081 times... Luo Feng wasn't sure if he was the only one or not. However, given how incredible the Nine Volume Manual was, Luo Feng reckoned that even if one individual among the Golden Horned Beasts was as powerful as his, he would have been cultivated by a universe supreme master.

"Swallow the metal," Luo Feng commanded. "Time to see how powerful my Golden Horned World Stone can become."

******

The amount of alloy remains Luo Feng needed shocked even the seniors responsible for Rubbish Starfield. He bought them in a world ring, and they had hardly ever seen anyone consuming scrap metal remains so fast.

"It's still not enough," Luo Feng realized. "My internal world already has a diameter of more than 60 million miles, and it still hasn't hit its limit."

Luo Feng was completely stunned. He didn't realize that his internal world was so enormous.

"Give me more alloy remains," he said.

Luo Feng didn't take no for an answer.

"The larger my internal world is, the more stable and more powerful my future godly kingdom will be." Luo Feng looked forward to the results. "When will my internal world stop expanding?"

Under normal circumstances, a world ring with a diameter of 60 million miles would only consume universe crystals worth several mixed elements. The reason why they were so cheap was that sector lords could resonate with the land of origin, priming unlimited universe energy and aggregating it into universe crystals. The price went down because they were easy to make.

A world with a diameter of 6 billion miles would only consume 1 million mixed elements worth of universe crystals. A world with a diameter of 600 billion miles would only consume 1 trillion mixed elements worth of universe crystals. Luo Feng used alloy remains, which cost significantly less. However, he still used tens of billions of mixed elements' worth of alloy remains. The amount was within his quota. Besides, Luo Feng didn't care much about the money; any random treasure he had was worth at least 10 trillion mixed elements.

The internal world continued swallowing world energy and expanding for more than three months. Golden Horned Beast only rested for a total of one hour a day for those three months—six naps a day for ten minutes each. He used Swallow continuously when he was awake, and the alloy remains kept being devoured.

"The diameter is 600 billion miles now!" said Luo Feng. "It has finally hit the limit!"

On top of the bloody waves, Mosha body, Golden Horned Beast body, and Remote Ocean body all gazed out at the internal world in shock. This was inconceivable! A Golden Horned Beast would normally only have an internal world with a diameter of 60,000

miles. This one was now 600 billion miles in diameter.

"What on earth happened to my core that it can carry such a vast internal world?" Luo Feng wondered aloud.

He was thrilled. He was aware that his core had evolved drastically after his mind gained the talent technique known as "I Am the Universe."

Mosha body, Golden Horned Beast body, and Remote Ocean body all flew to the sky above Dual World Pool and looked down.

Weng!

Two flashes of light shot out from the Dual World Pool, causing ripples in the surrounding space. Although the Golden Horned World Stone was hidden in the Dual World Pool, it emitted a golden glow. Forming an internal world with a diameter of 600 billion miles had cost an outrageous amount of scrap metal, and the gold energy essence brought special changes to the Golden Horned World Stone.

My Golden Horned World Stone might be the most powerful one in the history of the universe, Luo Feng thought. It might be one of a kind. Normally, Golden Horned World Stones are the precious possessions of universe knights. My Golden Horned World Stone is one trillion times stronger than average. It must be unique and highly valuable."

Luo Feng could sense that this Golden Horned World Stone would be marvelous, but he wasn't able to see it yet.

"My internal world has reached its limit!" he said. "Golden Horned World Stone has also reached its limit! Haha! An internal world with a diameter of 600 billion miles... Bloody Sea... Show me how large you can expand!"

Luo Feng continued to expand the Bloody Sea. Tons of universe crystals were delivered into the internal world, and the Bloody Sea grew with unstoppable force.

Chapter 1006: Laws Are Finished – Become Undying

One mountain of universe crystals after another was delivered into the internal world, fueling the speed of the expansion of the Bloody Sea.

As all the godly power contained a life imprint, losing godly power was equal to losing part of one's soul, which was exceedingly difficult to recover. It was easy for sector-lord-level Bloody Seas to expand and recover, as long as there were adequate energies!

After a month...

"The Bloody Sea has finally stopped expanding, but its size is within my expectations," said Luo Feng.

The towering Remote Ocean body stood on top of the bloody waves and looked at the boundless Bloody Sea. The crests of the crimson waves tumbled, and a bloody essence pervaded the entire internal world.

Remote Ocean body laughed loudly; the laughter sounded like thunder. "The diameter is 6 billion miles, which is already bigger than all the Bloody Seas and small Royal Seas in Nine Remoteness Space. The difference between a life gene level of 10,081 times and 300 times is indeed impressive."

Sector princes only had Bloody Seas with a diameter of 50 million miles, and even the Royal Seas of the undying princes only had a diameter of merely 600 million miles. By contrast, the Royal Seas of the universe knight princes had diameters of 20 billion miles at least. The difference was due to the gap in life gene level. That was why Luo Feng's Bloody Sea was so enormous.

"The Bloody Sea has finished expanding!" said Luo Feng. "The third move of my Star Map will soon become a pinnacle technique!

As long as I can fully comprehend 'gold law,' I can break the shackles on the core, connect the law ocean, transform my godly power... and become undying."

******

Luo Feng ordered the waiters in his palace to prepare a feast and invited his servants, including Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor, to join in the meal with him.

"After the feast, I'll be devoted to studying gold law and trying to comprehend it. I will become undying after that!" Luo Feng laughed.

Honed Heart Emperor smiled. "Our master's law comprehension has already reached the undying level, and he won more than 620,000 battles on the Bauhinia Island, where there were all kinds of talented heirs. Apparently, even when compared to the emperors of other races, our master is exceptionally strong. Master, you will surely become undying easily."

"If you can't succeed, who can?" Tian Chen Emperor added.

"We'll congratulate our master beforehand, for he will become undying soon." All the servants raised their glasses. "How wonderful!"

Luo Feng raised his glass as well. "Success in a single stroke," he said. "Time to become undying." Luo Feng drank up.

******

It was extremely difficult for some life forms to become undying. The Bug Clan Queens and the Cloud Contact Vines, for example, only became undying after their law comprehension could rival that of an emperor. Other beings like Golden Horned Beasts also needed deeper law comprehension to break through because of the shackles on their cores.

As for Luo Feng, his law comprehension was already at the undying level! And his beast god conception was at the 21st level of

the Heavenly Bridge! His will was stronger than most universe knights, and his spiritual force amplification was 32 times!

Powerful will! Beast God Conception! Spiritual Force Amplification! Self-created pinnacle techniques! These attributes formed a powerful combination.

"I'm already as strong as an invincible emperor," said Luo Feng. "It'll be no problem for me to become undying in one stroke."

Luo Feng looked forward to it. Perhaps the pinnacle techniques he had created were slightly inferior to invincible emperors, but his will and beast god conception were superior to theirs.

"There's no way I can't have my breakthrough! I'll study and try to comprehend the gold law."

Luo Feng had stopped studying gold law a long time ago, as he was on the edge of fully comprehending it. Once he fully comprehended gold law, he would become undying, and there was no going back. He would have broken through before he had finished his third body.

Gold law, thought Luo Feng as he sat down in his palace with his legs crossed.

Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor both waited behind him.

While half of Luo Feng's mind was comprehending gold law, and the other half was creating and perfecting the third move of Star Map. His law comprehension was almost at the same level as that of universe knights, and studying gold law was like a graduate student studying elementary school subjects. But even grad students were susceptible to careless mistakes. He needed to study it carefully.

******

In the most towering palace of Thousand Treasures River.

Primal Chaos City Leader stood on the top floor of the towering palace, leaning against the handrail. The territory within Thousand Treasures River was entirely within his sight. He gazed at Luo Feng's palace.

"It's been 1,500 years since he came back from Nine Remoteness Space, and he's been creating the third move for his pinnacle technique ever since," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "Why hasn't he become undying now that his move has become a pinnacle technique? Is he still comprehending gold low? Although it's difficult to make a breakthrough at the last step, his law comprehension is extremely thorough. He's must be able to finish it."

Primal Chaos City Leader was perplexed. This disciple of his had already completed his third body, and his law comprehension had already reached the pinnacle undying level. Why was he delaying?

******

Luo Feng had been studying the gold law in his palace for 300 years when he opened his eyes and smiled. "So, this is gold!" he said.

A sense of completion filled his heart—a sense of satisfaction of fully comprehending a universe law.

Hong!

A connection suddenly linked Luo Feng and the gold law ocean of the land of origin. Boundless amounts of force were transferred from the gold law ocean. The core inside Luo Feng's body was originally an origin pearl, but it upon absorbing the energy from the gold law ocean, it took on human form—a shape that looked like Luo Feng!

The law comprehension is completed, and the origin has gained its shape, thought Luo Feng. The core is broken, and undying power fueled it. The soul and the body now merge.

These were the basic steps to become undying. The core became a space all its own. When the origin pearl turned into the shape of Luo Feng, Luo Feng waved his hands, and the energies became crystal balls. Complex law engravings were etched on each of the 1,600 crystal balls. Warriors and spiritual force leaders alike relied on origin pearls to become undying.

As for the spiritual force weapons they used after the origin pearls took shape, they transformed from the energies.

Howl!

1,600 crystal balls made up the bone structure of a beast god after being connected by countless law threads. Each scale on the beast god acquired exquisite details.

"Beast god conception! Spiritual force amplification! All the consciousness and mind! Break the shackles! Become undying! Break! Break! Break!"

All of Luo Feng's bodies had fallen asleep, and all his mind focused on the breakthrough. With the help of the gold law force from the universe, Luo Feng reached his limit. Inside the core, the beast god roared and bashed against the periphery of the core with his outrageous conception.

At this moment, the beast god looked like a ball of flame. It hit the inner wall of the core like a burning star.

Hong!

The third move of Star Map: "Star and Fire Soaring Sky!" It was based on the bone structure of the Golden Horned Beast. All the attacking power passed along the bones, and then the Golden Horned Beast would ram the enemies with its head. Perhaps the move was not as swift as the first and the second move, but it was far mightier.

Hong!

The internal wall of the core started to tremble. The core started

to crack.

Ka—crack...! Hu!

The cracks on the core started to blur.

Suddenly, all the cracks disappeared. The core remained intact. Just as Luo Feng used the most powerful attack, the force from the land of origin dissipated.

"How was it possible?" Luo Feng roared. "Break!"

Hong!

The Golden Horned Beast hit the internal wall of the core like a fireball, steaming energy surrounding him.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

The Golden Horned Beast bashed the core time and time again. Each time, there were cracks after the crash, but the core recovered automatically.

Peng!

After more than ten crashes, the beast god crumbled, and the crystal pearls were all crushed.

Luo Feng stood in the dark space, dumbfounded.

"How is this possible...?" he muttered. "Why can't I become undying? I—I have a will that is stronger than most universe knights! Beast god conception! Spiritual force amplification! Pinnacle techniques! I have all of them! My will and my beast god conception are especially powerful! I can't even break the shackles on my core with all these combined? Why?"

Luo Feng just couldn't accept this. With his will, beast god conception, spiritual force amplification, and pinnacle techniques all at the same level as invincible emperors, he had thought that becoming undying would be a piece of cake for him. A sector lord who could rival an invincible emperor in every way couldn't become undying? This... This was inconceivable!

Even though it was difficult for him to break the shackles, he was already high-achieving at all aspects and was second only to universe knights.

Every bite and every sip are preordained, thought Luo Feng. Every bite and every sip are preordained... Fortune and misfortune are neighbors.

Luo Feng sat in the space of the core, shook his head and sighed. He had obtained the Nine Volume Manual, and his Remote Ocean body had reached the pinnacle life gene level. What's more, he had been bestowed a set of talent techniques by the universe. His core was so sturdy that his internal world had expanded to a diameter of 600 billion miles, and his Bloody Sea now had a diameter of over six billion miles. Everything was so wonderful...

Little did Luo Feng realize while he was thrilled by the power of his core, he wouldn't be able to break its shackles!

"How can I become undying?" Luo Feng murmured. He smirked. "I've never doubted for a second that I can make my breakthrough and become undying. I never expected that even at this level I still wouldn't be able to break the shackles."

Chapter 1007: Ultimate Techniques

Luo Feng opened his eyes. Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor screamed, "Master!"

"Master, are you going to become undying?" Tian Chen Emperor asked.

Luo Feng waved his hands. "Get out."

"Yes, master."

Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor were a bit confused. They hadn't expected Luo Feng to fail at becoming undying. After all, in their eyes, it would be the biggest joke in the history of the universe if even Luo Feng couldn't become undying!

Alone in the silent palace, Luo Feng walked up the stairs of the side palace to the top floor. He leaned against the handrail and looked at the Thousand Treasures River.

"I've never given up," said Luo Feng. "Not since the first day I stepped outside my home city on Earth!" His eyes gleamed. "Even if the shackles on my core are outstandingly powerful, that won't stop me from becoming undying."

Treasures won't help me break the shackles, thought Luo Feng. I need to rely on my law comprehension, techniques, spiritual force amplification, and willpower! It's difficult to improve my willpower in the short term. Same with my spiritual force amplification. As for my beast god conception and law comprehension, they're already the best among anyone beneath the level of universe knight.

"Only secret techniques can help me advance sharply!" he realized.

Luo Feng thought about this.

Among the heirs on Bauhinia Island, there are heirs who

eventually created ultimate techniques after devoting time to their techniques. For instance, my teacher True Yan Knight spent hundreds of millions of years studying his talent technique, and it's now almost at the ultimate level.

True Yan Knight didn't even have the advantages Luo Feng had. After all, he didn't have the instructions of Primal Chaos City Leader.

"I can accomplish what they accomplished! I'll create my ultimate techniques! And they will improve my power dozens of times! I don't believe I won't be able to make it!" Luo Feng pursed his lips, and his eyes glinted fiercely. "And if I still can't do it, I'll sharpen my willpower and improve my beast god conception. No matter what... I'll only accept success. No failure allowed!"

Luo Feng tightened his grip on the handrail so hard that it bent beneath his fingers. He turned around and went back into his palace while the handrail gradually recovered... There was memory metal inside the handrail.

******

Though Luo Feng would spend time with his family and learn about how his family had prospered, most of his mind was devoted to studying the talent technique even when he was with his family.

This time, Luo Feng didn't study into the blade technique. Instead, he concentrated on Star Map.

100 years passed. 200 years... 900 years, 1,000 years. Time flew.

After 3,000 years, inside the training field of the virtual universe...

"Fall," said Luo Feng.

He stood at the apex of the remains, pointing at a distant rock life form. 1,600 crystal balls were connected, forming the tail of a beast god. Countless law threads became entangled and formed a beast god. The tail was surreally tangible, while the other parts of the

body appeared blurry and indistinct.

Howl!

After a growl, the beast god rushed at the rock life.

Hong! Long! Long!

Superheated fire burst out of the rock life, but a phantom of countless raindrops was waiting for him. The beast god moved swiftly. His tail moved 100 times faster than his body. His tail left a blur behind it like raindrops, filling the space and time around him. The raindrops appeared harmless, but the rock life form roared with anger and fear as the illuminated raindrops penetrated every inch of its body.

Peng!

The rock life trembled and was annihilated.

Hit the Light-Racing Star, thought Luo Feng. The starlight spread all over the universe.

"The first move is completed." Luo Feng nodded.

"Luo Feng," said a voice.

A shadow in a golden cape appeared, flying toward him from afar. It was Primal Chaos City Leader.

"Teacher." Luo Feng saluted him.

Primal Chaos City Leader looked a little confused. "For the past 3,000 years, you've been studying the first move of your Star Map, and now, you've finally made the first move ultimate technique level... But why did you spend so much time creating techniques? You could've made your breakthrough and become undying already."

"I'm not powerful enough," Luo Feng said respectfully.

Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head and smiled, thinking Luo Feng was being too modest. "You're full of humility," he said.

"Tell me, when do you want to become undying?"

"After making my first three moves ultimate-level," Luo Feng answered.

"The first three moves?" Primal Chaos City Leader was startled. It was very challenging to create ultimate techniques. Otherwise, more individuals would have come up with them. Few had achieved this even on Bauhinia Island, where hundreds of millions of peerless talents lived.

The first move was based on the first-level beast god inheritance, and it was self-explanatory. The second move was based on the second-level beast god inheritance and was far more difficult. As for the third move, it was exceedingly strenuous.

Luo Feng was creating these ultimate techniques from an advantageous position. His horizons were broad, and his law comprehension was deep. Together with step-by-step instructions from Primal Chaos City Leader, he could create the first ultimate technique in 3,000 years.

"How long will it take?" Primal Chaos City Leader asked.

"As long as is required," Luo Feng answered respectfully.

Primal Chaos City Leader was a bit surprised. From his perspective, Luo Feng's fame only would make him hurry to become undying.

"Okay," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "I'm in no rush. Sector lords and the land of origin in the universe have clearer connections, and you're more suitable to create appropriate techniques at this level. However, even if I'm instructing you and setting competitors for you, you'll soon realize that you're incapable of defending yourself against those competitors. It'll be up to you to decide how to make the breakthrough."

"I know," Luo Feng said deferentially. "Teacher, I shall appreciate your instruction forever."

"Then suit yourself," said Primal Chaos City Leader, and he stopped advising him on the matter.

As a supreme being who had lived practically as long as the human race, Primal Chaos City Leader understood the virtues of patience.

******

Luo Feng went back to study the second move, which was apparently much more difficult than the first one. Fortunately, Luo Feng was accomplished in more than enough on law comprehension. He spent 8,000 years conquering all the obstacles gradually and finally made the second move ultimate level.

Yaaa!

A special life form with scales on its wings screamed, and its voice pierced through Luo Feng's ears. Luo Feng stayed still, unaffected by it.

"The 2,000th competitor," he said. "This is the day for you to fall."

Luo Feng controlled the gigantic beast god in the sky. 5,200 crystal balls were still on his tail, yet the entire beast god was distinct now. The towering beast god was 1,800 miles long.

The flying special life form flew like a beam of black light. All the stars and planets touched by the black light were annihilated, yet the beast god remained floating in the sky. The two special life forms were about to crash.

Luo Feng's eyes glinted ferociously. He had already been defeated by this competitor more than 900 times. "Kill," he commanded.

The beast god's tail finally started to move. It became a beam of shining red light like a star about to be annihilated. The red light flitted silently past that charging black light, and the black light vanished.

Hua!

A huge crack showed up in the sky, and an enormous shockwave shook the surroundings.

Hong! Long! Long!

The soundwave couldn't stop.

"Splendid like stars," Luo Feng murmured. "The red light rips the nightfall like a blade! The second move is finished!"

******

The first move of the ultimate technique known as Star Map was finished after 3,000 years. The second move took 8,000 years. Luo Feng then started to study the third move.

He had been able to finish creating the first two moves thanks to the competitors Primal Chaos City Leader provided. Those competitors were designed to reveal the disadvantages of Luo Feng's secret techniques. Other than the competitors, Luo Feng had already completed the third-level beast god inheritance, and together with the help of Golden Horned Beast body and Mosha body, it wasn't a huge burden for him to create the first two ultimate techniques.

Mosha body's space comprehension could help him merge with space completely. Golden Horned Beast had merged with numerous blood river crystals and had ample inspiration when looking at the beast god sculpture. However, Luo Feng ran into trouble when creating the third move.

His law comprehension and beast god conception were not inadequate for creating the third move for the ultimate technique. He beat one competitor after another and kept deducing and empowering the third move. It took him 20,000 years to beat the 1,520th competitor, and the following competitors would only get stronger and stronger. It seemed that it would take him hundreds of thousands of years—maybe even a million years to create the

third move.

Inside the core, the form of Luo Feng that had transformed from the origin pearl was casting the second move of the ultimate technique. He tried to cast the unfinished third move to attack the inner wall of the core.

"Break!" he roared. "Break! Now!"

Hong!

The inner wall trembled and shattered, yet that blurry steam stayed intact.

"I still haven't succeeded?" said Luo Feng. "Will I really have to spend a million years creating the third move?"

Luo Feng grew nervous. For the past 30,000 years, he had remained in seclusion. This provoked rumors among the other races—even within the human race—as they all presumed that Blade River Emperor would become undying soon. Yet there had been no news. This Blade River Emperor, who had previously roamed the universe, seemed to have disappeared.

"I've become so impatient," Luo Feng realized, finally coming to his senses. 30,000 years of meditation, combined with the rumors from the outside, had indeed affected him. "If I can't accomplish my goal now, I might as well get out and tour the universe a bit. I've been around for such a long time, but I haven't seen the universe yet—all I've done is fight!"

Luo Feng suddenly wanted nothing more than to take a tour of the universe. The timing was right. It was now or never.

Chapter 1008: 50,000 Years Wandering in the Universe

Luo Feng's Mosha body went to a remote territory of the universe through God Country Transportation of his undying slaves. He then started to wander through the universe.

The universe was resplendent and mysterious. Luo Feng saw a planet made up entirely of platinum. He witnessed a peculiar scene involving 108 associated stars and toured each one of them. He slept on a neutron star. He even discovered a valuable left by an undying fighter. Of course, he didn't care about it. He also tried to investigate a black hole, yet when he went too deep into it, he felt a tearing power so strong that even the undying Mosha body couldn't bear it. The space ripple was completely destroyed. Thus, he wasn't able to transport himself and flee. Fortunately, he escaped the core of the black hole with his Domain talent technique. Sometimes, he would just lie on a meteorite and float through the universe.

Luo Feng also went stealthily to the territories of other races, as Mosha body could replicate the shapes and auras of other races. Luo Feng passed by like a tourist, observing the environments and the emotions of the other races.

These experiences while wandering the universe granted Luo Feng renewed inspiration. The past 30,000 years of meditation had barely improved his willpower, whereas wandering in the universe made his willpower evolve naturally.

In the past, all I knew was to fight—to kill and to become stronger! thought Luo Feng. But there is so much beauty in the universe. The other races' cultures have their own unique charms, even if they are different from mine. These cultures have survived for eons. They all deserve appreciation. Each time I comprehend the culture of another race, it transforms my soul.

Half of Luo Feng's mind was taking in the wonders of the universe while the other half was practicing. This mental partition was actually much more efficient. In the past, he could only derive inspiration from looking at the Beast God Sculpture, but he now found that there were universe origin laws everywhere in the universe, like the birth, growth, and annihilation of a star. All the grasses, beasts, and rivers contained universe laws. The processes present in planetary environments were miniature versions of the processes of the universe as a whole.

Sometimes, Luo Feng got so much inspiration that he made one breakthrough after another! Other times, he would constantly be defeated by the same competitor, but he chose to remain tranquil. After wandering in the universe for a long time, Luo Feng's state of mind gradually merged with the universe. Without even realizing it, his competitor would be defeated.

******

In a remote territory of the universe, on a life planet in the prison race territory, near the six pinnacle races.

In the space surrounding the planet flew a 1,000-foot-long giant creature with 18 claws. He had scales all over his body, and his head appeared to be made of metal. There were golden flames in his eyes. This life planet was facing a catastrophe. Undying power spread and enveloped the planet; the entire planet was under his control.

"Haha!" the creature roared. "Creeping bugs! Bow to the great Shadow Emperor. From today on, this planet will belong to Shadow Emperor, and all you creeping, crawly bugs must answer to the great Shadow Emperor. If anyone dares to defy him, we will kill you!"

On the planet lived more than ten different races and millions of creatures. The weakest of them were at the star-traveler level. There were even dozens of sector lords.

"Shadow Emperor!" they cried.

"Shadow Emperor has advanced his territory to our planet. And the leader of his army is the goddamn undying fighter known as You Tuo Wa... Damn You Tuo Wa!"

Luo Feng, watching from a distance, transformed his Mosha body into a sector lord of this race.

"Interesting," he said. He looked up and saw the undying fighter in outer space. "The prison race is so unique. Instead of stopping their subsidiary races from killing each other, they intensified it, resulting in widespread slaughter."

In the past 50,000 years of wandering in the universe, Luo Feng had visited the territories of the crystal race and the prison race to study them. The six pinnacle races in the universe lived around the center of the universe, while crystal race and prison race lived in remote areas. All the creatures born in the peculiar region known as "Prison" would be considered members of the prison race.

The seniors within the prison race had no limits to the subsidiary races. Under the rule of the prison race, one slaughter after another occurred within those subsidiary races. Some were totally annihilated. However, some great beings would be born in the midst of such massacres, and those great beings were admitted by the prison race.

The crystal race behaved completely opposite to prison race. All the creatures within the crystal race were of the same clan, and they stuck together; the bond within crystal race was stronger even than the automaton race. Sometimes, some great beings within the crystal race would cooperate with each other, empowering them exponentially.

The individuals within the prison race were strong while the crystal race as a whole was strong. They were two completely different races, which led to constant, ferocious conflicts. The human race, automaton race, demon race, and bug race fought

each other because their territories were close, but the prison race and crystal race did so because of their innate hatred for each other.

This planet was in chaos. Mosha Luo Feng watched everything happening in silence. He had already seen many planets around the prison race being conquered, and he always watched it like a bystander and left.

"All the creatures of Tai Ke race will be executed!" the undying fighter known as You Tuo Wa roared. His voice spread across the entire planet. "Kill all the creature of Tai Ke race. Kill!"

The sector lord warriors under him started to roam the planet. There were more than ten races on the planet, and Tai Ke race was only one of them. It was the only race that hadn't admitted defeat.

A cry rose up among the Tai Ke race. "Shadow Emperor is a demon! A demon who destroyed our home and kept hunting us! Fight!"

"Kill! Kill all the bastards!"

"Kill them!"

"Children! Run!"

"Take the children! They are our future. Take them and run."

There were more than 100,000 creatures of the Tai Ke race on this planet, some of whom tried to escape while others stayed and fought. However, when the first spaceship carrying members of the Tai Ke race was annihilated by You Wa Tuo's undying power, they all fell into despair. They realized that they couldn't match the undying fighter.

"Kill! Kill! Fight!"

Other races on the planet didn't interfere. There were only six sector lords within the Tai Ke race while there were 100 sector lord warriors in the invading army. And the leader was an undying

fighter!

Tai Ke race will be annihilated, thought Luo Feng, observing it all in silence. This kind of thing happened all the time. It was likely happening this very minute somewhere else in the universe.

"Hmm?" said Luo Feng.

He noticed a silhouette afar. The most shining member of the Tai Ke race—a mere teenager—had just killed two sector lord warriors. At the moment, he was temporarily holding his own against ten sector lord warriors.

Many beings within the Tai Ke race were screaming, "Pa Na, run! Pa Na, run now!"

Apparently, this teenager had a high reputation among his race. He might even be the leader of all the beings of Tai Ke race living on that planet.

"Haha...! There's Pa Na," said You Wa Tuo. "Shadow Emperor is looking for you."

You Wa Tuo dove toward the teenager.

"Run!" the teenager ordered.

"Yes!" the other beings of the Tai Ke clan said, seizing the chance to flee while You Tuo Wa dealt with Pa Na.

You Tuo Wa seemed not to care about the others. Clearly, he considered Pa Na much more valuable.

"Come, You Wa Tuo!" said Pa Na. There was madness in his eyes... and a trace of satisfaction. "Me in exchange for tens of thousands of my people! Worth it!"

"Moron," You Tuo Wa sneered.

Mosha Luo Feng watched it all in silence. It suddenly struck him that the look on that talented teenager's face resembled the faces of Jia Ya, Mo Henderson, Tripathi Singh, Sokolov, and East, who had gone to fight the Golden Horned Beast with him. Despairing but

calm.

"Time to return," Mosha Luo Feng murmured.

******

Pa Na felt powerless. He couldn't defend himself against You Tuo Wa. He knew that he was doomed as the ugly claw of You Tuo Wa grabbed him.

Suddenly... it started to rain. Raindrops filled the sky.

"Raindrops?" Pa Na was dazed.

Then the raindrops all disappeared, and the sector lord warriors of the invaders, along with You Tuo Wa, all froze. There was a strange sound—Pu! And You Tuo Wa's godly body suddenly vanished into thin air. The sector lord warriors standing afar exploded all at once.

"Dead?" Pa Na looked around in shock. He looked at the bloody remains, the weapons, and the empty armor left by the annihilated You Tuo Wa.

Jiang!

A shadow of a being standing afar put his blade into his sheath.

"A blade..." said Pa Na. "Those raindrops were a blade striking!"

Pa Na found it hard to believe that this shrouded figure standing afar was only a sector lord. How could a sector lord kill an undying fighter so easily?

Mosha Luo Feng turned around and looked at him. He smiled, then disappeared.

Memories had flooded Luo Feng's mind when he'd seen the look on that teenager's face. He had wanted to help him. To Luo Feng, it didn't make a huge difference, as it was simply a change of heart.

This planet was the last destination of his tour of the universe, because... half a month before Luo Feng arriving there, he had

created the third move for his ultimate technique.

"Time to become undying!"

After wandering through the universe for 50,000 years, Mosha Luo Feng went back to the primal region of the human territory.

Chapter 1009: Undying Fighter Luo Feng

Within the Thousand Treasures River of the primal region of human territory.

When Luo Feng stepped back into the human territory, he immediately felt a sense of belonging. He was home!

"This is home," he said.

His original earthling body, sitting in the palace with his legs crossed, finally got up, walked out of the palace, and started to tour the palaces within the Thousand Treasures River. As he walked among the palaces, Luo Feng recalled all the scenes he had witnessed in the universe while wandering. He was shocked by everything that had happened in the past 50,000 years, but it was all so clear when he looked back—as if it all followed a set of guidelines.

The servants in front of the palace watched Luo Feng walk past.

"Look, it's Luo Feng."

"It's rare that Luo Feng ever walks out of his palace."

Some of them only dared to pass messages through their mind, as they didn't have the guts to speak up. After all, they were only servants while Luo Feng was the disciple of Primal Chaos City Leader, the master of this space and time.

"Ai, that Luo Feng could kill an emperor limit before, but he's been MIA for the past 80,000 years. There hasn't been any news about him becoming undying. He could've become undying a long time ago. Why does he stay a sector lord for such a long time?"

"To comprehend space law, of course. After all, it's more beneficial to do so when you're a sector law."

"He must have been acknowledged by space law a long time ago. Becoming undying wouldn't slow him down."

"Who knows what's in his mind? He's a peerless talent."

Luo Feng walked towards them.

"Mr. Luo Feng!"

The servants saluted him, and Luo Feng glanced at them with a smile on his face. He could read the servants' minds after so many experiences in the universe. Apparently, his disappearance for the past 80,000 years had led to some controversies, but Luo Feng still smiled even though he knew they were talking about him... Being able to look through them and comprehend some "operation law" of the universe pleased him.

Although they're undying, they've been servants for billions of years, thought Luo Feng. It has affected their minds. Perhaps they'll never become universe knights.

The thought flashed through Luo Feng's mind, and then he kept walking. The scenes he had witnessed during his journey were playing in his mind like films on a screen.

******

In the main palace of Thousand Treasures River.

Primal Chaos City Leader sensed that Luo Feng—who had been in seclusion for 80,000 years—had finally walked out of the palace. He saw Luo Feng through all the buildings. He was walking with a smile so natural and authentic that it revealed his tranquil mental state.

"Huh?" said Primal Chaos City Leader, looking startled. "He's morphing?"

Primal Chaos City Leader could tell that all the experiences and inspirations Luo Feng had cultivated in the past 50,000 years were about to spur his significant transformation, like a scholar who had accumulated a plethora of research and was finally on the brink of an epiphany.

Luo Feng was clearly on the brink of something incredible... For the past 50,000 years, he had witnessed and experienced so much that everything manifested the operation law of the universe in Luo Feng's eyes.

"It's a morphing of the mental state," Primal Chaos City Leader realized, gasping in admiration. "My disciple is a genius..."

******

For about five hours, Luo Feng recalled everything he had witnessed and experienced in the past 50,000 years. He broke into laughter when he recalled how he had saved that teenager of the Tai Ke Race. In the past five hours, his mental state had been sharply improved, and his mental state reached an extraordinary level.

He didn't need to deliberately strengthen his willpower anymore, as his mental state was tranquil and still as the starry sky. He didn't need to resist the illusion anymore, as the illusion was nothing compared to the wonders of the actual universe.

Now... even Chaos City Leader couldn't tell directly how Luo Feng had improved his mental state. After fighting for his family and his brothers when he was a teenager... After sacrificing everything to fight the Golden Horned Beast and being resurrected... After the hustle and bustle of the talent battle... After the obsession with life and death inheritance...

And finally, after 50,000 years of witnessing the mysteries in the universe... His willpower was already as strong as that of a universe overlord. Perhaps the only ones with willpower stronger than Luo Feng were universe masters.

"Time's up," realized Luo Feng. "It's now time to become undying."

Luo Feng was excited, as he thought it was natural and only right that he should become undying now. He walked back to his palace

and sat down with his legs crossed. His mental state was like still, deep waters.

Within his core, the version of Luo Feng who had transformed from the origin pearl opened his eyes.

Aggression shot out from Luo Feng's eyes. They were peaceful like the sky and oceans, yet they were as keen as blades, glinting fiercely.

"Break the shackles," he said. "I will become undying!"

Luo Feng waved his hands. 16,000 pearls floated in the sky, and law engravings were densely dotted on them. The pearls connected with each other immediately and formed the skeleton of an aggressive, powerful beast god.

"Star and Fire Soaring Sky," Luo Feng whispered. "Crash and burn... Earth Shattering."

Hong!

The beast god floating in the sky moved with a madness that showed he was ready and willing to crash and burn. Flames burned on his skin, trembling the core. Luo Feng's willpower, which couldn't be sharpened further, coupled with his beast god conception having been trained for 80,000 years, infused the beast god with tremendous power. He charged at the inner wall directly and smashed into it as if he were about to crumble.

"Crash and Burn! Earth Shattering!"

The third move of Star Map, Star and Fire Soaring Sky, crash and burn and Earth Shattering!

Hong!

The inner wall shook, followed by a loud sound.

Peng!

The wall was obliterated.

******

After 80,000 years, the third move was completed. The first move, literally, "Hit the Light-Racing Star, the starlight spread all over the universe," was fast and light like constant raindrops. For the second move, "Splendid like stars, the red light rips the nightfall like a blade," there was only one trick to it: its speed. The key benefit of this move was its speed. It wouldn't attack enemies millions of times like the first move. On the contrary, it made produced one attack. However, it was incredibly fast and powerful.

The third move, "Star and Fire Soaring Sky, crash and burn and Earth Shattering," was all about power! It was slower than the second move, but it was more than ten times more powerful than the second move. The second move relied on the tail of the beast god, whereas the third relied on its entire body. It was definitely extremely powerful, and it would make enemies crash and burn!

Each successive move was more mysterious and intricate than the previous one.

Luo Feng broke the core shackles and immediately turned from the origin pearl connected to the gold law ocean of the land of origin in the universe. Gold law energy arrived at above Luo Feng's palace.

Hong! Long! Long!

Gold power flooded in. Some sector lords would only become ordinary undying fighters, which meant they only needed a small amount of godly power to make their bodies undying. But some powerful sector lords would become emperors the moment they became undying; they needed much more godly power, but the maximum was 100,000 times that of a sector lord.

As for Luo Feng, his original earthling body had a life gene level of over 3,000 times, and his original earthling body became 300 million times stronger than sector lords once it became undying! His body was already far more powerful than most universe

knights, as universe knights with a life gene level of 10 times only possessed strength 100 million times higher than sector lords.

Hong! Long! Long!

Unlimited gold godly power poured in. A godly body 300 million times stronger than that of a sector lord required an incredible amount of undying power.

However... Though Mosha body didn't require much undying power, Luo Feng's Golden Horned Beast body was 600 million times stronger than a sector lord. Besides, he was over 600 miles long and thus required much more undying power than the original earthling body.

But the most outrageous requirement belonged to the Bloody Sea. The Bloody Sea had a diameter of 6 billion miles, and its life gene level was perfect. It was one billion times stronger than a sector lord! It required hundreds of millions of times more undying power than the Golden Horned Beast did.

A human universe knight's godly body would only need godly power equivalent to a billionth of the Bloody Sea. That was why Nine Remoteness Master was invincible in the universe with his Nine Remoteness Ocean, which could rival the most powerful true treasures in the universe.

******

It wasn't a big deal when someone became undying. Even when someone became a universe knight, it wasn't that much of a scene.

But Luo Feng becoming undying was impressive. It was a spectacle thousands of times greater than True Yan Emperor becoming a universe knight. After all, he surpassed universe knights in terms of quality. As for the quantity of undying power, it was hundreds of millions of times more than human universe knights—all thanks to the Bloody Sea!

Onlookers were stunned. "What happened?" they asked one

another.

"What's going on?"

"Gold origin law arrived! Did someone become undying? But how can becoming undying cause such a scene?"

Within the Thousand Treasures River, some universe knights and lots of undying servants looked to the sky above Luo Feng's palace in shock. Golden light almost enveloped the entire Thousand Treasures River. They could hardly remember a time when they had seen anything like this. Even some universe knights were thrilled.

"Becoming a universe knight is nothing compared to this."

However, those universe knights and undying servants could only see the surface.

Primal Chaos City Leader stood on top of the main palace, leaning against the handrail and looking up at the sky. The gold origin law had completely enfolded Thousand Treasures River. It was inconceivably powerful—already more powerful than when someone became a universe knight.

Other great beings couldn't see the mysteries behind this, but Primal Chaos City Leader could see dimly that the undying power was pouring into Thousand Treasures River, which revealed how vigorously Luo Feng was absorbing the undying power.

"Luo Feng has become undying..."

Even Primal Chaos City Leader was dazed. He stood there watching, speechless for a long while.

Chapter 1010: Forceful

The universe knights and undying servants within Thousand Treasures River all looked up at the boundless golden light up in the sky. They were all thrilled as they discussed this event.

"Unlimited law ocean is pouring in, and the undying power flows into Luo Feng's body.

"What a scene!" Primal Chaos City Leader looked up, amazed. "Even the 108 princes of Nine Remoteness Master won't make such a scene when they become undying."

Chaos City Leader had seen so much, and he knew this was the case for some beings with large bodies but low density. Hence, the Remote Ocean body at the height of more than 55,000 miles could transform into an ocean with a diameter of 6 billion miles. Although the ocean was significantly larger, they both contained the same amount of energy. Since the water didn't have the same consistency as flesh and blood, the ocean had a comparatively lower density. However, an ocean with a diameter of 6 billion miles still held a godly power that was billions of times greater than human universe knights.

"I've witnessed the scene of several special life forms becoming undying," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "Some of them were tens of millions of miles tall, but the scene was nothing compared to this one."

The more impressive the scene was, the more powerful the special life forms were.

"Does this mean," he wondered, "that Luo Feng is stronger than all the special life forms I've known?"

Chaos City Leader found this impossible to fathom, but it was difficult to argue in the face of the unprecedented power that came from the arrival of universe origin law.

"Luo Feng! There are some deep secrets behind him," Primal Chaos City Leader whispered. "Perhaps he's only revealing a small portion of his power in front of me."

He smiled. All intelligent beings would hide their trump card; it was ingrained in them.

"Fantastic. When Luo Feng becomes a universe knight, the scene might be more terrific than many universe masters. There's soon to be born a supreme being within human race that can intimidate billions of races in the universe."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded mildly. He didn't know what fate Luo Feng had met with. By all appearances, everything he knew—even his Remote Ocean body—wouldn't have led to such a scene. After all, the Remote Ocean body only rivaled one of the 108 princes, who were just mediocre special life forms. Obviously, Luo Feng was hundreds if not thousands of times stronger than he looked.

"This disciple of mine..." Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng's palace from afar and saw Luo Feng sitting there with his legs crossed. The original earthling body had completely become undying. "How strong this force is." He smiled.

******

Inside Luo Feng's palace.

Luo Feng sat with his legs crossed. The godly force permeated the palace. Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor were both thrilled.

Terrific! The force was stronger than that of ordinary universe knights!

"Master..." Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor, who were both groveling, exchanged eye contact, looking frightened.

******

Inside the internal world.

An ocean of godly power poured in from the hollow, flooding into the Bloody Sea. The internal world looked like the apocalypse had come.

Howl!

Golden Horned Beast floated in the sky among the pouring waters of the godly power ocean, howling with excitement.

"Haha! Fantastic! Fantastic!" Luo Feng, dressed in black, stood atop the Golden Horned Beast, looking at the godly power ocean. "My original earthling body, Golden Horned Beast body, and Mosha body became undying immediately. Soul imprint merged with the godly power completely, and the godly power is all mine. However, this Bloody Sea of mine..."

Luo Feng looked at the Bloody Sea from afar. Its color was changing. It was originally blood-red, but the color appeared to be fading. The density of godly power in the ocean kept getting higher.

Hong! Long! Long!

The limitless waters of the godly power ocean poured down and filled the area.

"The energy a universe knight requires to recover his godly body costs so much that it's much more costly than a treasure," Luo Feng murmured. "My Remote Ocean's godly power is better in quality than a universe knight's, and it has billions of times more godly power, which means my Remote Ocean is more precious than billions of treasures combined. Perhaps it's as valuable as a true treasure—even a high-end true treasure."

Luo Feng smiled looking at the Remote Ocean. "With this Remote Ocean by my side, will there be any universe knights who can make me cower?"

Luo Feng suddenly understood the source of Nine Remoteness

Master's pride. While in the Nine Remoteness Ocean, Nine Remoteness Master wasn't even afraid of universe supreme masters! As for Luo Feng, few universe knights could strike him down in his Remote Ocean.

As enormous as the Remote Ocean was, the gold law ocean from the universe origin was much mightier. After a short while, the entire Bloody Sea was transformed into a godly power ocean. The water was tumbling in the ocean and was made up of godly power a billion times stronger than a sector lord's power.

"Remote Ocean, with a diameter of 6 billion miles." Luo Feng looked down at the Remote Ocean. "Creation!"

Suddenly, a Remote Ocean body that was more than 5,000 miles tall walked out from the waves.

"Recover."

The larger the body was, the more quickly he absorbed the godly power.

A six-foot human absorbed godly power hundreds of millions of times more slowly than a World Tree 60 million miles tall. This went without saying; appetite of an ant was nothing compared to a dragon. A dragon would eat more in a single bite than an ant could eat in its entire life. In the same way, a godly body standing 5,000 miles tall would only take the Remote Ocean a couple of minutes to supply its energies.

"Dissipate! Gather!"

Remote Ocean body instantly dissipated into water and merged with the ocean.

The Remote Ocean expanded but only slightly... An outsider probably wouldn't have been able to tell simply by looking at it.

"It's true that after becoming undying, the Remote Ocean can expand further," Luo Feng whispered. "However, Remote Ocean can only expand by absorbing godly power gradually. It's so large

that it needs a huge amount of godly power to increase its diameter by even a foot. How many years did it take Nine Remoteness Master to expand his ocean?"

Luo Feng felt fortunate. If he hadn't become undying—and couldn't transform his bodies into godly ones at one time—he would have needed an eternity to supply enough godly power for an ocean with a diameter of more than six billion miles.

******

Inside the palace.

Luo Feng smiled and got up.

"Master," Tian Chen Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor said respectfully.

"You two, stay here," Luo Feng ordered, then walked out of the palace.

Luo Feng teleported himself in front of the palace where Primal Chaos City Leader lived, where some of the undying servants of universe knights stood.

"So powerful."

"The power..."

Two universe knights standing afar were terrified, and the undying servants were all trembling. Little did they know that this was only the force coming from the original earthling body, and it would be hundreds of time more extraordinary if it came from the Golden Horned Beast body or the Remote Ocean.

Luo Feng waited outside the palace. Although the door was open, everything inside was dimming, and he couldn't see things straight.

"Come in," came a voice from inside the palace.

Luo Feng walked into the palace and saw Primal Chaos City Leader standing in the distance.

Luo Feng gave a salutation. "Teacher."

Primal Chaos City Leader gazed at Luo Feng. "Have you become undying?" he asked after remaining silent for a long while.

"Yes," Luo Feng answered.

"Fantastic. You're doing better than I thought."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded with satisfaction. He was content, happy, and even exhilarated. He nurtured all these disciples because he wanted to produce more great beings who could become the future pillars of the human race. Not only did Luo Feng meet his expectations, but he had also surpassed that to a huge extent.

"Even I can't sense the extent of your power now," Primal Chaos City Leader asked. "Do you think you can defeat Zhu Chong Emperor?"

Luo Feng was dazed. He answered, "Yes, I can."

Indeed, he could. Luo Feng's Golden Horned Beast body had a higher life gene level than Zhu Chong Emperor. His willpower, self-created techniques, and true treasures were all Zhu Chong Emperor's better. Even if he was defeated once, he could be revived time and time again with his Remote Ocean. He wasn't afraid of anything with his newfound "immortality."

"Fantastic. Fantastic." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "What's your next step?"

"Find an address of the god country and build it," Luo Feng answered.

"Hmm. A god country is vital." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Interlayers of the space are immeasurable. Choose a deeper area."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"Go," Primal Chaos City Leader said with a wave of his hands.

Luo Feng gave a salutation and left.

Primal Chaos City Leader wouldn't meddle with Luo Feng's choices given his current power. Luo Feng would be the one to make his decisions from now on.

******

Luo Feng left the primal region and arrived at the god country of his slaves.

"Master of my master, where should we go now?" the slave of another race groveled in veneration.

"Star Tower," Luo Feng whispered.

"Yes," the slave answered and connected with the keepsake in Star Tower.

Luo Feng had left it in the Star Tower before. "No need to create the god country first... I can go there later. My Remote Ocean is better than most universe knights—quality-wise and quantity-wise, it's outrageously large. I'll see whether I can drive the most powerful true treasure, Star Tower."

Luo Feng couldn't wait to give it a try.

Chapter 1011: Luo Feng's God Country

Star Tower was nine light years tall. It was so enormous, as if it were covering half the universe.

This most power true treasure in the universe had led to mass slaughtering among the four pinnacle races, yet no great being was able to take it. The true treasure became a battlefield for billions of races in the universe, and countless undying fighters died inside.

******

Inside the tower, at the core palace.

A blurry, golden light was glowing as Luo Feng walked out of the golden light.

"Star Tower." Luo Feng smiled. He felt the joy from Star Tower. "Go to Seal Space."

Luo Feng walked to the edge of the palace, and a portal leading to "Seal Space" appeared. Star Tower was innately a sealing true treasure, and Seal Space was its center. It was vast with black ground and cordilleras.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew up and looked down at the ground.

"Remote Ocean, show up!" Luo Feng yelled.

Hong!

With the earth shattering, the Remote Ocean appeared in the Seal Space out of nowhere.

Remote Ocean body, earthling original body, Mosha body, and Golden Horned Beast body could all enter and exit the internal world instantly. Of course, after the internal world and space fragmented, being merged and turning into a god country, it would happen no more. The internal world could still exist for a while after someone becoming undying, but after a certain amount of

time, the internal world would start to crumble.

"A diameter of six billion miles." Luo Feng stood on the ocean, stepped on the waves, and pride filled his heart. "Such godly power. Boundless! Star Tower! Drive!"

Luo Feng started to control Star Tower with his mind. Willpower wasn't closely related to actual power but had a lot to do with one's training and experience. However, with consciousness bound together with power, a sector lord could kill a universe-level fighter with one look, as his consciousness force could crush a universe-level fighter's soul!

After becoming undying, consciousness depended on godly power. Luo Feng's Remote Ocean body had greater godly power than most universe knights, and he had a terrifically large amount of such power. His consciousness surpassed most universe knights and had reached the universe overlord level.

Hong! Long! Long!

Water pillars swirled and extended to the hollow around them. They penetrated Star Tower, and the godly power merged with the entire Star Tower. Mysterious force emanated from Star Tower, and the seal stars and law engravings on the heavenly pillar bewildered Luo Feng.

"It's so complicated. I can't comprehend them at all. But it feels so good when my godly power and Star Tower completely merged with each other. I don't need to care about the meaning of the law engravings. I'll use my force." Luo Feng clenched his teeth and growled. "Move!"

Hong!

Star Tower barely trembled; the amplification was so small that it was not visible.

"This is too difficult to drive." Luo Feng was a bit stupefied. He felt like an ant trying to push a rock. "Godly power, burn! Drive!"

Luo Feng clenched his teeth.

Hong!

All the godly power in Star Tower started to burn, and it became 1,000 times more powerful. Star Tower started to move, and Luo Feng now felt like an ant carrying a grain of rice. Though it was still heavy, he could at least run with it. Luo Feng stopped after moving Star Tower only a little bit.

"Stop." Luo Feng stopped burning his godly power. "Oh my god. I've already burned godly power dozens of times more than that of Remote Ocean body." Luo Feng was dazed. "Though I can move Star Tower, I can't drive it like I do on other true treasures."

Luo Feng shook his head. It was supposed to be easy when utilizing weapons. A spiritual force weapon was supposed to be at light speed when being utilized! When Luo Feng used Star Map, the stars would shoot out like lightning. On the other hand, he needed to burn his godly power when driving Star Tower, and it was still so slow that enemies could totally dodge it.

"No wonder," Luo Feng whispered. "No wonder master Zuo Shan Ke said I can only drive Star Tower when I become a universe knight. He gave me the Nine Volume Manual and knew that I had a Golden Horned Beast body. He could tell that I could easily achieve a life gene level thousands of times greater, but he still speculated that I needed to be a universe knight." Luo Feng nodded. "It seems I don't have enough godly power, and neither do I have deep law comprehension."

There were two ways to drive spiritual force weapons. One way was to achieve adequately deep law comprehension, which could amplify the effect of godly power tenfold. The other way was to obtain a large amount of godly power.

"If I'm really able to drive Star Tower, I'll be capable of changing the size of Star Tower to make it move as fast as lightning." Luo Feng shook his head. "I'm only undying. It seems that I'm not yet

qualified to use this supreme true treasure."

Supreme true treasures were extremely precious in the universe. Only universe supreme masters or universe masters could use those true treasures, and one of the reasons was that the conditions for utilizing supreme true treasures were so harsh. Although Luo Feng had a perfect life gene level, he was still only undying. He would be dreaming if he thought he was able to drive Star Tower now.

If it weren't for the Remote Ocean, Luo Feng couldn't have even moved Star Tower with his other bodies. After all, he had consumed an enormous amount of godly power just now.

"Remote Ocean, come back."

Luo Feng stood above Remote Ocean.

Sou!

The Remote Ocean went back to his internal world.

******

"I will be one of the strongest beings in the universe when I'm able to drive Star Tower," Luo Feng whispered in the palace.

He understood that he couldn't compare with universe masters like Primal Chaos City Leader and Master of Sky Wolf, even though he was indeed incredibly strong. However, his newfound "immortality" could already be a problem for some universe masters.

Star Map was already an ultimate technique. The first move required 160 stars, the second required 520 stars, and the third needed 1,600 stars. When all the 1,600 stars combined, their power was increased exponentially.

Luo Feng presumed that he would need more stars when he created later moves of Star Map, so he took some seal stars from Star Tower, and thus the stars on Star Map amounted to 10,000.

"I'll go and create my god country now. Back to the human territory."

Luo Feng stepped into the golden glow.

Sou!

He disappeared.

******

Inside the human territory, within the Ganwu Universe.

Luo Feng teleported himself into a region of space 50 million light years from Earth, where there was nothing but dying planets and stars.

"I'll choose this place," Luo Feng whispered.

He thought he shouldn't follow any rules when choosing a god country.

Zoom!

Luo Feng tore the space apart and stepped into the interlayers.

There were thousands of layers in the space interlayers. The first layer was shattered, fragmented space. The second layer was the god country. The third layer was the space flood... These were categorized in terms of an ordinary undying fighter. To the real supreme beings in the universe, there was only one vast layer of space interlayers. The closer it was to the original universe, the smaller the space fragments were, and the farther it was, the larger the fragments were. And the deeper the space interlayers, the more dangerous it got.

At the safest areas, even sector lords could survive. However, some areas could be life-threatening even to some universe knights!

Sou!

Luo Feng teleported himself and flew past the god country layer.

He entered the space flood layer, opened his Shi Wu Wings, and flew deeper.

"Ordinary undying fighters will establish their god countries in the god country layer," Luo Feng whispered. "Some supreme beings will do the same thing. However, they'll move their god country deeper toward the space flood layer when they become stronger."

The deeper it was, the safer the god country would be. Godly power was infused in the Shi Wu Wings, which made them stronger. It started to fly among the space flood like a flash of light.

"The space fragments are getting larger and larger—some with diameters of 6 billion miles."

Luo Feng could only see those enormous space fragments. There were already land and water on some of them. They were flying at high speed, and once they hit someone—especially the ones with a diameter of 6 billion miles—they could annihilate an emperor instantly.

Sou!

Sou!

Luo Feng flew deeper and deeper. Sometimes, he teleported himself to dodge a colossal space fragment. His internal world had a diameter of 600 billion miles, so he needed to choose a space fragment that was of equal height, width, and length.

******

Two days after.

Luo Feng finally saw some space fragments with a diameter of one trillion kilometers, and some were even larger.

"I need to be careful. Space fragments of this size can possibly kill a universe knight."

Luo Feng was extremely careful. Those space fragments all came

from the space flood, and they could easily hit someone because they flew so fast. Fortunately, Luo Feng had his Shi Wu Wings, which helped him dodge the space fragments nimbly.

Luo Feng teleported himself around a space fragment that had the largest diameter of 3.9 trillion miles and the smallest diameter of 1.3 trillion miles. It could merge with his internal world completely.

"Build the god country!"

Luo Feng opened his wings and triggered his internal world.

Suddenly, an invisible force burst out from his internal world, and it locked that space fragment.

Hu!

An enormous world showed up out of nowhere, as if it existed in an illusion or another dimension. It flew toward the targeted space fragment, and the space fragment was likewise drawn to it. One looked real, and one looked like a void. They got closer and closer to each other.

Hong! Long! Long!

Space trembled, and all the other space fragments avoided it. The world and the huge space fragment merged, stabilizing each other. A new, real world was born, and after a short while, the illusory world completely disappeared.

It was his god country!

Chapter 1012: Mountainside

Sou!

Luo Feng took a step and teleported himself into his god country.

The god country was filled with energy, and it was constantly expanding. The Remote Ocean was nothing compared to the god country.

"God palace! Build!"

In the sky above Remote Ocean, a boundless amount of godly power gathered, and a towering palace came into being. It was a god palace emanating golden light and gold law energy. The top of the palace was a great spire and became the center of the god country the moment it was formed.

"A god country... My god country!" Luo Feng stood in the sky with his eyes closed and arms opened. He felt fantastic. He felt an instant connection to this place—as if he had physically become the god country himself. "Mountains! Plains! Swamps! A desert! An oasis! Lakes!"

Luo Feng sensed the entire god country with his eyes closed. At this moment, he and his god country were combined as one. Remote Ocean's power merged with that of the god country, empowering each other multiple times.

"This god country is me, and I am this god country!" said Luo Feng. "The power of my god country might be able to kill some universe knights!"

Luo Feng opened his eyes and smiled. The foundation of the god country was of the utmost importance. The internal world was the foundation, and an unstable foundation wouldn't lead to a sturdy god country. Luo Feng's internal world had a diameter of 600 billion miles, which made his god country a rival of lots of universe knights. This single step made all the difference!

"My god country is finished." Luo Feng looked at the Remote Ocean. "My Remote Ocean is able to perform my talent technique 'I Am the Universe.' Remote Ocean body is already able to control the space and time around him to some extent. Together with I Am the Universe and the power of a god country, it's terrifically mighty."

The god country, the Remote Ocean, and the talent technique I Am the Universe combined would wield exceptional power. However, if Luo Feng needed to risk everything like that, it meant he was cornered in a hopeless situation. After all, the god country was the vital element; if it was destroyed, Luo Feng could never improve himself unless a supreme being turned back time and helped him. And performing "turning back time" on Luo Feng would come at a high cost.

******

The Remote Ocean guarded the god country.

Luo Feng carried Mosha body, Golden Horned Beast body, and Remote Ocean body—Remote Ocean body at the height of more than 5,000 miles. Each of the three bodies resided in one world ring.

"I can enjoy fighting as much as I can now!" said Luo Feng. "Even if all my bodies are killed, Remote Ocean can recover them immediately. After all, even the godly power of the other bodies combined was nothing compared to what the Remote Ocean contained. The only thing I need to be mindful of is my true treasures."

Luo Feng left his god country but was soon summoned by Primal Chaos City Leader.

******

At the apex of Thunder Island.

Shua!

Luo Feng showed up and saw Primal Chaos City Leader standing at the edge of the cliff.

"Teacher," Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Come here, Luo Feng," Primal Chaos City Leader said as he turned around, saw Luo Feng, and smiled.

Luo Feng walked to Primal Chaos City Leader, confused. "Yes?"

Luo Feng stood behind Primal Chaos City Leader. Primal Chaos City Leader said, "Stand right next to me and look down."

"Um...?" Luo Feng took a step forward and stood side-by-side with Primal Chaos City Leader. He looked down and saw fog pervading the mountain. Through the haze, he could see the indistinct shapes of palaces.

"All the undying fighters of the virtual universe company live here." Primal Chaos City Leader said, looking down. "The undying fighters live in the palaces on Thunder Island. On the mountainside of the center mountain on Thunder Island live the universe knights. As for universe masters, they live in the palaces at the top of the mountain, and some mighty universe overlords live there as well."

Luo Feng nodded. He realized that having a palace at the top of the mountain on Thunder Island meant standing among the supreme beings in the universe.

"Now that you've become undying, it's your time to pick a place to live," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Although I haven't seen you fight since you became undying, my guess is that you have the power of a universe knight. Choose a place on the mountainside and build a palace."

Luo Feng was dazed. The mountainside?

"Yes, teacher," Luo Feng answered respectfully.

"Every universe knight has their own dimension as their

territory," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "I'll arrange a new dimension for you."

Luo Feng blinked in surprise. He was already treated as a universe knight!

"Universe knights are already regarded as seniors of the human race, and they're involved with lots of important issues." Primal Chaos City Leader said, looked at Luo Feng. "Universe knights can all participate in the supreme council of the human race, but you're just undying! Palaces on Thunder Island, dimensions in the virtual universe... These are all arranged by the virtual universe. I can make the decisions regarding those issues. However, the qualifications for joining the supreme council is decided by the entire human race. The virtual universe can't solely decide."

"I understand," Luo Feng answered.

The supreme council... He had heard of it before. It was a council that only great beings stronger or equal to universe knights could participate in. Lots of major issues concerning the human race were discussed in the council.

"I believe that you have the power of a universe knight, but that's not enough," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "You need to show your power and prove that you're entitled to the status of a universe knight. Empty words are not enough."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

Without battle records, nobody would be convinced. After all, humans were not special life forms. Luo Feng was incredible when he was a sector lord, and hence some great beings suspected that Luo Feng defeated the undying fighters using some special valuables. However, that didn't mean that Luo Feng could defeat universe knights.

Universe knights and undying fighters were at two totally different levels. Undying fighters were only footsoldiers—future

great beings and mentors of great beings of the next generation! But universe knights were the elites of a race. As for universe overlords and universe masters, they were the real pillars of a race.

"Okay." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Choose a place on the mountainside."

"Yes, teacher."

Luo Feng flew out and dove towards the mountainside.

Primal Chaos City Leader watched Luo Feng diving. He had witnessed the scene when Luo Feng became undying, and thus he believed that Luo Feng had the power of a universe knight. He even believed it when Luo Feng said he could defeat Zhu Chong Emperor.

******

On the mountainside of the central mountain.

The central mountain was a towering peak, and the palaces built here, where the universe knights lived, stood adjacent to each other. Their servants and disciples all lived in the same palaces, which had diameters of tens of thousands of miles or even more. These great structures only enhanced the beauty of the enormous central mountain.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew above the mountainside and looked for a suitable location.

"Luo Feng," he heard a voice say.

"Huh?" Luo Feng turned his head and saw a shadow flying toward him. It was Nine Blade Knight in a cyan cape and purple scales on his head.

"Nine Blade Knight." Luo Feng smiled.

Nine Blade Knight greeted Luo Feng like a friend. He thought to himself, Although Luo Feng is not as strong as I am, he's the

renowned peerless genius and a disciple of Primal Chaos City Leader! We're at the same status in the virtual universe.

Nine Blade Knight smiled. "Luo Feng, are you going to see your teacher?"

"No." Luo Feng shook his head. "I'm looking for a place to build my palace."

"Build a palace?" Nine Blade Knight was perplexed. "You've become undying, I presume, but undying fighters are supposed to build palaces at the bottom of the mountains. Why are you flying here?"

Ordinary undying fighters were not qualified to be on the mountainside. As for the servants in the palaces of the universe knights, they were only allowed to walk inside the palaces.

"Primal Chaos City Leader asked me to pick a place on the mountainside to build my palace," Luo Feng answered.

Nine Blade Knight was dazed at first. Then he felt discontent.

The very idea was outrageous! Everyone needed to follow the rules. Even the person in charge of the virtual universe should be expected to appeal to the great beings under him before making such a decision! Building a palace on the mountainside was a privilege of universe knights. Even the invincible emperors had to build their palaces at the bottom of the mountain. There should be no exceptions.

"Then keep searching," said Nine Blade Knight. He frowned and left.

Luo Feng murmured, " Nine Blade Knight seems upset. But I can't blame him, as I haven't proven my power yet. It's understandable that some universe knights are not comfortable with this. But he didn't scold me... perhaps because he doesn't dare offend Primal Chaos City Leader."

******

Luo Feng picked his location and architecture style that day. The virtual universe helped Luo Feng build the palaces. But there was disturbance among the universe knights after Luo Feng began building palaces on the mountainside.

"Blade River Emperor, 'Luo Feng,' is building palaces on the mountainside?"

"Even if he became undying, he's not qualified to build palaces on the mountainside!"

"It's outrageous!"

"He needs to show his power no matter who his teacher is. Primal Chaos City Leader..."

The universe knights on the mountainside gathered quite often. It was a social circle of universe knights, and normally, they felt superior to all undying fighters. But now, there would be an undying fighter living among them. Although they didn't dare to swear because of Primal Chaos City Leader, they all expressed their discontent when they gathered.

Chapter 1013: Honor

On the mountainside on Thunder Island, a waterfall roared down toward the enormous lake under it. There was an island with a diameter of several miles in the lake, and there, eight beings chatted with each other.

"Primal Chaos City Leader is the pillar of the human race, as he's made great contributions to us! But that Blade River Emperor Luo Feng... How is he related to the contributions of Primal Chaos City Leader? Humph! Primal Chaos City Leader earned his status with his power, his battles, and his contributions... As for Luo Feng? He's just a talent being cultivated and has been using the resources of our race. I didn't see his contributions at all! Why did he get true treasures? Why did he get the beast god inheritance token!"

"Talents are just consuming the resources. They actually owe something to our race."

"As for us, we're earning resources for our race!"

"No contributions, and he's weaker than us. How is he qualified to have our status?"

A twenty-five-foot-tall being growled in anger. He had massive, strong arms and wore black armor. A huge iron hammer rested beside his seat.

"What Thunder Knights said makes perfect sense!"

"Yes, it makes sense!"

Other universe nights nodded.

"Don't talk too much," a handsome man with six pairs of wings said. He sat drinking alone. "This is arranged by Primal Chaos City Leader, after all."

"Even if it's Primal Chaos City Leader's arrangement, Luo Feng should know that he isn't qualified to have a place here," Thunder

Knight said in a hoarse voice. "Yet he built palaces on the mountainside. That means he believes he's qualified to have the same status as us."

"Look, True Yan is here."

"It's True Yan."

"Stop talking. True Yan is very close with Luo Feng."

All the universe knights raised their heads and saw True Yan Knight fly toward them like a beam of light.

Thunder Island contained many great beings. The beings here formed friendships based on their varying levels. Universe knights would usually befriend each other. True Yan Knight loved making friends with others, and thus he was close to quite a few universe knights.

"True Yan, come and sit down."

"Yes, True Yan, sit."

The universe knights were all fairly welcoming. Although they were discontent with Luo Feng, they wouldn't vent their anger on True Yan Knight. After all, True Yan's sincerity had earned him quite a few close universe knight friends these years.

True Yan Knight approached the handsome man with six pairs of wings and laughed. "Blacksmith, you seem angry. Want to share with your brother? Bloody Wing Knight, do you mind giving me some of your wine?"

The winged man smiled and poured some of his wine out. Bloody Wing Knight and Thunder Knight were the most powerful among the eight universe knights.

"I am indeed angry," Thunder Knight said. "Do you know the news about your disciple Luo Feng?" The other seven universe knights looked at him unpleasantly, but Thunder Knight glared right back, saying, "True Yan will know anyway!"

"Know what?" True Yan Knight was dazed. "Is it he who is becoming undying?"

"That doesn't have anything to do with me," Thunder Knight said. "Do you know that Primal Chaos City Leader allowed him to build palaces on the mountainside—like us universe knights?"

True Yan Knight was stunned.

Thunder Knight continued, "He's only undying. How is he qualified to build palaces on the mountainside?"

"Well—well..." True Yan Knight was rendered speechless. "Perhaps Primal Chaos City Leader has other thoughts in mind."

"Whatever thoughts he has in mind, he shouldn't have done this," Thunder Knight said. "How could it convince us of his worthiness? Do you really think Luo Feng is as powerful as we are? Can you believe that?"

True Yan Knight hesitated to answer. Undying fighters and universe knights were at two completely different levels. Universe knights had hundreds of times more godly power than undying fighters, and along with the huge gap in law comprehension and complexity of techniques...

Universe knights, in general, were thousands of times more powerful than undying fighters, if not more so. Even for special life forms like Bark Mirror Emperor and Zhu Chong Emperor, they defeated some ordinary universe knights with their talent techniques. If it weren't for the talent techniques, the gap between their law comprehension and that of universe knights would have crushed them.

Thunder Knight shook his head. "I'm not being jealous. I just care about the rules of our race. Everyone needs to follow the rules! Otherwise, how will the other great beings be convinced? It's already upset lots of great beings, but nobody dares to challenge the majesty of Primal Chaos City Leader. Hence, they all talk about

it secretly and wait for your disciple to bring shame upon himself. If you really want the best for your disciple, please tell him to move off the mountainside unless he wants to be a disgrace. Besides, he just made himself an enemy of many universe knights. Isn't that getting the short end of the stick?"

"Thunder is straightforward, but what he said makes perfect sense," Bloody Wing Knight said with a smiled. "True Yan, you need to think about what's best for your disciple."

True Yan Knight was also upset.

******

On the open-air square of the world of glory.

Luo Feng was chatting with Thousand Rain Emperor when someone landed beside him. "Luo Feng."

Luo Feng looked up and was surprised. "Why have you come, teacher? I sent you an email to say that if you wanted me for something, you could go to the virtual universe and ask me and I would be there immediately."

"Thousand Rain Emperor, I need to have a word with Luo Feng now," True Yan Knight said.

Thousand Rain Emperor left immediately.

True Yan Emperor sealed the space around him, stared at Luo Feng, and said, "I did receive your email, but some of my friends on Thunder Island dragged me into their conversation."

"Friends?" Luo Feng blinked.

"All because of you." True Yan Knight shook his head. "Apparently, building palaces on the mountainside of Thunder Island has upset quite a few universe knights."

Luo Feng shook his head. "Do they really need to be so petty?"

"That's where you're wrong." True Yan Knight frowned. "They have eternal lives, and their families have all passed away. They

have been practicing for an eternity, and that is how they earned their current status! Their status and their honor might look worthless, but they value it very much.

Luo Feng was astounded.

"Status! Honor!" True Yan Knight whispered. "I was stuck at the invincible emperor level for an eternity, and I could only hide. Only after becoming a universe knight did I earn a high status and incredible honor! And only after that did I become famous again! Their status and glory were earned by their power and contributions to our race." True Yan Knight sighed. "What else do you think they care about aside from their status and honor?"

Luo Feng now understood completely. He had been wandering in the universe for 50,000 years, but he had been observing the weak. He had only seen a few universe knights, and hence, he hadn't realized that universe knights were also living beings—just living beings with great power. They were dedicated to something they believed in. Without families, they cared about their race, status, and honor above all else.

They could die for their own race! They could die for their own honor!

"I now understand," Luo Feng said. "No wonder so many great beings were disappointed by this. If I were a universe knight, I would also be upset if an undying talent suddenly gained the same level of glory as me."

"You're still young, and you're always at the center," True Yan Knight said. "It's normal for you not to realize that."

Luo Feng nodded. Yes. Status and glory were incredibly important to a great being. If someone became undying, became a universe knight, and died without being known, it would be boring. The most exciting way was to fight for honor! For glory!

"I know it." Luo Feng smiled. "I'll prove to those universe knights

that I'm a qualified one. I just need to defeat a universe knight."

"Defeat a universe knight?"

True Yan Knight was shocked. He hadn't witnessed the scene when Luo Feng became undying, so even if he had faith in Luo Feng, he couldn't imagine an undying human being defeating a universe knight. Even Bark Mirror Emperor could only bully the most mediocre universe knights, and he was almost killed by True Yan Knight.

Bark Mirror Emperor was a unique life form with a life gene level of 2,000 times. There was a huge gap between undying fighters and universe knights.

"You don't believe me?" Luo Feng laughed. "Just watch."

******

On the other side of the open-air square.

"Look, Bark Mirror Emperor. There's Blade River Emperor."

Bark Mirror Emperor was sitting with the great beings of the Northern Territory Alliance. He looked at Luo Feng and True Yan Knight from afar. He hated both of their guts.

"He is indeed more powerful." Bark Mirror Emperor sneered. "It seems that this Blade River Emperor has become undying. It's been 80,000 years. He had deep law comprehension before he became undying, yet he still chose to wait for more than 80,000 years. So patient..."

"I've been waiting for 80,000 years." Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth.

He wasn't sure whether he could rival True Yan Knight or not. However... He was confident that he could beat the famous Blade River Emperor.

"I'm undying, and you're undying as well," said Bark Mirror Emperor. "It's not bullying if I fight you myself. After all, you're

the peerless talent in the universe." Bark Mirror Emperor smirked and showed his fangs. Luo Feng and True Yan Knight were standing afar while True Yan Knight stood up and disappeared.

Bark Mirror Emperor approached the heirs of the Hong Alliance.

"Bark Mirror Emperor is coming," someone said.

"Bark Mirror Emperor is walking toward us."

All the 1,000 heirs in Hong Alliance turned around, including Luo Feng.

Chapter 1014: Bark Mirror Emperor and Blade River Emperor

Luo Feng and the other heirs in the Hong Alliance looked toward Bark Mirror, along with heirs from other groups as well. They were all wondering what Bark Mirror Emperor would like to do.

Heng! Heng!

Bark Mirror Emperor smiled and kept walking toward the Hong Alliance group even though he was being stared at by lots of other heirs. He soon arrived at the where Hong Alliance group had gathered.

A universe knight within the Hong Alliance stood up. "Bark Mirror Emperor, what are you doing here?"

"I'm here... for Blade River Emperor."

"Blade River Emperor?"

All the heirs who heard this stood up in anticipation. They had all heard that Bark Mirror Emperor had once hunted Blade River Emperor, and the latter could only resort to hiding in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool to escape. Now, Bark Mirror Emperor was back for Blade River Emperor.

Luo Feng looked at Bark Mirror Emperor and asked, "Why are you looking for me, Bark Mirror Emperor?"

"Haha! I haven't seen you for more than 80,000 years." Bark Mirror Emperor looked at Luo Feng, smiled, and showed his fangs. "I can already sense that you're more powerful. Blade River Emperor, have you become undying?"

Quite a few heirs started to wonder the same thing.

"Hmm... Blade River Emperor is indeed more powerful."

"But still, he can't compare with Bark Mirror Emperor."

"Bark Mirror Emperor is a unique life form who can rival a universe knight. As for Blade River Emperor, he is, after all, a human being. It's quite normal that he's less powerful."

There were many discussions among the heirs in the distance. But Luo Feng wasn't affected by the discussions at all. He nodded and answered, "You're indeed perceptive. That's right. I just became undying."

"Congratulations." Bark Mirror Emperor broke into laughter. "The legendary Blade River Emperor—who could kill an emperor limit when he was only a sector lord, who could escape me when he was only a sector lord, and who could stay alive under the attack from Mud Knight when he was only a sector lord. You had 620,000 battles and won almost all of them..."

Bark Mirror Emperor seemed to be flattering Luo Feng, but his tone sounded aggressive. The heirs listening to the conversation were quite disturbed by his words... Luo Feng's reputation was built on them! However, they had to admit that Luo Feng was indeed impressive to have accomplished so much as a mere sector lord.

"Now that you've become undying," Bark Mirror Emperor continued, "I have to admit that I was not as good as you when I was a sector lord. I'm exhilarated that you've become undying. Exhilarated."

"Thanks," Luo Feng said.

"If you were that powerful when you were only a sector lord," said Bark Mirror Emperor, "you must be much more powerful now that you've become undying."

The heirs on the open-air square thought that the way Bark Mirror Emperor complimented Luo Feng was bizarre, but they agreed. Luo Feng must be incredibly strong if he was able to win so many battles without the help of outer force, and he was only a sector lord back then.

"I'm here," said Bark Mirror Emperor, glaring at Luo Feng, "firstly to congratulate you, and secondly... to challenge you! Blade River Emperor, you're worth challenging. Blade River Emperor, you're worth all my efforts. Do you dare have a life or death battle with me, Blade River Emperor?"

Bark Mirror Emperor gazed at Luo Feng.

Silence. The open-air square went silent instantly. The heirs were all excited, but they kept quiet and watched Luo Feng.

"Life or death battle?" Luo Feng frowned. "Whereabouts? Inside the world of glory?"

"Of course not." Bark Mirror Emperor licked his lips, and his golden eyes glinted with hostility. "I mean a real-life battle. We can pick a place in the Ancestral God Secret Region and have a battle with the promise that neither of us will accept any assistance. It's an entirely one-on-one, life or death battle. Do you dare accept my challenge?" He smirked. "No need to invent excuses. Just tell me, do you dare accept? If you're scared, you can say no. However, I don't think a universe-renowned peerless talent will disappoint me."

Bark Mirror Emperor stared at Luo Feng. "Accept? Or not?"

******

The open-air square was deathly silent. Tens of millions of heirs all listened carefully.

Blade River Emperor was indeed a legend. Would he fight Bark Mirror Emperor after becoming undying? Even though Bark Mirror Emperor wasn't as fabled as him, he was, after all, a powerful unique life form that could intimidate countless undying fighters. Would he accept the challenge?

It was understandable to assume that Luo Feng wouldn't dare accept the challenge. After all, a life or death battle invitation from a powerful unique life form was intimidating enough to most.

However, his reputation would be shattered if he said no.

Luo Feng was undying, but Bark Mirror Emperor was undying as well.

They were both undying... yet Luo Feng was still terrified of Bark Mirror Emperor!

******

"Accept or deny?" Bark Mirror Emperor asked again, staring at Luo Feng.

Hu!

Luo Feng stood up, looked at Bark Mirror Emperor, and smiled. "How can I not take the chance since you're leaping to your own death?"

All the heirs on the open-air square were thrilled.

"You accepted it?" Bark Mirror Emperor's eyes gleamed.

"Of course!" Luo Feng said. He looked around. "I won't deny any challenges from undying fighters!" The voice resounded on the entire square.

All the heirs were stunned.

"Oh?"

"Reckless!"

What Luo Feng had just said was so audacious that Zhu Chong Emperor, who had been watching from afar, couldn't help smiling.

A gloomy teenager in half-transparent purple armor chuckled. "Zhu Chong Emperor, he said he won't deny any challenges from undying fighters," said the teenager. It was difficult to tell whether the teenager was male or female. "Are you just going to let him go like that? If I were still undying, I would kill him myself."

Zhu Chong Emperor glanced at the purple-armored teenager beside him. "Purple Rain Knight, you're already a universe knight.

Don't meddle."

The purple-armored teenager was an incredible unique life form with a life gene level higher than that of Zhu Chong Emperor! He was the mightiest undying fighter on Bauhinia Island before, and he had killed quite a few universe knights when he was undying. After becoming a universe knight, he grew to be a powerful combatant in the Ancestral God School.

"He might not even survive Bark Mirror Emperor, let alone me." Zhu Chong Emperor shook his head. "Luo Feng is too arrogant. He may be a peerless talent, but Bark Mirror Emperor is a special life form with a life gene level of 2,000 times. That's a huge gap."

"Yes." Purple Rain Knight nodded.

Special life forms had their own sense of pride.

"Haha... Fantastic." Bark Mirror Emperor broke into laughter. "I'll send an email to you later and tell you the universe coordinates. I'll choose an area right next to the portal of the Ancestral God Secret Region."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded. "What time?"

"The sooner, the better. But I need to give you some time for preparations. In half a day, and I'll tell you the location later." Bark Mirror Emperor was further excited.

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded.

"Haha..." Bark Mirror Emperor laughed again. He stared at Luo Feng. "Blade River Emperor, I didn't imagine you would be this brave!"

"I hope you can still laugh at the end of the battle." Luo Feng smiled.

"The one with a strong personality," Bark Mirror Emperor said, grinning, "is always the one who dies first."

Sou!

Bark Mirror Emperor disappeared.

Luo Feng looked around and noticed Zhu Chong Emperor and the purple-armored teenager staring at him. He smiled and vanished.

******

The news incited a firestorm. All the heirs in Ancestral God School were thrilled. Even the battle between two real universe knights wouldn't have drawn so much attention. After all, a battle between two undying fighters with universe-knight power was rarer.

Bark Mirror Emperor was a unique life form with the power of a universe knight. Blade River Emperor, a universe-renowned super-talent of the human race, and he had just become undying!

A life-or-death battle between those two... It was such explosive news that billions of races in the universe knew about it instantly through the heirs on Bauhinia Island. All the superpowers knew about it immediately, and so did the human race.

"What? Blade River Emperor Luo Feng is going to engage in a life-or-death battle with Bark Mirror Emperor in the Ancestral God Secret Region?"

"Is that a joke?"

"Bark Mirror Emperor is a powerful special life form, and he has the power of a universe knight. Even ordinary universe knights can be killed by him. Blade River Emperor is simply reckless!"

"Blade River Emperor has a clone talent technique. He won't die."

"But he can get killed! And then his treasures will be taken away. His true treasures were bestowed by our human race. If they're taken by Bark Mirror Emperor, it's a loss for all of us."

"Reckless."

"Arrogant."

"Foolhardy."

Those universe knights who were already dissatisfied with Luo Feng all thought this peerless talent was too haughty! They had seen many peerless talents who were similarly full of themselves, and they would only come to their senses after they suffered great losses!

"He will come to his senses after this battle."

"However, it will cost him true treasures!"

******

Meanwhile, Luo Feng spent his time in the palace on Bauhinia Island.

"This Bark Mirror Emperor is indeed confident," Luo Feng chuckled.

"Master," said Tian Chen Emperor. "Primal Chaos City Leader gave you a big challenge by letting you live on the mountainside of Thunder Island."

"Of course, I know that." Luo Feng nodded. "That's why I need Bark Mirror Emperor. True gold fears no fire; the stronger the fire is, the purer the gold is. It's about time."

Luo Feng stood up.

"We congratulate our master beforehand, for we know you will return with a victory," Tian Chen Emperor said respectfully.

"Prepare a celebration feast," said Luo Feng. "I'll invite Thousand Rain Emperor, Cha Man Emperor, and my teachers after I defeat Bark Mirror Emperor."

He laughed, then teleported himself to the square in front of the leader's palace on Bauhinia Island. He then teleported himself to the secret region through the waterfall.

Chapter 1015: Mad Luo Feng

In an area of the Ancestral God Secret Region floated some fragments of mountains. A stooping shadow stood on top of one of the mountain fragments. It was Bark Mirror Emperor!

Zoom!

A silver shadow showed up and landed on another mountain fragment.

"Bark Mirror Emperor, you arrived here quite quickly," said Luo Feng, standing on the mountain fragment with his wings open.

Bark Mirror Emperor sneered. "You're not slow, either. I thought your true treasure, the wing, was lost in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. But now I see it again, it should be claimed by some supreme being of the human race."

Luo Feng smiled. "Think whatever you want."

******

In the open-air square of the world of glory.

All the heirs gathered on the open-air square; they were all sitting and looking at Bark Mirror Emperor, who was at the center of the square.

"I'll broadcast this battle through the virtual network." Bark Mirror Emperor looked around. "Everyone will see who the winner is."

Hong!

Bark Mirror Emperor pointed to the space beside him. Suddenly, a light shot out and formed a projection. All the heirs could see distinctively that Luo Feng stood on a gigantic mountain fragment while Bark Mirror Emperor stood on another. They stood face to face with each other.

"Bark Mirror Emperor is so reckless and confident that he is

doing a live broadcast through the virtual network," someone said.

"He's a special life form! Why would he not be confident?"

"Quick, tell our race!"

The virtual network kept broadcasting the battle, and the heirs watching the fight telecast it back to their own races.

"Haha! Let's see how the human dies."

"He'll win without question."

The Northern Territory Alliance looked fierce. As for the heirs in Hong Alliance, they were all watching, holding their breath.

Thousand Rain Emperor asked True Yan Knight in a low voice, "Do you think Blade River Emperor can win, True Yan Knight?"

True Yan Knight gazed at the project in the sky. "Just watch."

At this moment, lots of seniors from the superpowers of the universe were also paying close attention to the fight, like many universe knights in the human race.

******

Luo Feng stood on a floating mountain fragment, looking at Bark Mirror Emperor in the distance. He glared at him. "Bark Mirror Emperor, I didn't expect you to do a live broadcast through the virtual network."

"What? Are you afraid?" Bark Mirror Emperor grimaced and showed his fangs.

Luo Feng shook his head. "If you want to bring shame upon yourself, why should I stop you?"

"So arrogant!" Bark Mirror Emperor snorted. "Now that we've both arrived, there's no need to wait longer. Let's started the fight now."

"So I can kill you even earlier than expected," Luo Feng replied.

Bark Mirror Emperor's face twisted. "Foolhardy human!" Bark

Mirror Emperor roared.

Hong!

His godly power started to burn, and the force surged. It twisted and tore apart the space around him. Bark Mirror Emperor was small compared to other special life forms, but he was still much larger than human beings. He already had an advantage in size.

Shing!

A bloody glove showed up around his right claw, and that claw cut apart the space around it. In response, Luo Feng grinned and burned his godly power.

Hong!

Luo Feng's force also surged and tore apart the space around him.

Bark Mirror Emperor was startled. "How is that possible?" he said.

Luo Feng wasn't as powerful as he was in the world of glory, and he even felt weak before the fight. However, when Luo Feng started to burn his body, he began emanating power as intense as Bark Mirror Emperor—a special life form. And Bark Mirror Emperor's godly body was stronger than some universe knights!

Bark Mirror Emperor glared at Luo Feng and yelled, "You hid your power!"

Luo Feng shook his wing. "Too late!" he said.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Countless stars floated with law engravings on them. After being injected with Luo Feng's godly power, they disintegrated the space around them, forming miniature black holes. No space fragments would even touch the stars.

520 stars... 520 miniature black holes...

The stronger the user was, the more powerful the treasures

would become. Luo Feng's godly body was stronger than many universe knights, and each of the burning stars was fully utilized. Although he hadn't performed his technique, the stars had already made the space around them collapse and form black holes.

"This is a true treasure!" Bark Mirror Emperor was terrified, as the power was incredible.

"I've told you, it's too late." Luo Feng waved his hands.

Instantly, countless golden threads burst out of the 520 miniature black holes and formed a forceful beast god! The 520 black holes connected with each other and took the shape of the beast god's tail.

Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth. It was happening too fast. He had intended to crush Luo Feng, but now Luo Feng was slightly more powerful than him—and his spiritual force weapon was a true treasure!

"Aargh!" Bark Mirror Emperor roared. "Goddamn human! You're only so powerful because of your true treasures! As for your weapons... Haha! I'm a special life form with a godly body much more powerful than yours. Even true treasures are not going to help you. Die!"

Bark Mirror Emperor charged Luo Feng fiercely. Both of them cast "space seal" to start of the battle.

"Splendid like stars, the red light rips the nightfall like a blade!" said Luo Feng. He shook his wing and dodged Bark Mirror Emperor. Meanwhile, he watched the gigantic beast god in the distance.

The beast god growled. Bark Mirror Emperor growled as well and performed his talent technique.

Luo Feng was attacked but was left unharmed. "I was already able to defend myself against that talent technique using tower pearl. Now, I can withstand it even without star pearl!"

He looked at the beast god and Bark Mirror Emperor afar, who started to fight. This was the power of a spiritual force leader. He didn't need to engage in close-quarters combat.

Hong!

The beast god's tail moved like a flash of shining red light. Out of the three ultimate techniques Luo Feng had created, the second move was the fastest one, and besides, all the power was integrated into this one move... If the enemy dodged it, Luo Feng might need some time to make a second strike.

The red light tore apart the surrounding space and attacked Bark Mirror Emperor directly.

Bark Mirror Emperor waved his claws, bellowing loudly.

Peng!

The attacking power broke Bark Mirror Emperor's arm instantly. The beast god's tail slashed Bark Mirror Emperor's chest.

Peng!

The godly body started to crack, and the golden light emanating from the true treasure armor dimmed.

"Im—impossible..." Bark Mirror Emperor glared at Luo Feng, terrified.

Six percent of his godly body was destroyed! And it had happened with his armor protecting him!

Luo Feng sensed that Bark Mirror Emperor had become weaker. He nodded and thought, Just as I expected.

He had more godly power than Bark Mirror Emperor. Although Bark Mirror Emperor also had true treasures, Luo Feng's Star Map was a true treasure, too. As for techniques, although he only performed the second move of Star Map, the second ultimate move was already much more powerful than the third pinnacle move. The third move needed 160 stars, whereas the second one required

520... Although Bark Mirror Emperor created his own claw technique, it could barely pass the threshold of pinnacle techniques.

All of them made Luo Feng stronger than his competitor. Besides... His incredible willpower further strengthened his godly power. Warriors didn't need much willpower when attacking while spiritual force leaders valued willpower to a great extent. The capacity of a spiritual force weapon depended on the strength of willpower.

With such an extraordinary will, Luo Feng destroyed six percent of his enemy's godly body!

"You're doomed, Bark Mirror Emperor." Luo Feng gazed at Bark Mirror Emperor coldly.

Hong!

The beast god attacked Bark Mirror Emperor again and again. He strived to dodge the attack, but he was nowhere close to the speed of the spiritual force weapon, which might be faster than Luo Feng with his Shi Wu Wings. He could only be slashed again and again.

Bark Mirror Emperor had true treasures to protect his godly body while Luo Feng had a true treasure to attack him! They didn't have any advantages over each other in this aspect...

Bark Mirror Emperor still looked mad. "Haha!" he roared. "My godly body is clearly much larger than yours. You need to consume more than one percent of my godly power to annihilate my godly body. Do you really have that much power?"

"Really?" Luo Feng sneered.

The more powerful one had an edge in annihilating godly power. For instance, emperor limits had the same amount of godly power as pinnacle emperors did. However, they used their secret amplification techniques or attacking techniques to strengthen their power tenfold, and that was how they could annihilate

emperor limits' godly bodies by consuming 5 to 10 percent of their own power.

As for Luo Feng, he also needed to consume one percent of Bark Mirror Emperor's godly power to destroy him completely. However, Luo Feng's godly body looked tiny.

"How come? Why isn't your godly body being weakened?" Bark Mirror Emperor's golden eyes were wide open, filled with fury.

"Moron! That's because of my clone technique!" Luo Feng grinned.

One of his rings was holding a Remote Ocean body, and the Remote Ocean body—at the height of more than 5,500 miles—kept supplying him with endless godly power, which kept the original earthling body at 100 percent.

"Ah!" Bark Mirror Emperor was petrified. How could he have forgotten about that! "You're carrying your bodies? Bastard human!"

With that, Bark Mirror Emperor went mad. He tried to run, but the beast god just kept slashing him, and his godly body kept being damaged... 51 percent... 45 percent... 39 percent...

"Your teacher True Yan and you!" roared Bark Mirror Emperor. He had completely lost his mind. He could only resort to self-destruction unless he wanted to fall. "Explode! Explode! Explode!"

Hong! Long!

Bark Mirror Emperor's remaining body exploded, and tens of millions of miles of space around him were annihilated.

Suddenly, a huge shadow showed up. The figure looked around, then shook his head. "I'm late!" he said. "I tried to get here as soon as possible after realizing something was wrong, but I'm still too late. Bark Mirror Emperor exploded."

"Huh?" said Luo Feng, standing amid the aftershock of the

explosion. He turned around and saw the figure in the distance. Its sudden appearance startled him.

Pei Feng Knight, one of the supreme beings of the Northern Territory Alliance and one of the candidate deified generals. Although he was weaker than actual deified generals, he was a universe overlord.

"Relax, Blade River Emperor," said Pei Fang Knight. "I'm not here to kill you. Although you killed Bark Mirror Emperor, the true treasures he left belong to the Northern Territory Alliance. I'm here to take them away."

Pei Feng Knight dashed toward Luo Feng like a flash of light.

"I was the one who killed Bark Mirror Emperor!" Luo Feng said. "I'll claim those true treasures as my trophies!"

Under the burning godly power, his voice was like thunder resounding through the broken space. Meanwhile, the gigantic beast god formed by 520 stars grabbed the space ring, armor, bloody gloves, and crystal balls.

Chapter 1016: Universe Overlord

Sou!

The gigantic beast god grabbed the trophies with his claw and flew back like a flash of light. He was so fast that even Pei Feng Knight couldn't catch him.

"In my pocket." Luo Feng waved his hand and put the space ring, the world ring, and the true treasure armor into his own world ring.

A furious roar blasted near Luo Feng's ears. "Blade River Emperor, you're just greedy!"

Luo Feng turned around and saw Pei Feng Knight dashing toward him. He grinned and transmitted his voice. "Pei Feng Knight, you're a candidate deified general. Are you really that stupid? Do you really believe Bark Mirror Emperor would have left my true treasures alone if I were the one who got killed? What a joke! If you want them back, take them with your own hand!"

Pei Feng Knight was infuriated. The only rule in the universe was to fight. If Bark Mirror Emperor killed Luo Feng, he would've taken Luo Feng's true treasures as well. As for Pei Feng Knight, he thought Blade River Emperor should've given the true treasure back to him as he had already asked politely and promised not to kill him.

"You moron! You're too arrogant." Pei Feng Knight transmitted his roaring sound, and there was fire burning in his eyes. He was more than 1,000 feet tall, which made him look taller and bigger than Bark Mirror Emperor. Though he couldn't catch up with Luo Feng instantly, he opened his mouth!

Hu!

An intangible attack dashed Luo Feng in lightspeed. Soul attack! It was faster even than the spiritual force weapon, and it was

flexible.

"No!" Luo Feng was terrified but couldn't dodge it. He could only withstand the attack with all his power.

Pei Feng Knight was a candidate deified general, which meant he had already reached the perfect level at one of the 72 deified general inheritances. His soul amplification already reached 100 times, which was the limit, and he also learned a set of special attacks that only belonged to deified generals... The power of that set of attacks was more powerful than the talent techniques of many special life forms! It was the ultimate technique of deified general inheritance, and it was a universe-master level technique!

Pei Feng Knight, as a being at the same level as Xi Luo Duo, had a life gene level of more than 60 times. Besides, he was a universe knight who had a godly body 100 times that of an undying fighter, which meant his godly body was 600 million times stronger than that of a sector lord, which made it more powerful than Luo Feng's original earthling body.

Stronger godly body, perfect soul amplification, universe overlord level willpower, and universe master level techniques! He was superior to Luo Feng in all aspects...

Ang!

It was soundless. When Luo Feng's godly body was attacked, he could feel that his godly power was being stripped away. This technique attacked the life imprint in the godly power directly, and its goal was to completely destroy the life imprint, which was equivalent to destroying Luo Feng's soul.

"Guard! Guard! Guard!" Luo Feng was roaring in his heart, with his willpower and burning godly body controlling Tower Pearl.

Star Pearl gleamed and locked Luo Feng's godly body, which protected him from all the fierce attacks from Pei Feng Knight. Although he was inferior to Pei Feng Knight in all aspects, without

Tower Pearl, his soul would've been crushed completely under one attack. However, this was when the power of a true treasure was manifested!

Luo Feng could resist Bark Mirror Emperor's talent technique with Tower Pearl when he was only a sector lord, and now that his godly power was half that of Pei Feng Knight and he had the Tower Pearl to guard his soul...

"Haha!" laughed Luo Feng. "Pei Feng Knight, your technique is not that impressive!"

Luo Feng transmitted his voice and started to flee like a beam of light. He knew that a universe overlord had multiple techniques, and he would have to utilize all he'd gotten if he wanted to fight a universe overlord. Besides, even if he utilized everything he had, a win wasn't guaranteed. He had just become undying, and he still hadn't gotten a top-tier true treasure like Force Arm.

Sou!

Shi Wu Wing was utilized, and Luo Feng started to flee swiftly among the space fragments.

"What?" Pei Feng Knight said. "He resisted it?"

Pei Feng Knight was shocked. Bark Mirror Emperor speculated that Luo Feng had a soul true treasure after hunting Luo Feng before, but he didn't report it back to the seniors of Northern Territory Alliance because soul attack was a merciless technique and soul true treasures were precious without comparison!

True treasures like pieces of armor and the Shi Wu Wings could only weaken soul attacks. As for soul true treasures, they could guard the soul! If flying palace true treasures could defend one against material attacks, soul true treasures could defend the soul.

Soul true treasures were more attractive to great beings, which was why Bark Mirror Emperor didn't make it public, as he was afraid that Luo Feng would be killed by some supreme being in

Northern Territory Alliance. Thus, he couldn't get the soul true treasure. Instead, he had been waiting for the perfect opportunity, yet he resorted to self-destruction.

******

Seeing Luo Feng escape like a flash of light, Pei Feng started to chase him and performed another technique.

"Law domain!"

Pei Feng Knight knew he didn't have much time, as the supreme beings of the human race might arrive soon. After that, he wouldn't have the chance.

Hu!

The hundreds of millions of miles of space around them turned silent, trapped in the law domain!

Luo Feng was trapped as well. "Law domain... of time law!"

He was stunned. Undying fighters could perform law domain, and so could universe knights. Besides, space and time law were more superior than gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, thunder and light. Control over law domain could make the power of law domain surge. Even as powerful as Luo Feng's world projection had been as a sector lord, the law domain of official-level undying fighters could rival his world projection.

Pei Feng Knight gazed at Luo Feng coldly. "Wind Annihilation!" he cried.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The flow of time was bizarre within the time domain. Luo Feng tried to flee, but miniature tornados showed up around him, each about the size of an eyeball. They surrounded Luo Feng and dashed at him one after another.

"Get the hell away!" Luo Feng shouted.

He tried to use his Shi Wu Wings to block the tornados, but they

dodged the wings' strikes, easily making contact with Luo Feng's godly body.

He didn't dare to close his Shi Wu Wings completely. If he did so, he would be significantly slower, and he would be caught by Pei Feng Knight. Although he was already affected by space law domain, it was not omnipotent; he could still change direction and keep his distance from Pei Feng Knight.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The miniature tornadoes bit into Luo Feng's body.

Ah!

60 percent of Luo Feng's godly body was gone immediately, which terrified Luo Feng.

He's trying to annihilate my godly body? Luo Feng thought in horror.

Fortunately, he had stored his world rings on his body where he hid Remote Ocean body, Mosha body, and Golden Horned Beast body. The world ring with Remote Ocean body let out godly power, restoring Luo Feng's godly body.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Luo Feng's godly body kept being weakened, but each time, it recovered!

"So this is the power of a universe overlord..." said Luo Feng. "He isn't even close to me yet, but he can still damage me like that!"

Luo Feng kept using his Shi Wu Wing to keep his distance from Pei Feng Knight.

******

"He's still alive?" said Pei Feng Knight.

Pei Feng Knight was dazed. Although this move wasn't effective against universe overlords at his level, it was lethal against

ordinary universe knights. It was a technique made for time law domain.

"His godly body is constantly being consumed, but somehow, it's still at 100 percent. But of course—he has the clone technique. He must have stored a body."

Pei Feng Knight had figured it out.

Bark Mirror Emperor had used the virtual network to broadcast the fight against Luo Feng when it first started, but when he realized he couldn't even defend himself against Luo Feng, he had turned off the broadcast as he felt ashamed. Which was why...

The heirs in the open-air square of the world of glory and other superpowers in the universe only knew that Luo Feng had crushed Bark Mirror Emperor. Pei Feng Knight had not known that Luo Feng had brought his bodies to the fight.

Pei Feng Knight's eyes gleamed with madness. "I can only kill him after destroying his bodies!"

Pei Feng quickly hatched a plan. He had said he wouldn't kill Blade River Emperor before, as he knew Blade River Emperor would be revived even if he killed him. However, Blade River Emperor was obviously carrying his bodies with him! He didn't know exactly how many bodies Blade River Emperor had, but the number couldn't be large. Together with the original body, some fighters had two godly bodies while others had three.

Pei Feng Knight's eyes glinted fiercely.

"Kill!" he snorted.

Two black whirlwinds came out of his nose and flew toward Luo Feng like two miniature black dragons. The two black whirlwinds didn't appear powerful, but all the space fragments they touched vanished immediately.

"Danger! Danger! Danger!"

Luo Feng felt the winds' life-threatening essence and quickly realized he was in trouble.

Chapter 1017: Blade River Emperor, You Are Vicious!

My human godly body will be annihilated immediately if I am touched by these two black whirlwinds! thought Luo Feng.

Although he was significantly inferior when it came to battle techniques, he could still sense that the two black whirlwinds were the most horrendous attacks he had ever encountered!

Pei Feng Knight had already made three moves. The first move was one of the deified general ultimate techniques, and it was terrifically powerful. Luo Feng had withstood that attack with his Tower Pearl. The second move was a material attack, which was used when being cornered by weaker universe knights. However, it could still destroy half of Luo Feng's godly body. As for the third move, it was a material attack used when fighting universe overlords! Both of the two black whirlwinds were hundreds of times more powerful than the miniature tornados!

No! thought Luo Feng. I'm trapped in time law domain now, so even if I use Ancient Boat Galaxy, I can't get away. Perhaps he'll even take my Ancient Boat Galaxy. As for my Mosha body, he is only able to perform Domain when he's alone, so I would need to put my original earthling body back in the world ring. However, Pei Feng Knight would never give me a chance like that.

Luo Feng flew swiftly with his Shi Wu Wing. He had made up his mind. Neither Ancient Boat Galaxy nor Mosha body was suitable. That left him with only one option...

******

Pei Feng Knight pursued Luo Feng, his eyes glinting greedily.

He's got to have a soul true treasure to be able to resist my deified general technique, he thought. He's got to! No wonder Bark Mirror Emperor wasn't able to kill the then-sector-lord Blade River

Emperor. And Bark Mirror Emperor had the benefit of an incredibly powerful talent technique!

Pei Feng Knight was feeling more confident now. The deified general technique could severely damage even a universe overlord. Luo Feng would need a soul true treasure to resist it.

A soul true treasure. The human race must indeed highly value Blade River Emperor. Even I, as a universe overlord, don't have that kind of true treasure.

Pei Feng Knight watched the black whirlwinds closing in and shouted eagerly, "Die! Die! I'll take your true treasures after you're dead!"

Pei Feng Knight was a universe overlord, yet he only had two true treasures, both of which were mediocre and common. One was a piece of protective armor, and the other was a blade. He immediately figured out that this peerless talent of the human race had a true treasure wing and a soul true treasure.

"Die! Die!" Pei Feng Knight cried, watching expectantly.

It's all over, he thought. Even a universe knight with true treasure armor is likely to be killed by this move.

******

All was silent. Two black whirlwinds intertwined with each other as they got closer and closer to Luo Feng.

"Pei Feng Knight, you've left me no choice!" Luo Feng transmitted his roaring voice.

Hong!

A towering shadow suddenly appeared behind Luo Feng. It was more than 5,500 miles tall.

A godly body standing at a height of 5,500 miles was a terrific sight, and Pei Feng Knight was shocked to his very core.

"What... What kind of special life form is this?" Pei Feng Knight

stammered.

A godly body at a height of more than 5,500 miles existed almost exclusively among flesh-and-blood-type living beings.

Earth only had a diameter of 6,000 miles... This living being was nearly as large as the planet Earth!

Hong!

The entire godly body started to burn, and the godly tower surged, destabilizing the time law domain.

Although Remote Ocean body only had a life gene level of 1,000 times and the original earthling body had a level of 3,000 times, Remote Ocean body emitted millions of times greater pressure to the time law domain than the original earthling body.

The reason: Remote Ocean body was simply gigantic! The godly power he burned every second was more than 100 million times that the original earthling body did.

The two black whirlwinds pursued Luo Feng at lightspeed, but Remote Ocean body charged directly at the black whirlwinds! Luo Feng had chosen the most appropriate time to let out Remote Ocean body, as he did so when the black whirlwinds were only 6,000 miles away from him.

Remote Ocean body enveloped the black whirlwinds.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Like snow melting under the sun's rays, Remote Ocean body was being consumed.

"Larger, larger, larger!" Remote Ocean body broke into laughter, and the sound resounded through the boundless space.

His godly body was suddenly enlarged, and he became 60,000 miles tall. The density of his body, therefore, became much lower. Yet the black whirlwinds were trapped inside Remote Ocean body and needed to annihilate the godly power around them to move

forward.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The black whirlwinds kept consuming the godly power around them, but Remote Ocean body had unlimited godly power!

"Remote Ocean body had the same godly power as universe knights," said Luo Feng. "I had a godly body at the height of more than 5,500 miles for you to destroy. Let's see how much your black whirlwinds can destroy!"

Luo Feng relied solely on the gigantic godly body! It was unlikely for an enormous godly body like that to fall. One wouldn't be able to destroy the body—even if the body didn't fight back at all!

After a few seconds... the two black whirlwinds dissipated after annihilating an enormous amount of godly power.

"You can destroy 9 percent of my godly body?" Remote Ocean body laughed. "Ordinary universe knights can't damage one-1,000th of it even if they self-destruct. No wonder you're a universe overlord!"

Hong!

Remote Ocean body dashed at Pei Feng Knight. Pei Feng Knight had been chasing Luo Feng all along, and they were now only six million miles away from each other.

Remote Ocean body raced towards Pei Feng Knight. "The original earthling body is moving in the opposite direction with Remote Ocean body moving in a straight line. I'll get closer and closer to you if you continue to pursue the original earthling body!"

"Blade River Emperor, do you really think you're invincible with that body?" Pei Feng Knight roared. "I'll let you know now that even a gigantic godly body like this is useless against me!"

Remote Ocean body bumped into Pei Feng Knight.

"Explode! Explode! Explode!" Remote Ocean body roared and

blew itself up!

"What?" Pei Feng Knight shouted, completely shocked.

Never in his wildest dreams would he have expected this. Supreme beings with powerful godly bodies like that would never self-destruct! A godly body at a height of more than 5,500 miles would cost too much to recover, yet Remote Ocean body let out all its energies at once!

The power... was unbelievably mighty!

Hong! Long! Long!

An area of 60,000 miles around Remote Ocean body was dead silent, but everywhere within 600,000 miles was instantly blasted by the godly power. Space fragments flew hundreds of millions of miles into the distance.

"Bastard!" came a furious cry from the center of the explosion.

A blue figure stood at the center of the explosion. He was surrounded by black air. The six eyes glinted fiercely. "Damn you! Damn you!"

"Enough, Pei Feng Knight."

Two powerful figures stood face-to-face with each other. One of them was Pei Feng Knight, and the other was a werewolf great being—beside whom stood Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at Jiu Feng Knight in front of him. Jiu Feng Knight had received the complete deified general inheritance. He was a candidate deified general and a universe overlord! Jiu Feng had arrived just as Luo Feng's Remote Ocean body exploded himself...

Luo Feng flew beside Jiu Feng Knight, as he didn't want to continue the fight.

Universe overlords are too powerful, Luo Feng thought. My Remote Ocean body can only injure him after self-destruction.

******

Jiu Feng Knight and Pei Feng Knight faced each other at a distance. They were both candidate deified generals, and they belonged to the same category of deified general inheritance.

Pei Feng Knight glared at the werewolf great being. "You want to stop me, Jiu Feng?"

"I'm human," Jiu Feng Knight said coldly. "I'll surely defend a great being of my race."

There were black whirlpools in all the six of Pei Feng Knight's eyes, and the airflow was tumbling around him. "Then let's fight," he said.

Jiu Feng Knight responded, "Jiu Feng, you were not my match even before 20 percent of your godly body was depleted. I suggest that you leave. Otherwise, other great beings of my race will arrive soon."

"Bastard." Pei Feng Knight clenched his teeth. "Damn it!"

He was exasperated. He was a universe overlord! It was strenuous to complete the deified general inheritance, yet he had done it! And as a universe overlord, he was seldom defeated unless he facing other universe overlords or universe masters. He hadn't risked everything yet. However, he hadn't expected to be attacked by the self-destruction of that godly body at a height of more than 5,500 miles!

5,500 miles! If it weren't for his true treasure armor, he would have been annihilated! Even with his true treasure armor, 20 percent of his godly body was gone!

He was defeated... by an undying fighter!

"Blade River Emperor!" Pei Feng Knight roared, glaring at Luo Feng. "You... You were willing to blow up your godly body! A godly body as powerful as a universe knight! A godly body at the height of greater than 5,500 miles! You are vicious!"

Luo Feng remained calm. "All too easy," he said.

"I've underestimated you," Pei Feng Knight said. He stared at Luo Feng. "Next time... I'll utilize everything I've got. I'll treat you like a universe overlord." Pei Feng Knight glanced at Jiu Feng Knight. "Jiu Feng... You only rely on your true treasures."

With that, Jiu Feng Knight turned into a beam of light and teleported himself away.

Although they were both universe overlords, Pei Feng Knight came from a mighty race of Northern Territory Alliance. There were lots of races within the Northern Territory Alliance, but they only had about the same amount of resources as the Hong Alliance did. It was fortunate for Pei Feng Knight to have been given two true treasures.

As for Jiu Feng Knight, he came from the human race—a pinnacle race in the universe with valuables to spare. Naturally, they highly valued their own great beings. Jiu Feng Knight had four true treasures, and they were a perfect combination. With his own mighty power and four true treasures, Jiu Feng Knight was indeed Pei Feng Knight's better.

"Good for you, Luo Feng," Jiu Feng Knight said. He glanced at Luo Feng with a smile on his face.

Chapter 1018: Prove Himself

The space gradually became peaceful, and the space fragments vanished completely. Jiu Feng Knight and Luo Feng stood facing one another.

"You just injured Pei Feng Knight, a universe overlord," said Jiu Feng Knight. "You were able to injure someone who's able to fully operate the third form of the true treasure armor on his body with his law comprehension... Impressive. Impressive, indeed."

"I'm just lucky." Luo Feng smiled.

Generally, true treasures had different forms. For instance, his Shi Wu Wing had three forms, and with the user getting stronger, it could be better utilized. When Luo Feng tried to drive Star Tower, he could feel that the law engravings inside it were complex to the point of being incomprehensible. Thus, he couldn't even operate it at a minimum level, let alone make the best of it.

Pei Feng Knight was a universe overlord, and that true treasure armor barely crossed the threshold of true treasures. He was indeed able to operate a true treasure in its third form, which was why he had only lost 20 percent of his godly body after a 5,500-mile tall godly body exploded in front of him!

Jiu Feng Knight shook his head and looked at Luo Feng. "It's because of your power. For what it's worth, I admire how you just blew up that enormous godly body."

"I'm not even in his league," Luo Feng said. "I didn't have other option."

"Yes," Jiu Feng Knight said. "He indeed overpowers you to a large extent. After all, you're only undying, and your law comprehension can't even compare with him. He can wield the power of the same true treasure much better than you. I assume you're unable to make the best use of your true treasure wing?"

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded. He had just started the second form of Shi Wu Wing.

"Besides," Jiu Feng Knight continued, "he underestimated you in the first place and didn't even consider that you might be a contender. In the future, you might not even have the chance to self-destruct and hurt him."

Luo Feng nodded. In the future, Pei Feng Knight might keep his distance from Remote Ocean body. As long as he was more than 60,000 miles away from the center of the explosion, the blast wouldn't be dangerous. And if Luo Feng was too close to Pei Feng Knight... he didn't dare detonate Remote Ocean body, as he was afraid that his original earthling body would be injured as well!

This time, his original earthling body had been millions of miles away from the center of the explosion. Naturally, he hadn't been hurt at all. If, however, his original earthling body had been in close-quarters combat with Pei Feng Knight when he had detonated the Remote Ocean body, the original earthling body would have been annihilated immediately, and Pei Feng Knight would have only suffered a few injuries. At that point, Pei Feng Knight would definitely have taken all the treasures left by Luo Feng's earthling original body.

"He'll be onto you after this," Jiu Feng Knight said. "He'll definitely turn this around. I'll tell you about him to make sure you won't be bullied by him in the future."

Luo Feng listened carefully.

"Pei Feng Knight has two true treasures," Jiu Feng Knight said. "One is a piece of armor, and the other is a blade. As his true treasure weapon is a blade, he devoted lots of his energies and time to close combat, and he created incredible blade techniques. His fighting power, together with his blade, can destroy lots of treasures in one strike."

Luo Feng was stunned.

"You must have been able to resist his soul technique if you survived that fight," Jiu Feng Knight said. "As for some distant attacking skills, I'm sure you can handle them as well. The only thing you need to beware of is his close-quarters combat techniques. They're his trump card. In close-quarters combat, he can fully utilize his true treasure blade. Even if you have true treasure armor, your godly body won't be able to withstand the shock wave." Jiu Feng Knight shook his head solemnly. "Unless you have a flying-palace-type true treasure."

"Is the combination of his fighting techniques and true treasure blade really that powerful?" Luo Feng couldn't help but ask. "Can it really destroy a treasure with a single strike?"

Did does that mean my Ancient Boat Galaxy would be at risk?

"There are different levels of treasures," Jiu Feng Knight said. "Some top-tier treasures and set treasures are already close to true treasures, and they are difficult to destroy, whereas some ordinary treasure armors or weapons will be fragile."

Luo Feng nodded. Ancient Boat Galaxy was a top-tier treasure and was as valuable as true treasures. Besides, it had belonged to an inborn beast god known as "Wine Master" before. It should be solid.

"Remember, be mindful of his close-quarters combat techniques," Jiu Feng Knight said. He nodded. "All right, let's go back."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded.

******

Luo Feng knew he didn't want to reveal his trump cards. He had only utilized the second move of Star Map when fighting Bark Mirror Emperor. And when he was fighting Pei Feng Knight, he could have hidden in Ancient Boat Galaxy and let Mosha body perform his talent technique Domain to escape. However, if he had done so... he would have revealed two of his deepest secrets.

Ancient Boat Galaxy and the talent technique Domain... Only a few in the universe—including Nine Remoteness Master and Chaos City Leader—knew about Domain. It was a vital trump card for him, as he could almost certainly escape from any enemies weaker than universe masters. Hence, he wouldn't use it unless his life was seriously threatened.

As for the Remote Ocean body, at the height of more than 5,500 miles, he could recover it in no time. After all, he should at least show some real power.

******

In the open-air square of the world of glory, there was hustle and bustle among the heirs.

"What's the result of the battle?"

"Bark Mirror Emperor's such a sore loser. He was the one who wanted a live broadcast in the first place, but he turned it off after realizing that he was at a disadvantage."

"It's must be Bark Mirror Emperor who lost."

"That's right."

"He lost without a doubt."

The heirs were upset by Bark Mirror Emperor. He had been exceedingly confident and had wanted all the heirs to watch the fight, presuming he would crush Blade River Emperor. It had indeed excited many heirs. The news spread across the universe, drawing attention from lots of supreme beings. Little did they expect Bark Mirror Emperor to cut off the feed halfway through the fight.

"Look, it's Blade River Emperor!"

All the heirs in the square looked towards the portal. A shadow appeared. It was Blade River Emperor.

Luo Feng looked at the heirs in the distance. He saw his teacher

True Yan Knight and his friends, including Cha Man Emperor. His voice resounded on the square as he said, "Hi, all. I've already finished the battle with Bark Mirror Emperor. Here is a clip of the battle."

A blurry light shot out from Luo Feng's wrist guard, and a 3D virtual projection showed up in the sky of the square. The clip began at the point when Bark Mirror Emperor and Blade River Emperor met. The fight was fierce, but Bark Mirror Emperor was completely suppressed. Finally, at the end of the fight, Bark Mirror Emperor blew himself up in order not to be enslaved...

It was a universe knight-level battle, yet both of them were undying! One was a special life form while the other was a timeless and peerless talent of the human race. But, to everyone's surprise, the result was that the human won, and the special life form was left with no choice but to destroy himself!

"Incredible!"

"He... he died!"

"Self-destruction!"

The heirs were astounded. They had already reasoned that Bark Mirror Emperor must have lost after watching the first half of the battle, but they didn't expect Bark Mirror Emperor to be so crushed so badly that he died.

The square was filled with a sense of shock. The consensus was that only a universe knight could kill Bark Mirror Emperor. The heirs watched Luo Feng as he walked to where the heirs of Hong Alliance gathered. He sat beside his teacher True Yan Knight.

"Hmm?" Luo Feng glanced around and saw a shadow afar. "Pei Feng Knight." Luo Feng frowned.

Pei Feng Knight was also watching the video clip. He was visibly terrified to know that Blade River Emperor was making the footage of the battle public. Luo Feng could practically read his thoughts:

Is he going to show the footage of him injuring me? Beings like Pei Feng Knight cared about their reputations a lot.

Pei Feng Knight immediately connected to the world of glory with his consciousness.

"All good, all good." Pei Feng Knight was relieved. "He only showed the footage of the battle between him and Bark Mirror Emperor."

Pei Feng Knight suddenly turned around. While Luo Feng looked at him, they exchanged eye contact.

Heng! Heng!

Pei Feng Knight's eyes glinted aggressively. He moved his lips without making a sound, but Luo Feng could tell clearly what he had just said: "Blade River, let's see who'll rescue you next time."

"I'll defeat you again next time." Luo Feng also moved his lips without making a sound.

Heng!

Pei Feng Knight vanished.

Luo Feng grinned and looked back at the open air square. All the heirs were amazed by the footage of the battle, and they all recorded it and transferred it back to the powers they belonged to. Likewise, the video was transferred to Hong Alliance and the human race.

If I want to be a supreme being in the universe, I need to be a supreme being within the human race first! thought Luo Feng. Many universe knights within the human race are bitter because I made my settlement on the mountainside of Thunder Island. Words are useless—I need to prove myself with my records! Luo Feng smiled. Universe knights like Nine Blade Knight will get to watch the footage soon.

He made the footage public, as he wanted to prove his power

with his record... To prove he could not only rival ordinary universe knights, but that he also killed them!

Chapter 1019: Supreme Council

The mountainside of Thunder Island was boundless. There were only twelve servants in Luo Feng's palaces, and they were all carefully selected sector lords. During the 80,000 years when Luo Feng had created the ultimate technique Star Map, Luo's family had developed into a true superfamily with its huge sum of resources. It was a top-tier superfamily in every aspect—members, training system, and a number of great beings... There was even a large group of sector lords!

It was normal to train someone to be a sector lord, and it was easier with adequate sources. "Babata" had been confident that he could raise Luo Feng to be a sector lord, and his resources were nothing compared to what Luo's family had.

Two sector lords greeted Luo Feng as he walked in the hallway.

"Family master."

"Family master."

Their eyes gleamed. As Luo Feng's descendants, they worshipped him.

"You can walk out first," Luo Feng said as he quickly walked out of the hallway and arrived at the square in front of the palace, in front of which was a cliff.

"Yes, sir." The two sector lords walked out.

Luo Feng looked out into the distance. A shadow flew toward him. It was True Yan Knight.

"Teacher!" Luo Feng shouted, smiling.

"Luo Feng." True Yan Knight landed on a rock.

"Please, teacher, take a seat." Luo Feng walked along the path beside him.

There were several pavilions on a square made of rocks,

including exquisite wooden desks and chairs. They sat face-to-face with each other.

"You came here to pick me up immediately after I sent you an email." True Yan Knight said, looking pleased. "You're such a good disciple of mine."

"I shall respect my teacher," Luo Feng said.

"Haha! Stop acting." True Yan Knight laughed. "I know you want to know how other universe knights reacted. Don't you?"

"You're so perceptive, teacher," Luo Feng answered.

It had been two days since he fought Bark Mirror Emperor, and the footage had already spread throughout the human race. Many universe knights had watched the clip. It must have evoked strong reactions, because lots of universe knights had been dissatisfied before. Those same universe knights may have been amazed after watching the clip. Luo Feng felt good just imagining that.

He wanted to see the look on those universe knights' faces! Luo Feng may not have cared about what ordinary life forms thought, but he did feel accomplished by dumbfounding those universe knights of the human race, many of whom had their own universe countries.

"Haha! I knew it!" True Yan Knight guffawed. "It never rains, but it pours. You never defended yourself when those universe knights were trashing you, yet you showed everyone the footage of you killing Bark Mirror Emperor..."

Luo Feng laughed as well.

"Well, just as you expected, those universe knights were all amazed!" True Yan Knight said, excited. "I don't know about others, but those same friends who asked me to tell you to leave the mountainside have now apologized to me. They wanted me to tell you how sorry they are."

"Sorry?" Luo Feng was dazed.

"You proved yourself to have the power of a mid-tier universe knight by killing Bark Mirror Emperor," True Yan Knight exclaimed with amazement. "You're so powerful—yet you're just undying! Those universe knights want to respect you as you'll definitely be a universe overlord when you become a universe knight someday. No one wants to be your enemy."

Luo Feng nodded. When you were weak, supreme beings would look down on you. But when you were as strong as they were—or even manifested greater potential—they would apologize and try to befriend you.

"Hmm..." Luo Feng nodded. "I've received quite a few congratulatory emails in the past two days, and lots of them came from universe knights."

Universe knights like Ganwu universe master and Gui Yi Knight, who were already close with Luo Feng, had sent emails to congratulate him immediately. Some universe knights Luo Feng had never met also sent him emails and told him that they would visit him a few days later. Of course, there were some universe knights who couldn't change their attitude instantly. Those were the ones who voiced their discontent the loudest.

"Meet as many as possible and be friends with them." True Yan Knight smiled. "I'll stay here for the next couple of days. Some powerful universe knights won't take me seriously, but they value you a lot. I'll take advantage of that."

"Suit yourself." Luo Feng smirked. "It's my honor to be taken advantage of by you."

******

Luo Feng's palaces were alive with activity. Many universe knights had visited his place.

When the news that Luo Feng killed Bark Mirror Emperor was made public, it meant Luo Feng entered a new circle—the circle of

universe knights. Great beings valued each other's power. Though Luo Feng was greatly valued by his own race, the universe knights within his race wouldn't associate with him voluntarily. To them, Luo Feng was a mere talent, and he was yet to be a great being. Whereas now... Luo Feng was already a great being! And he might get even stronger in the future! It was likely that he would become a pillar of the human race in the future.

"Gu Lun Universe Country Master, Hei Bei Knight, Golden Axe Knight..." Luo Feng muttered, looking around. "So many universe knights and universe country masters! In total, 163 supreme beings have visited here in the past few days."

"Family master is so mighty." The two sector lords transmitted their voices. They were exhilarated that they could actually meet those legendary universe country masters and universe knights. These were individuals whom lots of undying fighters would never be able to lay eyes on.

******

Luo Feng, True Yan Knight, and Nine Flames Universe Master were chatting loudly.

"Hmm?" Luo Feng turned around. A flash of light was flying toward them.

Nine Flames Universe Master also turned around. "Another universe knight?"

A man in a fiery cape appeared. He wore a mystical and alluring smile.

True Yan Knight stood up. "It's Gui Yi Knight."

"Gui Yi Knight," said Nine Flames Universe Country Master, standing up and greeting him.

"Brother." Luo Feng walked out.

Gui Yi Knight was the second disciple of Primal Chaos City

Leader, and he had always served Primal Chaos City Leader. He was definitely one of the closest to Primal Chaos City Leader. His power was legendary; even a tiny portion of it could amaze many. He was the mouth and tongue of Primal Chaos City Leader who relied on him to deliver messages and execute orders!

"So lively here." Gui Yi Knight looked at Nine Flames Universe Country Master. "Nine Flames Universe Country Maser, I didn't interject on your conversation, did I?"

"Not at all. Luo Feng, True Yan, and I were just having a casual chat," Nine Flames Universe Country Master said.

Gui Yi Knight nodded and smiled. "Good. Because I have an important matter."

"Huh?" Luo Feng looked to Gui Yi Knight.

"Brother," Gui Yi Knight said. "I'm here at our teacher's request to tell you that the application for you to join the supreme council of our race has been approved, and from now on, you'll be qualified to participate in the supreme council."

"The supreme council?" Luo Feng was thrilled.

He had expected that he would be accepted once he demonstrated his power, but he was still overjoyed. Finally... He was finally admitted into the ranks of the seniors of the human race.

True Yan Knight smiled. "Congratulations, Luo Feng."

"You two, as teacher and student, got admitted into the supreme council together!" Nine Flames Knight laughed. "It'll be a wonderful story for our human race to tell."

Gui Yi Knight continued, "Brother, though you're qualified to participate in the supreme council, meetings are rarely held. Every time it is held, the council discusses matters that are vital to us humans. However, based on what I know, there will soon be a supreme council meeting. The virtual universe system should send you a notification shortly."

"Oh?" Expectations flashed in Luo Feng's eyes. "So soon?"

"Yes."

Nine Flames Universe Country Master became solemn. "Yes. There shall soon be one. Luo Feng, this supreme council meeting is all-important."

"What is it about?" Luo Feng couldn't help asking.

"It will be held very soon, and you'll learn all the details then," Nine Flames Universe Country Master said. "Of course, this is only my speculation. It may not be about any specific matter."

Luo Feng looked at Nine Flames Universe Country Master and Gui Yi Knight, perplexed. True Yan Knight was also confused.

******

Gui Yi Knight and Nine Flames Universe Country Master left without elaborating on the supreme council meeting of the human race. Luo Feng and True Yan Knight didn't ask any further questions, as the meeting would be held in the near future.

"A message from the world of glory?" said Luo Feng.

Luo Feng's consciousness left the virtual universe and connected to the world of glory, where he received quite a few messages instantly. Some of them were from the heirs in the Hong Alliance, while some were from the system of the world of glory.

"Blade River Emperor, you're an exceptional heir of the Ancestral God School," said one message. "You've proven your power with your records. And your records have attracted the attention of a beast god of the Ancestral God School! In the near future, Thunder Beast God of the Ancestral God School will arrive on Bauhinia Island in the flesh and bestow you a valuable in public."

Luo Feng was dazed by the message. Thunder Beast God would bestow him a valuable? In public?

"What happened to Zhu Chong Emperor will finally happen to

me..." Luo Feng realized. He was thrilled. "I remember that Bark Mirror Emperor wasn't conferred any true treasures, but Zhu Chong Emperor was bestowed two true treasures. One of the eight beast gods will arrive on Bauhinia Island and give me the valuable personally."

Luo Feng was both stunned and exhilarated by the news.

Chapter 1020: Weaponize

Inside Luo Feng's palace on Bauhinia Island.

Knowing that the Ancestral God School was about to publicly bestow him a valuable, Luo Feng stayed on Bauhinia Island and waited patiently.

"Thunder Beast God is going to arrive here himself and bestow you a valuable?" True Yan Knight stood up abruptly and opened his eyes wide. "You're not kidding, are you?"

"How could I kid about this, teacher?" Luo Feng said. "It'll happen soon."

True Yan Knight stroked his hair and walked around the hall. He frowned and murmured, "If one of the eight beast gods actually arrives here himself and puts up such pageantry, he's at least going to give you a true treasure! But it doesn't feel right. Though the Ancestral God School is the greatest superpower in the universe, it won't just throw away a true treasure randomly like that."

"What do you mean by 'throw away,' teacher?" Luo Feng asked, smiling. "Zhu Chong Emperor was bestowed with two true treasures. As for me... It's okay for me to get at least one, right?"

True Yan Knight shook his head. "You're not the same as Zhu Chong Emperor."

"Not the same?" said Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was dazed. He thought the power he manifested was at Zhu Chong Emperor's level. Besides, both of them were sub-members of the Ancestral God School. What was the difference?

"Zhu Chong Emperor is a special life form," said True Yan Knight. "He doesn't belong to any other power, and hence, he belongs to the Ancestral God School completely! Whereas you are firstly a member of Hong Alliance, then a sub-member of the Ancestral God School. Bark Mirror Emperor, who is admitted by

the Northern Territory Alliance, was never given any true treasures by the Ancestral God School."

Luo Feng suddenly understood.

"The Ancestral God School is the greatest power in the universe," True Yan Knight went on. "Though it doesn't fight for anything, it doesn't value the great beings of other powers as much as it does its own members. Bark Mirror Emperor is most loyal to the Northern Territory Alliance. You're most loyal to the Hong Alliance—the human race. Zhu Chong Emperor didn't join any other powers, so he is only loyal to Ancestral God School!" True Yan Knight looked at Luo Feng. "I've collected information on lots of exceptional heirs, and I found out that only those who are 100 percent loyal to the Ancestral God School can receive the best. If one belongs to another power, he won't be treated the same as those who show complete loyalty."

Luo Feng nodded. It made perfect sense.

"If pressed to choose between the Ancestral God School and the human race, there's no doubt that you'll stand with the humans," True Yan Knight said. "That's why the Ancestral God School won't grant you much, even if they want you to be part of them. However, they did invite Thunder Beast God to come personally. It would be insulting to him if he gave you a mere treasure. It's got to be a true treasure!" True Yan Knight paused, then added, "Which baffles me."

Luo Feng nodded. He would stand with the human race without a doubt! As for the Ancestral God School... He was indeed not faithful to it, even after knowing that they would bestow him a valuable. He stood in solidarity with the human race.

"For what it's worth," said True Yan Knight, looking at Luo Feng, "apparently, the Ancestral God School highly values you. In light of that, they're willing to give you a valuable even knowing that you're with the humans."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"Don't expect too much," True Yan Knight said. "Although I think it'll be a true treasure, the Ancestral God School surely won't be too generous."

"I'll just have to wait for it," Luo Feng said.

Luo Feng looked at True Yan Knight and thought that if the valuable given by the Ancestral God School was not useful to him, he would give it to Teacher True Yan.

******

Days passed, and Luo Feng continued waiting on Bauhinia Island. While he was waiting, Luo Feng familiarized himself with the valuables he got from Bark Mirror Emperor.

Inside the world ring.

"Haha! The Northern Territory Alliance paid a huge price to rope Bark Mirror Emperor."

Luo Feng's original earthling body was wearing golden armor in a bizarre shape. It was covered with weird beast engravings, which did not belong to any one of the beast gods. It was the true treasure armor...

As soon as Luo Feng put it on, the information about the armor was sent to him instantly. The true treasure armor was named Golden King Armor, and it had three forms. The first form could weaken the power of a material attack to one percent of its original power; the second form could weaken the power of a material attack to one-1,000th of its original power; the third form could weaken the power of a material attack to one-10,000th of its original power.

If the armor couldn't withstand the attack, it wouldn't be able to effectively weaken the power of the attack, and if the attacking power was too strong, it wouldn't be able to weaken it at all.

When the user was fighting a universe knight, even the third form of the armor could only weaken the attacking power by half. For universe masters, these ordinary true treasures were not useful at all. As for beings like Zuo Shan Ke, they could destroy an ordinary true treasure easily.

"Those universe masters don't care much about ordinary true treasures, but they are earnestly desired by universe knights!" Luo Feng studied the ancient armor he wore. "I'm yet to have the power to rival universe masters, so this golden armor... is invaluable." Luo Feng exclaimed with thrill, "No wonder they all want true treasures!"

He finally understood why Pei Feng Knight had only been injured when his Remote Ocean body exploded in front of him. He had relied on the true treasure armor in its pinnacle form!

I wonder which armor is better, mine or Pei Feng Knight's, Luo Feng thought. Bark Mirror Emperor was wearing this golden armor. Fortunately, I have the true treasure Star Map, and I combined the power of 520 stars, which multiplied their power. Star Map and the golden armor neutralized each other, and that was how Bark Mirror Emperor died.

Luo Feng looked in the distance and saw a gigantic beast. It was the Golden Horned Beast!

I'll have the original earthling body wear the golden armor, Luo Feng thought. And when I get the Force Armor in the future, I'll have the Golden Horned Beast wear it.

The golden armor was different from Force Armor. The golden armor only had defending power, yet the Force Armor could derive soldier armor, general armor, and king armor, which meant Force Armor had enormous godly power!

In Luo Feng's plan... His original earthling body followed the spiritual force leader path, so he only needed the golden armor. Golden Horned Beast did close-quarters combat, and hence Force

Armor could be fully utilized on the Golden Horned Beast.

Luo Feng had acquired quite a few valuables from Bark Mirror Emperor, and two of them suited Luo Feng the best. One was Golden King Armor, and the other was a set treasure called Swallowing Claws. This was comprised of four claw gloves that Bark Mirror Emperor had worn on his claws. Now, Golden Horned Beast wore the set treasure. When he utilized the set, the power of the four gloves would be transferred to one, making its power surge.

Bark Mirror Emperor had some other treasures, but they were useless to Luo Feng. The precious materials used to recover godly bodies were meaningless to Luo Feng, as he had the Remote Ocean.

******

Luo Feng waited for the arrival of Thunder Beast God while familiarizing himself with the Golden Armor and the Swallowing Claws. Eleven days after he received the email from the Ancestral God School, a terrific power arrived in the sky over Bauhinia Island. The power was so strong that it was superior to that of the guarding beast god on Bauhinia Island. The heirs flew out of their palaces.

"Thunder Beast God is arriving?" True Yan Knight said, flying out immediately.

Island Luo Feng's palace, Mosha body sat with his legs crossed, and the original earthling body was still familiarizing himself with the Golden Armor. When the power arrived, Mosha body was thrilled. The original earthling body flew out of the world ring.

"He finally came," said Luo Feng.

He took a deep breath, stepped out of the door, and flew into the sky.

******

In the sky over Bauhinia Island stood more than 100 million

heirs. Luo Feng and True Yan Knight stood side by side with each other.

Hong! Long! Long!

Bolts of lightning filled the sky and covered Five-Colored Aurora Lake.

An enormous shadow was dimming in the lightning. This figure was the source of the power.

Heng!

A loud snort was heard. Power surged, and all the heirs in the sky dove down. Even universe knight heirs couldn't resist the force. Slowly, the enormous shadow flew down and showed its true face.

He was covered with cyan hair, and each strand of hair looked like a whip of a Thunder God. His three claws seemed to step on and suppress all of space, and his partially opened wing churned the lightning above him.

His most striking features were his eyes. His eyes were like oceans! The eyes of Thunder! Nobody dared exchange eye contact with him.

"Majestic," said Luo Feng. After only a glimpse, he felt that the terrific being in the sky was like a part of universe origin law. "It's said that becoming a beast god means merging with the law, but the guarding beast god is not as powerful as this. Will becoming an actual beast god change one's foundation?"

None of the heirs could resist the power. But it wasn't because of the sheer power; it was the arrival of the universe origin law.

"I am Thunder Beast God." His sound was like thunder, resounding across the entire Bauhinia Island. "One of the eight beast gods... Heir, Blade River Emperor."

Intangible power enveloped Luo Feng, and he rose into the sky.

The heirs on the ground looked at Blade River Emperor in shock.

Now, they all understood that the arrival of Thunder Beast God was for the human, Blade River Emperor!

Chapter 1021: Turn Back Time

So, this is the control over space and time... thought Luo Feng.

He sensed that the intangible power enveloping him was neither space nor time but a force that was superior to both.

Blade River Emperor rose up gradually. At that moment, he was like the sun coming out, attracting attention from all the heirs.

Thunder Beast God looked down with his eyes of thunder. His eyes glinted with friendliness, and the power enfolding Luo Feng vanished, dazing Luo Feng. Thunder Beast God opened his mouth and started to talk.

"Blade River," Thunder Beast God said.

Luo Feng gave a salutation in the sky. "Beast God!" he said.

"Your power, your improvement, and your will all satisfy me," Thunder Beast God said. He looked down and concentrated on Luo Feng. "I'll bestow you a valuable."

Hua...

Almost all the heirs down on the ground were thrilled and couldn't help talking among themselves.

"It's indeed a public bestowal!"

"Thunder Beast God arrived here himself to bestow a valuable!"

"It has to be a true treasure. Why else would Thunder Beast God be here? Blade River Emperor is so lucky that he's going to get a true treasure again!"

The heirs were all excited, and Thunder Beast God didn't stop their discussions. He was happy to see other heirs jealous.

"What's all the fuss about?" said one heir. "If you could kill Bark Mirror Emperor as an undying fighter, the Ancestral God School would also think highly of you and bestow you with a valuable."

"Blade River Emperor is at the same level as Zhu Chong Emperor, who was given a valuable in public before."

"I'll train myself! Perhaps someday I can have the same treatment."

******

Luo Feng couldn't hear the discussions on the ground. Neither did he want to hear them. He was looking forward to the true treasure with exhilaration.

"Thank you, Beast God!" Luo Feng saluted him.

"Keep up your hard work!" Thunder Beast God's voice rumbled.

Meanwhile, a gigantic ball of lightning showed up in front of him. The ball had a diameter of tens of thousands of miles, and it flew toward Luo Feng like a meteor.

The lightning vanished as the light ball dove down. When it dropped to Luo Feng, the lightning completely disappeared, leaving only an ancient mirror with a diameter of hundreds of miles. The mirror was round and golden, emitting golden light from its surface. It stopped moving directly in front of Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at the giant mirror in front of him, perplexed.

"A mirror?" Luo Feng blinked.

"I believe it will be of good use to you," Thunder Beast God said, looking down. Each of his eyes was larger than the mirror. "Take it."

"Yes," Luo Feng answered respectfully. He stored the ancient mirror in his world ring. As for studying the valuable, Luo Feng decided to do it after the Beast God departed. After all, beast gods were of high status in the Ancestral God School.

Thunder Beast God smiled and said, "Don't disappoint me, Blade River."

Hong!

Thunder Beast God disappeared, and so did the intangible power. Everything on Bauhinia Island was back to how it had been, and all the heirs on the ground were quickly engaged in heated discussions about what had just happened. Many heirs of other races rushed to try to talk to Luo Feng.

"Congratulations, Blade River Emperor."

"Congratulations on getting another true treasure, Blade River Emperor."

Luo Feng smiled and went back to his palace immediately. He didn't want to talk to other great beings. This baffled them.

"What is that mirror-like valuable?" asked one heir as Luo Feng left.

"I don't know," replied another. "I've seen some mirror-type true treasures used to aid illusion attacks."

"Blade River Emperor is proficient in spiritual force weapons. Why would the Ancestral God School give him a valuable to aid illusion attacks?"

"Don't make random assumptions. Perhaps only Blade River Emperor knows what it is used for."

******

Hustle and bustle filled Bauhinia Island, and the news that Thunder Beast God had arrived on the island and personally bestowed Luo Feng with a valuable had quickly spread. At the same time... Northern Territory Alliance got the news.

A white-haired, four-hoofed being walked into the area and said, "Haha... The Ancestral God School has been using the same techniques since the beginning of the universe. They immediately started to draw Blade River Emperor to their side after seeing how excellent he is. Wu... Pei Feng, did Bark Mirror Emperor come here before?"

"Yes, teacher," Pei Feng Knight said as he followed him. "Bark Mirror Emperor did come here before, and he stood on the square in front of my palace."

"When?" the white-haired and four-hoofed being asked.

"Three years ago," Pei Feng Knight answered.

"Okay."

The white-haired and four-hoofed being walked slowly through the area and stopped on a square in front of a floating palace. Pei Feng Knight followed respectfully.

"Leave me first, as I'll turn back time," the white-haired and four-hoofed being said. "Don't be in my range."

"Yes." Pei Feng Knight's eyes gleamed.

Pei Feng Knight flew to a distant place like a beam of light and looked toward his teacher, full of expectations. Though he was a universe overlord, he had only witnessed universe masters performing the "Turning Back Time" technique once before. "Turning Back Time" could injure universe masters, and if a universe master was severely injured, enemies could take advantage of the chance to kill him. This was why universe masters preferred to perform it in secret, unless they trusted the witnesses completely or the chance was small that it would backfire.

Howl! Howl! Howl!

The white-haired and four-hoofed being growled and looked around calmly.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

The time in the space around him started to go backward!

It was like a movie being rewound at a rapid rate. Many heirs came here on the square, the all the great beings were flying backward—even speaking backward. Time was quickly being

turned backward. It all seemed like a strange illusion.

Sou!

Time suddenly stopped, and so did the scenes before them. Bark Mirror Emperor was talking to Pei Feng Knight in the scene when time had paused.

"That's me!" Pei Feng Knight said, looking at the paused scene from afar. It was Bark Mirror Emperor standing with him.

******

Everything was illusory in the space and time affected by "Turning Back Time." Only the white-haired and four-hoofed being was real.

"Bark Mirror Emperor," said the white-haired and four-hoofed being, looking at Bark Mirror Emperor. "Come, my child!"

The white-haired, four-hoofed being whispered, and an intangible power quickly put Bark Mirror Emperor under its protection.

"Go back."

Hong!

Everything started to be restored. It was like a coiled spring; at some point, it would spring back!

The universe was able to recover itself, and after a universe master turned back time, the universe would reverse it! Every point in time was in the past for the universe and should not exist at present. The universe would bite back if someone tried to break this rule.

"Ah! Ah!" Bark Mirror Emperor screamed. Ethereal power enveloped him continuously.

The white-haired and four-hoofed being watched calmly. He was protecting Bark Mirror Emperor and transferring the backlash of the universe to himself. He was a universe master, and thus he was

strong enough to resist such power.

"Ah! Ah—aah!" Bark Mirror Emperor uttered heart-rending cries, overcome with agony.

The universe kept biting back. The power could easily kill Bark Mirror Emperor! Reversing time and resurrection were against universe law, which would be punished by the universe. However, universe masters volunteered to bear such punishment!

After a short while, everything was back to normal, but Bark Mirror Emperor now stood on the square, looking around in confusion.

"I... What happened?" asked Bark Mirror Emperor.

"Teacher!" Pei Feng Knight said, flying toward Bark Mirror Emperor.

The white-haired and four-hoofed creature nodded and looked at Bark Mirror Emperor. "It's done," he said. "Bark Mirror Emperor, you've been resurrected. Do not forget that you have died once."

"I have... died once." Bark Mirror Emperor was dazed. Suddenly, all the memories flooded his mind. "It was him! It was him! Blade River Emperor!" Bark Mirror Emperor's eyes glinted with bitterness... and madness. He quickly noticed that something wrong. "My true treasures—where are my true treasures?"

The white-haired and four-hoofed being looked down at Bark Mirror Emperor and said, "Bark Mirror Emperor, my job was only to protect you when I reserved the time. I won't bring a true treasure back. It would cost more than obtaining ten more new true treasures. I'll only resurrect you. Those true treasures and ordinary treasures you had are all gone."

After he was done, he disappeared.

Pei Feng Knight gave a salutation. "Thank you, teacher."

Chapter 1022: Golden Thread Aurora Mirror

Bark Mirror Emperor saw the giant, white-haired, four-hoofed being leave. He couldn't help looking at Pei Feng Knight and saying, "Pei Feng Knight, why is Qi Lan Master less powerful?"

"Do you even need to ask?" Pei Feng Knight said, looking at him coldly. "You're an undying special life form with the power of a universe knight! Resurrecting you is like resurrecting a senior universe knight. My teacher reserved the time to save you, and he bore the entirety of the backlash from the universe. Fortunately, my teacher is a top-tier universe master, which is how he's able to withstand it. Such backlash power could easily kill a universe overlord, and my teacher needed to resist it all by himself. If even you can sense the change in teacher's power, teacher was severely injured and will need quite a few valuables to recover."

Bark Mirror Emperor was dazed. Actually, he had not known that universe overlords could only be revived by universe supreme masters. He only had the power of an ordinary universe knight, but he was undying! That meant reviving him was like reviving senior universe knights, and the universe bit back hard. Even universe masters were injured by it. Beings at Bark Mirror Emperor's level wouldn't easily notice it, yet he had this time, which meant Qi Lan Master's injuries were indeed serious.

Pei Feng Knight looked at him and said, "Northern Territory Alliance thinks highly of your potential, but reversing time to resurrect a great being costs a lot! The backlash power from the universe when resurrecting undying emperors is easily recoverable to universe masters, but resurrecting universe knights will take universe masters a long time to regain their health. You know the rule. This is a free revival. If you die next time, you'll bear all the costs for your resurrection, and it can't be afforded by ordinary

universe knights."

"I understand," Bark Mirror Emperor said in a low voice, clenching his teeth.

"Remember, you've died once," Pei Feng Knight said.

They were in Pei Feng Knight's palace, which was at the center of the Northern Territory Alliance, resembling the primal region of the human race. That was why Qi Lan Master had been able to resurrect Bark Mirror Emperor without concern.

"Blade River," Bark Mirror Emperor growled, grinding his teeth harder than ever.

"Just a tip," said Pei Feng Knight. His eyes glinted with disdain. "Don't even think about revenge until you become a universe knight."

Bark Mirror Emperor glanced at Pei Feng Knight fiercely.

"Blade River Emperor is as powerful as a senior universe knight," said Pei Feng Knight. "Even I was injured by him. Do not seek out Blade River Emperor for the sake of vengeance."

"What?" Bark Mirror Emperor opened his eyes wide in shock.

"Until you become a universe knight, you cannot even beat him—let alone kill him." Pei Feng Knight shook his head, took a step forward and returned to his palace.

Bark Mirror Emperor stood on the square with his face twitching.

"Blade River... Blade River!" Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his claws. His face twisted with rage.

******

While Bark Mirror Emperor privately seethed, Bauhinia Island was a tumult of activity. The heirs were still discussing the arrival of Thunder Beast God. The heirs were all speculating what valuable Blade River Emperor had gotten.

Inside Luo Feng's palace, Mosha body sat with his legs crossed. His original earthling body was already back in the world ring, testing the new valuable.

On the boundless plain was an ancient mirror with a diameter of hundreds of miles.

Luo Feng stood in front of the mirror and pointed at it. "Life Imprint, sear."

A trace of godly power flew toward it and merged with the mirror. The life imprint contained in the godly power was seared into the valuable.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The mirror quickly shrank to the size of his palm. Meanwhile, information flooded Luo Feng's mind.

"It's called Golden Thread Aurora Mirror." Luo Feng looked at the mirror with a thrill. "It's not a true treasure, but it's a top-tier treasure. Regardless, it's more precious than lots of ordinary treasures and would be the envy of any universe knight."

Luo Feng immediately understood that the Ancestral God School had bestowed him with the most suitable valuable.

There were different categories of valuables, including attacking weapons, spiritual force weapons, defense armors, escape valuables (like wings, boots, and ribbons), sealing types, origin types, flying-palace types, soul types, and domain types.

Original true treasures were used to recover godly bodies. As for surviving, flying-palace types and soul types were the most useful. Both of them could weaken material attacks or soul attacks by almost 100 percent! Sky Wolf Palace and Star Tower were both of the flying-palace type.

Another type of treasure that was the equal of flying-palace type and soul type was the domain type. Thousand Treasures River and Five-Color Aurora Lake were both domain type true treasures.

Once they were utilized, they were able to control the area they touched. Within that particular area, the users could suppress enemies who were their equals, and they could bound the enemies who were superior to them, given them the chance to flee. As for enemies who were weaker, true treasures like Thousand Treasure River and Five-Color Aurora Lake could easily kill them.

Domain type true treasures, although they were aids, were quite handy—to say the least!

"A domain type top-tier treasure," Luo Feng said. He looked at the palm-sized mirror. "Ancestral God School is indeed generous. I'll be able to control my own fate when fighting supreme beings and decide whether to battle or to flee. Golden Thread Aurora Mirror!"

Luo Feng burst into laughter. He opened his mouth, and Golden Thread Aurora Mirror shrank to the size of the head of a pin and flew into his mouth. It then merged with Luo Feng's chest and left a golden imprint.

"Drive!"

Luo Feng injected his godly power into Golden Thread Aurora Mirror.

Hong!

Golden threads suddenly emitted from Luo Feng and enveloped the area of 60 million square miles around Luo Feng. Inside the area were countless golden auroras scurrying around like fish! Luo Feng was the center of the area!

"This is my domain!" Luo Feng looked around. "Suppress!"

The golden threads gathered. It might have been able to annihilate an undying emperor easily.

"Godly power, burn!" He drove the law domain again.

Hong!

The golden light pervaded this domain, and the law domain

merged with the domain of Golden Thread Aurora Mirror.

"Haha! The Ancestral God School is so considerate," said Luo Feng. "They know that I became undying after completing gold law comprehension, so they gave me a valuable of the gold category."

Luo Feng found out that Golden Thread Aurora Mirror's power surged after gold law domain overlapped Golden Thread Aurora Domain.

"So powerful...!" Luo Feng said. He suddenly felt like he could kill an ordinary universe knight when driving the golden threads with his godly power. "With such a treasure, even if I meet with supreme beings, I can bind them first and run away. If I want to fight, I'll just let Remote Ocean body approach my enemies and self-destruct. My enemies will be trapped in Golden Thread Aurora Domain, and they'll be so suppressed that they can't even run away."

Luo Feng was overjoyed. This Golden Thread Aurora Mirror was rarer and more precious than ordinary true treasures.

Besides... to great beings, the compatibility of valuables was much more important than the quantity! Apparently, this Golden Thread Aurora Mirror could help Luo Feng's power move one step forward. It amazed Luo Feng to realize how thoughtful the Ancestral God School had been to give him this valuable.

Ancestral God School, I am first and foremost of the human race, thought Luo Feng. But I'll be grateful to you for bestowing me with this valuable.

******

After receiving the Golden Thread Aurora Mirror, Luo Feng studied it every day and tried to combine it with his other true treasures. He pondered the best way to fight.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The door of Luo Feng's palace on Bauhinia Island was fiercely

knocked on.

"Blade River, open the door! Blade River!"

Someone was shouting outside eagerly.

Luo Feng, dressed in black waved, his hand and opened the door, saying, "Come in!"

Without Luo Feng's permission, even his friends wouldn't dare trespass in his palace within range of the Five-Color Aurora Lake. Luo Feng saw Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor rushing in.

"What happened? What's got you so worried?" Luo Feng smiled. "I've never seen you guys like this in all the time we have known each other."

It was Mosha body who greeted them, and he had different auras from the original earthling body. After all, Mosha body only performed his talent technique "replicate" to replicate the aura of the original earthling body. Which was why Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor didn't notice it.

"Luo Feng," Cha Man Emperor said. "Something has happened."

"Something really bad," Li Li Emperor added.

"Blade River," said Thousand Rain Emperor, "you're in big trouble this time."

Luo Feng frowned. "What's the issue? Don't worry, just speak slowly."

"You didn't go to the world of glory, did you?" Cha Man Emperor said. "That's why you don't know yet."

"Don't know what?" Luo Feng frowned. "I've been in my palace these past few days."

He had devoted his time to joyfully studying his new Golden Thread Aurora Domain. Besides, he was waiting for the supreme council meeting of the human race. Why would he go to the world

of glory? If he did, he would just be surrounded and assailed with questions.

"Just tell me, what happened?" Luo Feng pressed them.

Li Li Emperor and Cha Man Emperor opened their mouths almost at the same time.

"I..."

"You just..."

Luo Feng couldn't help but cut in. "Li Li Emperor," he said. "tell me what happened."

Chapter 1023: The Cusp of Public Opinion

Li Li Emperor nodded solemnly and said, "Luo Feng, Bark Mirror Emperor, who was killed by you, has been revived."

"How do you guys know he was revived? He died once and didn't have an inheritance token anymore." Luo Feng smiled. "But, on second thought, he's an undying special life form, and the Northern Territory Alliance gave him a true treasure before. I already expected he would be resurrected. If you think this is the trouble I'm going to have..."

"No." Li Li Emperor shook his head.

Thousand Rain Emperor and Cha Man Emperor both looked grave.

"This is what happened," Li Li Emperor continued. "After being resurrected, Bark Mirror Emperor was asked by other heirs in the Northern Territory Alliance about how he got killed. He tried to defend himself, but what he said got you into big trouble."

Luo Feng frowned. "What did he say?"

They all looked at him.

"What did he say?" Luo Feng repeated.

"Bark Mirror Emperor said..." Li Li Emperor's voice started to tremble. "He said the reason why he was crushed by you was that his talent technique was not even able to affect you! His talent technique is soul attack, which is so powerful that it's able to intimidate many few universe knights. Even if it can't kill you, it should at least be able to affect you."

Luo Feng frowned. The reasons behind that were his Tower Pearl and his mighty willpower.

"He also mentioned that he once hunted you in Nine Remoteness Space, and he used his talent technique soul attack at the

beginning," Li Li Emperor said. "You were only a sector lord back then, but you were still able to withstand it. The heirs who talked with Bark Mirror Emperor immediately inferred that you have a soul type true treasure! And Bark Mirror Emperor admitted that."

"A soul type true treasure!" Thousand Rain Emperor couldn't help exclaiming. "Material attacks can only annihilate part of the godly body, yet one trace of a soul attack can completely bend a great being's will. It's terrific. Soul type true treasures, flying-palace type true treasures, and domain type true treasures are all ranked among the top-tier true treasures, but when it comes to survival, soul type true treasures are definitely the most precious. One soul type true treasure is more desirable than dozens of or even 100 ordinary true treasures. Even many universe overlords don't have soul type true treasures."

Luo Feng became anxious. It had been made public!

In the past, he had escaped Bark Mirror Emperor's pursuit, but he had been afraid that Bark Mirror Emperor would make his secret of soul type true treasures public. And now, his fears had been realized.

"And there's more," Li Li Emperor said.

"More?" Luo Feng said.

"Bark Mirror Emperor said that the spiritual force weapon you used to attack him was a true treasure!" said Li Li Emperor. "No great beings doubted him, as they all watched the footage. Bark Mirror Emperor also said that you killed him and got his true treasure armor and top-tier set treasure. Besides, you've obtained a valuable in the Land of Valuables, and that was one of the top 108 valuables. Plus, you were just bestowed a valuable by Thunder Beast God."

Li Li Emperor gazed at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng frowned. "What did he mean by that?"

"He also added that," Li Li Emperor said, "after being killed by you, a universe overlord in the Northern Territory Alliance tried to get the true treasure armor back, but you took the true treasure and ran away with a true treasure flying palace."

Luo Feng opened his eyes wide. "What...?"

"Pei Feng Knight rushed to the place where you killed Bark Mirror Emperor, and some supreme beings asked him what happened," Li Li Emperor continued. "Pei Feng Knight only said that he was stopped by Jiu Feng Knight and got injured, but he didn't reveal any further details. However, Pei Feng Knight and Jiu Feng Knight left through the portal at different times, and Pei Feng Knight should have had enough time to deal with you. The assumption that you have a flying-palace true treasure is not verified, but it's suspected. All in all, you've had three true treasures, and you've got two true treasures from the Ancestral God School and one from Bark Mirror Emperor."

"Which means," continued Li Li Emperor, "you must have at least six true treasures. One, presumably, is a soul type true treasure, and another is likely to be a flying-palace type true treasure. Soul type, flying-palace type, and domain type... All of them are earnestly craved by universe overlords. Each is as priceless as dozens or even 100 ordinary true treasures, yet you have two out of three of them! The news has spread through the heirs and will soon spread across the universe! Can you imagine how many supreme beings will have their eyes on you? Perhaps universe masters don't care about them, but as for universe overlords... They might set a trap to kill you at any time."

Luo Feng was ghastly pale after hearing it.

Bark Mirror Emperor...! he thought. You are vicious!

He indeed had soul type true treasures, but Bark Mirror Emperor had completely invented the story that he had flying-palace type true treasures.

Ancient Boat Galaxy and Golden Thread Aurora Mirror were indeed of the flying-palace type and domain type, respectively, but they were top-tier treasures—not true treasures! Still, they were more precious and rarer than ordinary true treasures. This proved that flying-palace type true treasures really could make great beings go crazy.

"The news is, Blade River Emperor has six true treasures, and two of them are of soul type and flying-palace type," Cha Man Emperor said. "Yet you're only at mid-tier-universe-knight level, if not senior-universe-knight level... Luo Feng, you're in big trouble this time!"

******

Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor left soon after. They gave Luo Feng some video footage before they left. It was the record of Bark Mirror Emperor's conversation with other great beings in Northern Territory Alliance.

In the footage, Bark Mirror Emperor said, "I have low law comprehension and weak techniques. I've always used my secret talent techniques to fight universe knights... He has a soul type true treasure to withstand my talent technique. What could I do about that? I could only wait to be killed."

"Did you say that he had a flying palace?"

"I was already killed, so I didn't know about it until I spoke with the universe overlord who went to rescue me."

Luo Feng glared at Bark Mirror Emperor on the footage.

"Well played, Bark Mirror Emperor... well played!" Luo Feng whispered and went to the open-air square in the world of glory.

The moment Luo Feng stepped into the open-air square, he attracted the attention of all the heirs in the square, all of whom had been talking about him. After all, they could now confirm that Luo Feng had at least six true treasures, including a soul type true

treasure. They also speculated that he had a flying-palace type treasure. All of which made the heirs jealous!

Even the universe knights were green with envy. After all, few universe knights had true treasures.

Luo Feng could even feel the disparity between him and the great beings in the Hong Alliance. Apparently, because of their jealousy and greed, their relationship with Luo Feng had changed.

Just as I expected, Luo Feng thought. He took a brief tour and then left the world of glory. Everyone knows about this! All the heirs know, and the superpowers in the universe will probably find out in no time. Is this your revenge, Bark Mirror Emperor?

******

In the secret region of the Northern Territory Alliance.

On a floating star fragment, many palaces had been built. There were tens of thousands of servants inside.

"Hahaha! This is my revenge!" said Bark Mirror Emperor. "This is my revenge on Blade River!"

Bark Mirror Emperor stayed in his practice room, and his eyes glinted with madness.

"Indeed... I'm not able to kill you myself, human! It might take me an eternity to be able to do that! Unfortunately for you, you have too many valuables for your own good! I don't need to deal with you myself. Now, there will be universe overlords who come for you! You're dead! Dead!"

Bark Mirror Emperor laughed out loud.

After he was resurrected, the Northern Territory Alliance had bestowed him with several treasures to protect himself. However, he wouldn't be granted a true treasure anymore! Plus, when he had applied for a beast god inheritance token, he had been rejected! The senior within the Northern Territory Alliance had told him

coldly, "Bark Mirror Emperor, there's no need going there now, as you can't receive higher beast god inheritance. Just wait until you become a universe knight... After that, we'll give you a beast god inheritance token. Don't even think about that before becoming a universe knight."

Bark Mirror Emperor left reluctantly, and the senior had added as he left, "A moron who only demands but never contributes..."

Bark Mirror Emperor was infuriated after hearing that! However, the senior was overwhelmingly more powerful than him. Bark Mirror Emperor resented Luo Feng full-heartedly for his misfortunes.

"It's all because of you!" Bark Mirror Emperor growled, clenching his teeth. "If you didn't have a soul type true treasure, I could've killed you in Nine Remoteness Space and gotten all your valuables. And I would still be the powerful special life form!"

Infuriated by everything that had happened to him, Bark Mirror Emperor had come up with a way to avenge himself. Given that it was almost impossible for him to kill Blade River Emperor, he would let the great beings of the universe go after Blade River Emperor instead!

******

Inside Luo Feng's palace on Bauhinia Island.

True Yan Knight went to Luo Feng immediately after hearing the news.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng!" True Yan Knight called, walking into the hall.

Luo Feng sat in the hall, drinking tea, relaxed.

"You're in big trouble now! How're you still drinking tea?" True Yan Knight asked anxiously.

"What trouble?" Luo Feng said. He took a casual sip with a smile

on his face. "Just because I have too many true treasures?"

"So you've heard the news?" True Yan Knight was astounded and sat down calmly.

"I'll deal with anyone who comes for me," Luo Feng said, drinking his tea with a smile on his face. "All the great beings of other races will only be my practice targets." He smirked. "I'll kill all of them who come for me."

"What if you can't kill them?" True Yan Knight asked.

"Then I'll flee." Luo Feng sipped his tea again and put down the teacup. "But relax, there will be fewer and fewer great beings who are able to force me to flee."

True Yan Knight could sense the unrelenting determination and confidence in Luo Feng's words! He could even sense that Luo Feng was already prepared for endless fights and slaughters!

"Beware," True Yan Knight said.

Luo Feng replied, "The path to becoming a supreme being is paved in enemies' blood and bones."

Luo Feng frowned. He had just received an email in the virtual universe telling him to attend the supreme council meeting.

True Yan Knight was startled. "The meeting is today?"

Chapter 1024: Supreme Council Meeting

Luo Feng and True Yan Knight exchanged eye contact; they had both received the email from the virtual universe system at the same time.

"I've never been to a supreme council meeting," True Yan Knight said.

"Same." Luo Feng smiled. "Let's go!"

They both connected to the virtual universe with their minds.

******

"Go to Pantheon Mountain," Luo Feng whispered in his palace.

Pantheon Sanctuary on Pantheon Mountain was where the supreme council meeting was held.

Since the supreme council meeting was being held today, Pantheon Mountain would open automatically when the virtual universe system sent the notifications through email. It was, however, normally closed.

Clouds surrounded the mountains. One great being showed up after another, including Luo Feng and True Yan Knight. Some universe knights greeted Luo Feng warmly when he showed up.

"Blade River."

"Luo Feng."

"Luo Feng."

"Nine Flames, Thunder." Luo Feng greeted them one by one. He was close with quite a few human universe knights.

"Luo Feng, Bark Mirror Emperor has brought you lots of trouble after being revived," a winged man said with a smile. "A soul type true treasure and a flying palace type true treasure... Perhaps they will attract lots of universe overlords of other races. You need to be

careful in the future."

Luo Feng said, "It is indeed a bit tricky, but if those other races want to kill me, they need to decide whether they're powerful enough to do that or not. They'll stay away unless they want to be killed by me."

The winged man held the wineglass. "It's a wonder you're able to remain calm even under such circumstances. It's clear to see where Blade River gets his reputation!"

"Stop making fun of me, Bloody Wing." Luo Feng smiled and shook his head.

Although Luo Feng had met quite a few universe knights, most of them were only acquaintances. Only a few of them were his actual friends. Bloody Wing Knight was one of them! Bloody Wing Knight was known for his aloofness, but Luo Feng and Bloody Wing Knight enjoyed each other's company.

"To be honest," Bloody Wing Knight said, lowering his voice, "the news revealed by Bark Mirror Emperor was indeed surprising. If I belonged to the other races, I would try to attack you."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"Look around!" Bloody Wing Knight said.

Luo Feng glanced around and saw more than 1,000 universe knights nearby, and there were more in the distance. Some of those he didn't know looked at him significantly—as if they had been talking about him. However, Luo Feng couldn't hear the others' conversations, just as the others couldn't hear his conversation with Bloody Wing Knight.

"I bet many universe knights are talking about you," Bloody Wing Knight said. "Especially those you don't know. Many of them are jealous of you."

"Jealous?" Luo Feng was surprised.

"There are two groups of beings on Pantheon Mountain," Bloody Wing Knight explained. "One is here, and those who gather here are four-starred, five-starred and six-starred great beings. They have the power of 'elementary universe knights,' 'secondary universe knights,' and 'senior universe knights,' respectively. The other place is where the seven-starred overlords and universe masters gather."

Luo Feng nodded. Indeed, he didn't see any universe overlord around him.

"The most powerful ones gathering here are at my level, senior universe knights," Bloody Wing Knight continued. "Few senior universe knights have a true treasure, whereas secondary universe knights and elementary universe knights don't have any. Usually, universe overlords have several true treasures. As for you, Luo Feng... You're indeed exceptional, but you still can't compare with universe overlords! Yet you have six true treasures! And two of them are soul type and flying palace type. That's excessive even for universe overlords. How could the universe knights here not be jealous of you?" Bloody Wing Knight smiled. "Even I am a bit jealous."

Luo Feng laughed.

"Of course, they're humans, so nobody will attack you," Bloody Wing Knight said. "However, those universe knights who don't know you might try to exclude you out of jealousy."

"Exclude me?" Luo Feng whispered.

"Because they're bitter," Bloody Wing Knight said.

"Then I'll convince them with my power," Luo Feng said. "If I can rival universe overlords or even surpass universe overlords in the future, they'll have to respect me."

"Then you need to become a universe knight." Bloody Wing Knight smiled.

Luo Feng gazed into the distance.

******

The great beings from the Huge Axe Dojo, the Universe First Bank, the Universe Star River Bank, and the Universe Mercenary Alliance were all talking about this issue with their friends.

"At least six true treasures!"

"Luo Feng didn't have the valuable or the treasure bestowed by Thunder Beast God when he was being hunted by Bark Mirror Emperor in Nine Remoteness Space! However, he already had three true treasures. In particular, that soul type true treasure... He was only a sector lord back then. How was he able to obtain a true treasure? It had to be given to him by a great being!"

"Yes, Primal Chaos City Leader favors him too much!"

"How could he just give a soul type true treasure to a sector lord? We universe knights don't even have ordinary true treasures, whereas he could get a soul type true treasure as only a sector lord."

The more they talked about it, the more unfair they thought it was! Why...? Why would a sector lord be qualified to have three true treasures? Especially a soul type true treasure! Lots of universe overlords within the human race didn't have soul type true treasures!

Even if Primal Chaos City Leader had treasures, he shouldn't have just given them all away! It couldn't convince anyone!

Although they were upset, none of them dared to talk about it with Primal Chaos City Leader. After all, he was the supreme leader of the Virtual Universe Company! They were not entitled to pick a fight with him.

******

Time passed, and more and more universe knights gathered on

Pantheon Mountain. The supreme council meeting was about to be held.

"Luo Feng." True Yan Knight walked towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng turned around. "Teacher."

True Yan Knight blocked the sound around them and said, "It seems that lots of universe knights are upset about you obtaining three true treasures when you were only a sector lord, especially the soul type true treasure... Many of them think that Primal Chaos City Leader has been unfair. Do you think you ought to go to Primal Chaos City Leader and tell him about this?"

"Three true treasures when I was a sector lord? Unfair?" Luo Feng didn't even know how to react.

Primal Chaos City Leader had only given him one true treasure: Shi Wu Wing! Both Star Map and Tower Pearl had been given to him by Zuo Shan Ke. Especially the soul type true treasure Tower Pearl—it was a vital component of Star Tower, the center of the sealed space. It had nothing to the human race.

"Well..." Luo Feng hesitated.

He didn't know what to say. Surely he couldn't say that it was given to him by Zuo Shan Ke.

"I'll think of something," Luo Feng said, shaking his head. "It doesn't matter that they're talking about this. I can't expect to be close with all the great beings. Some of them are my friends, some of them are jealous, and some of them are my foes! It doesn't matter."

"It doesn't matter to you," True Yan Knight said. "However, it will affect Primal Chaos City Leader's reputation."

"Even if Primal Chaos City Leader did bestow me a valuable," said Luo Feng, "he gave me his own valuables instead of using the shared resources of the human race. He can do whatever he wants with them. Just let the others be jealous." Luo Feng smirked.

"Besides, Primal Chaos City Leader earned his status by his invincible power."

Primal Chaos City Leader was invincible in the primal universe! With this advantage... no matter how biased people thought he was, nothing could sway his status.

The issue was that Primal Chaos City Leader had been fair and just. Reckless universe masters didn't draw any complaints—even when they did something preposterous—but many great beings would be upset if they thought Primal Chaos City Leader was biased.

******

More and more great beings gathered on Pantheon Mountain.

Hong!

All the universe knights looked up and saw two golden doors open gradually. There were stars on the doors, and the location of the meeting was in the floating palace on Pantheon Mountain known as Pantheon Sanctuary.

A voice resounded down the mountain. "Human great beings, gather!"

Hu!

All the universe knights on Pantheon Mountain disappeared and were transported to Pantheon Sanctuary.

"Hong! Long! Long!

The doors closed.

******

Inside Pantheon Sanctuary stood a gigantic round table with exquisite sculptures on it. Luo Feng could only see a portion of the table while the other part was blurry, as if it were surrounded by mist.

Luo Feng sat on one of the thrones surrounding the round table.

"Huh?" Luo Feng touched the arms of the chair and turned around. He saw the words "Blade River" etched on the chair. He looked around. "So many universe knights..."

There were many universe knights sitting at the bottom, and they were all elementary universe knights. They had the smallest thrones, and each was around six feet wide! The thrones of secondary universe knights were around 30 feet wide. Those of senior universe knights were around 160 feet wide.

Luo Feng sat on a 30-foot-wide one. He was only able to see elementary universe knights, secondary universe knights, and senior universe knights. As for universe overlords and universe masters, he couldn't see them at all.

Luo Feng stroked the throne and exclaimed, "The throne fits my godly body perfectly!" His hands fit on the chair's arms precisely.

Chapter 1025: The Original Star

Densely surrounding the gigantic, round table, the numerous thrones were divided into five different classes: six feet wide, 30 feet wide, 160 feet wide, 650 feet wide, and 3,200 feet wide. All the great beings had thrones that fit their godly bodies perfectly. Among them, some universe overlords, like the Heaven Erosion Palace Lord, Jiu Feng Knight, and Undying Knight, were seated on the 650-foot-wide thrones.

And at the top... on towering thrones way high up, many universe masters were seated at the highest tier where they looked down at all the other human great beings. They were super beings from the five forces of the human race.

All of the towering, 3,200-foot-wide thrones were made of dazzling gold except the two towering ones right in the middle, which were black and emanated an air of power. One of the two black thrones had a faint sculpture of a huge axe. Seated on this throne was a giant with thick fingers and messy, long hair that made him look like a barbarian. The black throne next to him was empty. No one occupied that seat. The other golden thrones were filled by towering figures.

"Primal Chaos City Leader," the barbaric giant said, looking to the golden throne on his left where Primal Chaos City Leader sat. He said with a smile, "You are very biased towards Luo Feng. This appears to have brought about much discontent from many universe knights. They are discontented, and I am not surprised. A soul type true treasure! Primal Chaos City Leader, your disciple, Gui Yi... he also has power that matches a universe overlord, and he always stays by your side, yet he does not seem to own a soul type true treasure. He hasn't gotten one, and Luo Feng received one way back when he was merely a sector lord... I'm afraid Gui Yi Knight would somehow find it unfair."

"Discontented my foot!" someone shouted.

All at once, voices could be heard from the dozens of thrones that were enshrouded by a foggy mist.

A soul-piercing cold permeated the air. "To bestow them with valuables is showing them kindness! Not giving them any valuable is just a matter of due course. Want a true treasure? They can fight with each other! Primal Chaos City Leader can choose to bestow a soul type true treasure to whomever he decides. No one else has the right to say anything more."

"If you ask me, I think we should mete out punishment to one as a deterrent to the rest. The one who rejoices the most ought to be put behind bars in the prison of the primal universe."

"That is too much. We should never subject ourselves to the discussions of the knights down there. They did not rob nor kill. They have done nothing to deserve being sent to prison."

"Everyone!" said Primal Chaos City Leader. Seated on his golden throne, he flashed a smile. "I may be extremely fond of this disciple, but the way I work is clear to everyone. I would never bestow upon Luo Feng a soul type true treasure when he was a mere sector lord."

The other universe masters, including the giant on the black throne, looked over.

It was true. Primal Chaos City Leader was known for being a most impartial and authoritative leader. After all, to attain such a great existence as that of a universe master truly required one to have the patience to manage all matters and to plan and make arrangements for unexpected events of the race.

There were many universe masters who simply could not be bothered with such matters. However, Primal Chaos City Leader had the patience! And he had always been much respected.

"When Luo Feng was a sector lord, he had three true treasures," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "Only the Shi Wu Wings were

bestowed by me. The other two... came from my disciple's miraculous encounters in which Lady Luck smiled upon him."

"Ah?"

"He got the true treasures by himself?"

"Those true treasures are not common; they are not easily obtainable, even if one meets with miracles. They are usually left behind by super beings on purpose, for their successors."

"We should not be bothered about which super beings... Anyway, it is a good thing when these true treasures fall into the hands of us humans."

"Hahaha! Correct! Regardless of who left the treasures behind for their successors, they belong to Luo Feng... No matter what, priority should always be given to the human. Thereafter, we can look into the roots of these true treasures."

"No wonder... I was not convinced when I heard that Primal Chaos City Leader bestowed three true treasures on Luo Feng. Primal Chaos City Leader is not one of such a character. Now I see why this situation made no sense to me."

The words echoed from the dozens of thrones, everyone trying to be heard at once.

"The other knights are waiting, so let us commence the meeting," said the barbaric giant sitting on the black throne with a faint sculpture of an axe. He looked to his left and said to Primal Chaos City Leader, "Primal Chaos City Leader, you should chair the meeting."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded.

******

On the thousands of thrones crowded together, Luo Feng conversed with the other universe knights next to him and soon discovered some basic information.

The thrones in the Pantheon Sanctuary were divided into five classes. One would only be able to see the great beings who were a class higher than oneself. As for conversing... one could initiate a conversation with someone from the same class or someone from a lower class. Therefore, Luo Feng could only converse with four-starred great beings (elementary universe knights) and five-starred universe knights (secondary universe knights). As for elementary universe knights from the lower class, they were only able to converse with other elementary universe knights.

"Everyone!" a kind and powerful voice announced.

Pantheon Sanctuary fell into silence within an instant. The moment Luo Feng heard the voice, he knew it was his teacher, Primal Chaos City Leader.

"A supreme council meeting is convened every time a vital matter major enough to affect the entire race occurs," Primal Chaos City Leader's powerful voice resounded throughout Pantheon Sanctuary. No one dared interrupt. "This time, the supreme council meeting is convened because... the Original Star is about to open."

Almost all the universe knights registered shocked expressions.

"The Original Star is about to open?" a few of them murmured.

"The Original Star is the center of our vast universe—the territory that billions of races fight for," continued Primal Chaos City Leader. "This opening will not be an exception. If you want to obtain a true treasure, if you want to make a big contribution to your race, your opportunity is here! Here's some detailed information. Let's all take a look first."

Directly in front of the densely populated thrones where many great beings were seated, a screen showed up. A set of detailed descriptions appeared on the screen.

Luo Feng fixed his attention on the screen before him. The very

center of the entire universe was none other than the Land of Origin, yet for countless years—except for the conscious mind's occasional arrival in the Land of Origin—no other great being was able to reach the Land of Origin in person. It was as though the place was imaginary, yet the Original Star truly existed.

Altogether, there were 10,081 of them! According to the information handed out since the birth of the universe, these 10,081 original stars revolved around the Land of Origin. It was said to be located closest place to the Land of Origin in the entire universe.

These 10,081 original stars were full of valuables but also fraught with danger. There were 10,081 paths leading to the original stars, yet those thousands of paths were usually closed. But, after a long period of time, the way would open once. Every time, the way to the Original Star would be kept open for 1,000 eras. After 1,000 eras, the star would shut... All great beings who had entered needed to make their way out before it shut, or else they would be killed! Utilizing a clone or another body was not good enough—many of these survival techniques had proven futile. If one did not leave the Original Star when the path was shut, death was inevitable. No exceptions whatsoever!

This was the most mysterious place in the universe. No other place could compare to it.

Not only were there treasures to be found in those 10,081 stars, but true treasures also appeared frequently. Super-beings of the billions of races on the universe had engaged in epic battles for such treasures. Each race fought to claim these valuables as their own! Every time a star opened, it meant there would be universe masters being killed from within.

It was all very bloody and cruel, yet the potential for these treasures drove countless great beings crazy for the opportunity! Such was the nature of the Original Star—the place that was closest to the Land of Origin of the universe.

"Contribution, eh?" muttered Luo Feng as he looked to the bottom for another set of descriptions.

The valuables obtained from the original stars, if obtained alone, could be kept as one's own. If you had no need for the valuable you obtained, you could offer it to the race in exchange for a "Contribution."

The way races grew more powerful was dependent on the Contributions offered by numerous great beings. In this case, a Contribution could be used to exchange for other valuables.

Luo Feng looked through the sets of information. One was related to information on the Original Star, the other was related to the detailed elaboration of Contributions. It was obvious that only newcomers like Luo Feng and True Yan Knight, who were attending the supreme council for the first time, would receive this second set of information containing detailed elaboration on "Contributions." This description read:

"Within the race, there are two kinds of humans. The first kind consists of those who enjoy the resources. The second kind is made up of those who contribute these resources. Ordinary humans and undying spirits are the ones who enjoy the resources. For instance, ordinary humans can enjoy peace and stability, while undying spirits who showed outstanding performance can receive the guidance and advice of supreme beings—or even have valuables bestowed upon them. They are the ones who enjoy the resources! Once one crosses over to become a universe great being, they are admitted to the supreme council. That would mean... you have become a core member of the human race."

"The human race requires the contribution of true great beings like yourself. Only through your contributions can there be billions of humans, generations of geniuses and immeasurable amounts of resources to use."

"All of you risk your lives to fight for valuable resources to offer

your race. All of these will be officially recorded as 'Contributions.' You can make use of these Contributions in exchange for all the valuable resources you need."

"Blade River Emperor Luo Feng, when you joined the supreme council, you abandoned your previous status as a 'talent' and will now be entitled to a generous quota of resources. From this moment on, you are one of the supreme beings among us humans. You are perfectly capable enough to contribute greatly to our human race, and can make use of your Contributions to exchange for the resources and valuables you need."

******

"Contributions?" Luo Feng said softly.

Of course, he thought. In everyone in a race of beings wanted only to receive benefits—if everyone expected the race to bestow resources to them—then who would be contributing?

Luo Feng understood now. It was the equivalent of a tribal community. The men were expected to head out and hunt for food while the women would plant crops for harvesting, and the children would enjoy the fruits of the adults' labor. Within a race, the supreme beings contributed so that the talents, the weaker ones, and the ordinary humans, could enjoy the resources.

Only after you cross over to become one of the universe great beings can you start to contribute to the race! realized Luo Feng.

"Very well," Luo Feng said softly. "This is quite good, actually, as it is meaningless to always be taking advantage... The Original Star?" His eyes were sparkling. "The universe is simply amazing. Prior to this, I was unaware of such a place. 10,081 original stars. The mysterious place that is closest to the Land of Origin of the universe."

While all the supreme beings of the human race at the supreme council were still in shock, Primal Chaos City Leader finally spoke

again.

"The opening of the Original Star is still a whole ten years away," he said. "In the coming decade, everyone should start preparing. For instance, you could form small teams with a few other great beings, where your skills complement one another. Or you could borrow valuables from great beings who are unwilling to enter the Original Star... All preparations must be done within the decade. Ten years from now, we humans shall enter the Original Star."

Chapter 1026: Great Beings Come

"In ten years, us humans will enter the Original Star!" The supreme council meeting ended after the calm voice from Primal Chaos City Leader.

Hong! Long! Long!

The door of Pantheon Sanctuary opened, and almost all the universe knights stood up.

"So soon?" Luo Feng and True Yan Knight also stood along with the others. The universe knights all walked to the golden door of the sanctuary, chatting and laughing. They stepped through the door and disappeared.

"What're you guys waiting for?" Bloody Wing Knight walked towards them.

"How short the meeting was!" Luo Feng smiled.

Bloody Wing Knight explained, "I was also surprised at that the first time I attended the supreme council meeting. However, I grew to understand later that it takes a long time for an issue to come up that actually affects us humans! Besides, more than half of the supreme council meetings involve no discussions, and only universe masters need to know! Only those that require voting take a long time. After all, those superior universe masters don't have time to elaborate on the issue for us."

Luo Feng nodded. It was indeed efficient. Primal Chaos City Leader hadn't talked much. Instead, he had only mentioned the Original Star. Then the screens showed up in front of the universe knights, which gave a detailed description.

"Let's go," Bloody Wing Knight said.

"Okay."

Luo Feng, True Yan Knight, and Bloody Wing Knight stepped

into the golden door side by side. Nearby, some universe knights were talking quietly.

"Look, it's Blade River Emperor."

"Rumor has it that Blade River Emperor has at least six true treasures."

"Though he was able to kill Bark Mirror Emperor and thus is ranked among the exceptional undying fighters, he is, at most, a secondary universe knight power-wise. He'll become the perfect target for supreme beings of other races on the Original Star."

"Yes! He has at least six true treasures, and two of them are of the soul type and the flying-palace type... He'd just be a moving treasury on the Original Star! There are always supreme beings from billions of races on the original stars. The universe masters of other races will probably attack Blade River Emperor on sight."

"Universe overlords and universe masters of other races will definitely attack him."

"What are you thinking? The weaker universe knights never choose to go when the original stars are open. Blade River Emperor is not stupid. Those other races can't do anything about him as long as he doesn't go."

They also stepped into the golden door and disappeared.

******

On the mountainside of Thunder Island.

Luo Feng, Bloody Wing Knight, and True Yan Knight sat together and talking about the original star... To be precise, it was Bloody Wing Knight who did the talking while Luo Feng and True Yan Knight listened to him carefully.

"There are 10,081 original stars, and each of them is full of valuables," Bloody Knight said. "Many superpowers in the universe gather there often. Those treasures or ordinary true treasures

won't result in any significant fighting, whereas there will surely be horrifying battles for some precious true treasures—like those of the flying-palace type, domain type, and soul type, or even senior true treasures or top-tier true treasures. The more precious the true treasures are, the more attention will be drawn, and universe masters will fight to the death for them. Every time an original star opens, universe masters get killed!"

Luo Feng couldn't help but interject. "Many universe masters have survival techniques like clone techniques. Those without clone techniques won't go to the original stars in the first place, right?"

"This is where you're wrong." Bloody Wing Knight shook his head. "There are only a few universe masters. A race is qualified to be a powerful race as long as there's one universe master among them! Even we humans, one of the pinnacle races, count just a few universe masters among our ranks. Few universe masters fear death. Although they're careful, the opening of original stars is a great chance for them to get top-tier true treasures, and they'll strive not to miss such an opportunity. If they can get some top-tier true treasures and even pinnacle true treasures, they can roam the universe with few enemies."

Luo Feng nodded. He understood how useful true treasures were. For instance, Thousand Treasures River gave Primal Chaos City Leader significant power, and he had been able to easily overpower Master of Sky Wolf, even with Sky Wolf Palace.

The Purple Knight was one of the 72 deified generals, and he was much stronger than candidate deified generals like Pei Feng Knight and Jiu Feng Knight. He actually had the power of a universe master! Yet Master of Sky Wolf had been able to easily suppress him with his Sky Wolf Palace.

"I've been there once, and I almost got killed," said Bloody Wing Knight.

But just when Bloody Wing Knight was describing his experience on the Original Star, a shadow flew toward them.

"Luo Feng!"

Luo Feng turned around. Nine Blade Knight? he thought.

Luo Feng was dazed. After becoming undying, many universe knights had traveled to congratulate him, but Nine Blade River hadn't been one of them. Luo Feng knew that he was supposed to be beneath him, which was probably why Nine Blade River was reluctant to do so. His pride was too great.

"Nine Blade Knight," Luo Feng greeted him, smiling.

"Luo Feng." Nine Blade River also had a warm smile on his face. He glanced at True Yan Knight and Bloody Wing Knight beside him and added, "And I see you two are also here."

"Hahaha! Nine Blade... Are you here to borrow a true treasure?" Bloody Wing Knight said.

Nine Blade Knight froze a bit. Indeed, he was here to borrow a true treasure. After all, among the humans, only senior universe knights or universe overlords had true treasures. However, these supreme beings would normally go to the original stars. Few who had true treasures chose not to go. By all accounts, it was likely that Luo Feng would choose not to go, despite the fact that had at least six true treasures.

There are no grudges between Luo Feng and me, he thought. Instead, we've known each other for a long time. I can easily become friends with him if I show him some respect. Besides, if I have a true treasure, I have a much higher chance of getting valuables on the Original Star. I just need to show some respect.

Thus, after some consideration, Nine Blade Knight had made the decision to come to Luo Feng. Power was the only thing that mattered on the path to becoming a great being. Other great beings would respect you only if you were strong!

"Luo Feng, I'm indeed here to borrow a true treasure from you," admitted Nine Blade Knight. "I'm good at close combat, so I want to borrow your true treasure armor." He knew that it was impossible for him to borrow the soul type true treasure.

"Borrow a true treasure?" Luo Feng was dazed.

"I realize it might sound a bit ridiculous." Nine Blade Knight smiled. "I'll return you the armor the moment I leave the Original Star, and I'll give you ten treasures to show my gratitude. We can ask the virtual universe to verify the lending and sign a contract. If I don't return it to you, it would be as good as betraying my race."

Luo Feng hesitated a bit. Would it be a bit disgraceful if he just said no?

"Nine Blade Knight," Luo Feng said. "I... I'm sorry, but..."

Nine Blade Knight immediately understood that he had failed, but he persisted. "Luo Feng, the Original Star will be open for 1,000 eras, and I can get out of there at any time. Once I get a valuable, I'll leave immediately. I might just stay there for hundreds of, if not 1,000 years."

"It's not that I don't want to lend it to you," Luo Feng said, "but I actually plan to go to the Original Star myself."

Nine Blade Knight didn't know what to say.

Since Luo Feng wanted to go to the Original Star himself, he surely wanted to be as powerful as possible.

"Haha! Well then!" Bloody Wing Knight laughed. "Nine Blade, I was actually here to borrow a true treasure from Luo Feng as well, but I didn't expect you to have the same idea... Now that I know Luo Feng wants to go to the Original Star, however, I needn't ask anymore. I must thank you, Nine Blade."

Nine Blade Knight smiled as well. He thanked Bloody Wing Knight secretly; his words had eased the awkwardness of the situation.

******

Nine Blade Knight left soon, but after only a short while, another great being arrived to borrow true treasures...

"Second brother," Luo Feng greeted him.

A bold man in a fiery cape flew towards him. It was Gui Yi Knight. He had been with Primal Chaos City Leader until now.

"Luo Feng, I think you've already figured out why I'm here." Gui Yi Knight stepped on the ground and looked at Luo Feng. "I'm here because I want to borrow that soul type true treasure from you. I speculate that you're not going to the Original Star, and that's why I'm here! After getting out of the Original Star, I'll return the soul type true treasure immediately and compensate you with three true treasures."

Three true treasures? Luo Feng was shocked. Many universe overlords didn't have that many true treasures. Pei Feng Knight, for instance, only had four. Gui Yi Knight spent a lot of time around Primal Chaos City Leader, Perhaps that was how he got more true treasures. Still, three true treasures was an exceedingly generous offer.

"Second brother," Luo Feng said. "Your offer is indeed tempting, but the thing is, I want to go to the Original Star myself."

"Luo Feng," Gui Yi Knight said, startled, "you also want to go?

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes."

"Don't you know how dangerous it is there?" Gui Yi Knight said. "Ordinary universe knights are unlikely to attain any true treasures. Even if you were a universe overlord, you wouldn't be able to get three true treasures if you didn't have enough to protect yourself."

Luo Feng understood his logic. Gui Yi Knight was implying that it was a better deal for him to get three true treasures for lending him one soul type true treasure, since even many universe

overlords weren't able to get three ordinary true treasures. Luo Feng felt conflicted...

Second brother, he thought, you don't know that my soul type true treasure is Tower Pearl and that it already recognizes me as its master. Universe knights would certainly be killed if they tried to merge it with their souls.

"I'd still like to take my chances there," Luo Feng said.

"Okay," Gui Yi Knight said. He nodded and smiled. "Then I'll leave first. Looks like I'll need to find another way to borrow true treasures."

Chapter 1027: Going to the Yan Shen Race

Luo Feng watched the departing Gui Yi Knight and felt a little regret. He simply could not comply this time, and while things might not seem any different on the outside, there was bound to be a knot formed in their hearts.

"What a pity," Luo Feng said quietly. "My soul type true treasure, Tower Pearl, is one of the treasures from the Star Tower and already recognizes me as its master. Universe knights who try to merge with it will die! If it was an ordinary soul type true treasure, temporarily loaning it to Gui Yi Knight wouldn't be a big deal. Anyway, the Original Star opens for 1,000 eras. I can also wait for a few hundred eras. My power is bound to get much stronger. Who knows? I might even become a universe knight."

"Luo Feng." Bloody Wing Knight walked over. "I think, you should lend it to Gui Yi Knight. Gui Yi Knight is of a different status. It is not easy for him to make such a request."

"Haha! That goes without saying." Luo Feng laughed and shook his head.

It wasn't because he did not want to him lend the treasure. He couldn't.

"It's up to you," Bloody Wing Knight said good-naturedly. "You are quite ambitious."

"Well, I would like to give it a shot," Luo Feng replied.

Indeed, Luo Feng wanted to experience what it was like on the mysterious Original Star. But he knew his power still did not make the grade.

******

Time flew by, and many universe knights approached Luo Feng, wanting to borrow his true treasures. Naturally, most great beings would think that Luo Feng would not want to enter the Original

Star. Yet, they all were met with rejection.

Of those who approached Luo Feng, some were friends, some were close acquaintances, and others were complete strangers.

******

News of how the earliest batch of universe knights was rejected when they went to Luo Feng to borrow his true treasures spread fast. Almost all the universe knights came to learn of it. Blade River Emperor Luo Feng actually wanted to venture into the Original Star, and anyone who wanted to borrow his true treasures could banish all thoughts of it. Conversations on the topic were common.

"Luo Feng wants to enter the original star?"

"He is merely an undying fighter. Although he is said to be impressive, he is still just a secondary universe knight... Yet he owns so many true treasures. In the Original Star, he will be a walking treasury! Any supreme beings from the other races will attack him as soon as they meet him. Isn't he courting his doom?"

"If he wants to die, what do you care?"

"Going into the Original Star at that level is purely suicidal!"

"Let's see what his end shall be when he enters the Original Star."

"It is okay for him to die. But if he dies, the true treasures will land in the hands of the other races. That will be a loss for our entire race—a most egregious sin!"

"Fret not. He will not die so easily. Primal Chaos City Leader values him a lot. He will help him. Who knows? Primal Chaos City Leader may even arrange for two other universe overlords to form a team with him..."

There was indeed quite a crowd of universe knights who either found Luo Feng's very presence an eyesore or were jealous of him. These universe knights were always fighting hard to obtain

valuables to offer their race so they could earn Contributions in exchange for valuables and resources they needed for themselves. Yet, as a sector lord, Luo Feng could obtain soul type true treasures... Of course, this would cause the other universe knights to develop a great deal of resentment, discontent, and even hostility toward him.

Many universe knights were just waiting to watch Luo Feng make a fool of himself. He had to be kidding!

What kind of a place was the Original Star? It was a realm where universe masters and universe overlords ran rampant, where senior universe knights were commonly seen... and even senior universe knights would usually form teams to survive there. The power of any team, regardless of size, could not be belittled, so how could Luo Feng, who was only undying, overcome such odds?

Even if he was blessed with a special life form—even if he was blessed with special techniques or even the most powerful valuables—he did not stand a chance! He was "undying," which meant his fate was predetermined, and he could never create miracles on that Original Star.

******

In the virtual universe, on the mountainside of Thunder Island.

Disciple and teacher, Luo Feng and True Yan Knight, met up.

"I will not be entering that original star," said True Yan Knight. "My powers are far from adequate." There was a note of bitterness in his eyes. "I would really love to give it a shot, but I know where I stand. Luo Feng, you are my disciple, so let me give you some advice. Your powers are impressive enough, but there is no rush to enter the Original Star... Moreover, because of your eagerness, you may have estranged your relationship with two universe overlords."

Luo Feng could only laugh.

Yes, there were two universe overloads who wanted to borrow his true treasures. One was Gui Yi Knight, and the other was Bai Feng Knight. Both had wanted to borrow his soul type true treasure, but he was unable to accede to their requests, and he could not explain why.

"You are certainly my disciple," said True Yan Knight. "You even share the same temperament as me." True Yan Knight laughed while shaking his head. "However, when you enter the Original Star, you must be careful. Be amply prepared. Judging from the information we have gathered so far, it is really very dangerous in there."

Luo Feng nodded. Senior universe knights getting killed was common. In fact, it was frequently seen. Universe overlords getting killed was common enough. There were quite a handful of universe overlord deaths. Universe masters getting killed... That was possible, too.

"Teacher, I am preparing," Luo Feng said.

"Hmm," said True Yan Knight. "You did not lend the true treasures to anyone, so now, many universe knights of the human race are waiting to see you make a joke of yourself. Even your friends are not quite convinced that you are capable of such an unlikely achievement. But I am your teacher. I have watched you grow along the way. I believe in you!"

Luo Feng grinned.

"Remember, do not give them the chance to mock you," True Yan Knight said.

"Yes, teacher," Luo Feng said, nodding.

******

A moment later, Luo Feng watched the departing True Yan Knight.

"I'm afraid that, other than Teacher, not many believe that I can

accomplish this miraculous task," Luo Feng said softly. "Even I am not so confident, given my current power... If I were to run into a universe overlord, I would still need to avoid him. Trying to snatch food from a tiger's mouth is reckless; trying to vie for those true treasures is the same. Too difficult. Force Armor... Don't disappoint me."

Luo Feng was sure of his power. With his power, he could run rampant anywhere in the universe! Yet, in that Original Star, where supreme beings from billions of races gathered—that was where the truly bloody fights occurred. Among all the universe masters, universe overlords, and senior universe knights in their own small teams, he was indeed ranked at the bottom.

He could only depend on... Force Armor! The universe supreme master "Sitting Mountain Guest" left his second disciple two true treasures. One was the Yan Shen halberd, and the other was the Original Soul. For his third disciple, Luo Feng, he also left two true treasures. One was the Star Tower, the other was the Force Armor.

The Star Tower had met with some accidents while in the making, bringing about an explosive boost in its power, allowing it to reach the level of a supreme true treasure. Force Armor, Yan Shen halberd, and Original Soul, they were all true treasures that were of the same standard. Every one of them was unimaginably precious!

Sitting Mountain Guest had paid an immeasurable amount for these. They did not pale in comparison to Primal Chaos City Leader's Thousand Treasures River. However, Force Armor had been specially refined by Sitting Mountain Guest for his prospective third disciple, and it was designed and created according to his plan so that it would be customized to a high degree of compatibility with Luo Feng when he used it.

The Star Map and Shi Wu Wings are just ordinary true treasures, Luo Feng thought. Universe masters are not concerned with them, as they do not serve much use. Force Armor, however—though a

measure below the Star Tower, which is one of the supreme true treasures of the universe—still qualifies as one of the top-tier true treasures and pinnacle true treasures. It is much stronger than the Shi Wu Wings. The might of Force Armor must be quite extraordinary.

******

Yan Shen race lived in a deserted land far away from the human domain. It was an independent race that occupied a large region of the universe.

Weng!

On a desolate planet, vivid green light rays filled the surroundings. A hideous being of another undying race and a youth clad in golden armor appeared on this desolate planet.

"Not bad," said the youth in the golden armor said, flashing a smile after one look at the hideous being.

The hideous-looking being groveled in veneration repeatedly. "According to the many different races under my command, and the many tokens and locations they have left in this universe, right here... is the area closest to the Yan Shen race."

With a wave, Luo Feng summoned the hideous-looking being into his World Ring. "Setting off from here to where the Yan Shen race is, the distance is still incredibly far. Fortunately, I have the Ancient Boat Galaxy." Luo Feng flipped his hand, and an ancient boat the size of a date kernel appeared on his palm. "Larger, larger, larger!"

Luo Feng waved his hand. The ancient boat flew up into the air in an instant. At the same time, Luo Feng exerted his godly power with a gurgle. His godly power prompted a change as the ancient boat quickly grew larger while suspended in the air. In the blink of an eye, it became as big as the planet Luo Feng was on.

Luo Feng laughed. Then, with a single step, he boarded the

ancient boat.

He stood on the deck, looking at the vast starry sky...

"A top-tier treasure such as a flying palace type is so much more powerful than a universe planet ship."

Luo Feng exerted his godly power and shrank the ancient boat until it was about 3,200 feet long. After all, to keep the ancient boat at such an enormous size would have required him to use up a lot of his godly power.

Take off! Luo Feng commanded using his mind.

Sou!

The ancient boat accelerated sharply; while sweeping away, it left a silver flare across the starry sky. Almost immediately, it reached the threshold of the speed of light. Thereafter, it disappeared from the sky and entered the dark universe.

******

Within the dark universe, the Ancient Boat Galaxy was still accelerating at a crazy rate. 10 times the speed of light. 20 times the speed of light. 30 times the speed of light...

100 times the speed of light. 200 times the speed of light. 300 times the speed of light...

"Hahaha! Marvelous, marvelous." Standing before the handrails on the ship's deck, Luo Feng held on to the railing and looked out. The prow of the Ancient Boat Galaxy had naturally formed a shield that protected the ship within it.

"Compared to those biological planet ships and mechanical planet ships, this is much faster."

Luo Feng constantly increased the speed of the Ancient Boat Galaxy. Finally, at almost 800 times the speed of light, the speed ceased to increase. This was Luo Feng's limit—not the limit of the Ancient Boat Galaxy. If Luo Feng had set his godly power ablaze, he

would have increased the speed even more! And if Luo Feng's law comprehension had been better, he would have been able to increase the speed to a superior level.

"Enough," Luo Feng said to himself. "I think it should take around two months or more of flying in the dark universe to reach the Yan Shen Secret Region."

The Yan Shen race lived in a large region of the universe, and because this region was occupied and ruled by the Yan Shen race, some universe great beings often referred to it as the Yan Shen Secret Region.

******

Riding the Ancient Boat Galaxy, Luo Feng traversed the dark universe. After close to three months, the Ancient Boat Galaxy finally reduced its speed and left the dark universe.

In the vast, empty sky, Luo Feng stood on the deck of the Ancient Boat Galaxy, gripping the rail as he looked out. "I have reached... the Yan Shen Secret Region!"

Chapter 1028: Flame Emperor

Flame Emperor led the Flame God Race out of the human race and found a remote territory far away from the human territory to live and breed. After many eons, Flame God Race became much stronger, and together with Flame Emperor's invincible power, nobody dared to mess with the Flame God Race.

The territories of Flame God Race and the human race were extremely distant from each other, but the Flame God Race would often enter the outer-domain battlefield, joining other groups to fight against the humans.

"I obtained some pieces of armors before, and they're all in the garbage dump after the war." Luo Feng stood on the deck of Ancient Boat Galaxy and gazed out into space. "The Flame God Race has already detached from the human race, but they still cooperate with the bug race, the demon race, and automaton race to fight the humans. It seems there's a feud between them and the human race."

Technically, the Flame God Race had belonged to the humans before. Now that they had left the human race, there was no need for them to continue the fight. However, the information Luo Feng had obtained in the virtual universe, along with the armor pieces he had found in the dump pile, indicated that the Flame God Race was hostile toward the human race!

Flame Emperor is a universe master cultivated by master Zuo Shan Ke, thought Luo Feng, and he has two powerful true treasures: Flame God Halberd and Original Soul. He's definitely much more powerful than Master of Sky Wolf. However, even if he exited the human race, he didn't dare to go against master Zuo Shan Ke.

Sou!

Luo Feng waved his hands, and Ancient Boat Galaxy immediately

shrank to the size of a date pit and fell into his palm.

"I'll go and see this second brother of mine."

Luo Feng teleported himself toward the lair of the Flame God Race.

The Flame God Race lived on three vast continents. The smallest of the three had a diameter of over one light year, and the largest one had a diameter of more than three light years. The three of them surrounded each other. In the central space of the lands floated towering palaces, and there were endless fires around the palaces, burning black, purple, white, green and blue...

Undying warriors were walking in the hallway and on the square. Sometimes, they would look to the tallest main palace at the center with veneration. All the warriors of the Flame God Race were tall, robust, and aggressive-looking. The shorter ones were 25 feet tall, while the taller ones were over 30 feet tall. There were scales covering their skins, and each had a single horn between set between their eyebrows. Their hands and feet looked like those of earthlings' but thicker and covered in scales.

Inside the main palace, a towering being sat on the throne. It was almost 6,000 miles tall, and the air exhaled from its nose burned the space around him. His black horn seemed to pierce the sky, and he was covered in black scales. He tapped on the handrail and gazed out into space. He saw the shadow of Luo Feng flying toward him in the distance.

"Such a strong force."

"There's a guest in the secret region of my Flame God Race," the towering figure whispered.

He was a universe master... Ordinary universe knights were already able to sense faraway space ripples, but universe masters who were able to completely control space and time were able to detect all the space ripples within tens of millions of lightyears

around him! As long as he wanted, space and time were like his horns that could spread.

"Let's see who the guest is."

The towering being looked afar and saw through everything blocking his sight. A black-haired young man was flying toward him.

Hong!

The force of the towering being on the throne trembled, shaking the surrounding space.

"Third brother..." the towering being murmured. "I knew you'd come here after becoming undying. Taking True Yan as your teacher and Primal Chaos City Leader as your teacher... Third brother, why are you so connected to the human race? Have you forgotten that your homeland, Earth, was robbed by the human race? Don't you know that they treat you well because they want you to sacrifice for them?"

He shook his head. "I'm sorry. I won't allow a true treasure like 'Force Armor' to fall into human hands." The towering being smiled. "Without Master Zuo Shan Ke's order, you will never get the Force Armor."

"Master Zuo Shan Ke." Flame God felt intimidated even mentioning that name. The more powerful he got, the more he realized how remarkable Zuo Shan Ke was.

Zuo Shan Ke had given Flame Emperor the "Original Soul," the "Flame God Halberd," and "Force Armor." He left Force Armor in Flame Emperor's place only temporarily.

After becoming a universe master with three super true treasures, there was almost no one whom he needed to be afraid of! He wasn't afraid of Primal Chaos City Leader or Meng Tuo Master. Although the pinnacle beings among the universe masters were able to suppress him, they couldn't kill him! The only ones who

were capable of killing him were the universe supreme masters.

All the universe supreme masters were incredibly powerful. They were able to change laws and completely control a certain area. However, the universe law suppressed them from being too powerful, and that was why they could only manifest power slightly stronger than Primal Chaos City Leader and Meng Tuo master.

"That Gigantic Axe Founder didn't dare anger me because of his relationship with the human race," muttered Flame Emperor. "However, Master Zuo Shan Ke has all sorts of skills, and everyone who messed with him ended up being crushed." Flame Emperor's eyes gleamed coldly. "Besides, he's always been alone, and he knows all my trump cards. If we fight, I'll..."

Zuo Sha Ke was the only one in the universe that Flame Emperor feared.

"Besides, even I can't control the Force Armor completely."

Flame Emperor stroked his arms, and a transparent suit of armor appeared on top of his scales. There were intricate engravings constantly changing on it.

"Zuo Shan Ke was the best at creating true treasures. The Force Armor was created for my third brother, and thus all the other great beings aren't able to make it recognize them as their owners. Even though I'm able to do that, I can only wield a part of its power."

Like Tower Pearl... Anyone who tried would die! Although the Force Armor was not that extreme, the other great beings wouldn't utilize it at all. Even Flame Emperor was only able to partially utilize it.

"Although I'm only able to wield a portion of its power, it's still better than lots of top-tier true treasures." Flame Emperor caressed the transparent armor and looked at the shadow in the distance.

He smiled and whispered, "Third brother, if you can arrive here and get to see me, I'll follow the order from Zuo Shan Ke and hand it to you. However, the prerequisite is for you to see me, or you at least need to arrive at the dwelling place of Flame God Race!"

As long as Luo Feng didn't arrive—didn't get the chance to tell the undying fighters within Flame God Race of his intentions—then Flame Emperor could pretend to know nothing! However, if Luo Feng couldn't even make it to the land of the Flame God Race to see the seniors within the Flame God Race, Flame Emperor could pretend not to know about it.

"Hehe. You want the Force Armor now? Wait until you become a universe knight. Your power is not even strong enough to get to the land of Flame God Race."

Flame Emperor abruptly stood up, left his throne room, and walked outside of the palace. Flame Emperor knew Zuo Shan Ke's personality, as everything he did could be tolerated by Zuo Shan Ke.

"Seal!" Flame Emperor muttered.

The space ripples hundreds of light years around his centered became completely sealed.

"The space coordinates of the Flame God Race are already concealed, but I'll add some further security to that. Even if you ask Primal Chaos City Leader to help you crack it, it'll take some time."

Flame Emperor smiled and flew into the dark universe at lightspeed.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Luo Feng teleported himself continuously as he approached the land of the Flame God Race.

Almost there! Luo Feng thought.

"Huh?" Luo Feng said, suddenly stopping to look at the space in front of him. Star fragments floated before him. "The space ripples here are completely locked? Why?"

Within the Five-Color Aurora Lake, great beings are unable to teleport themselves, thought Luo Feng, and teleportation is only allowed in certain areas on Bauhinia Island. In some of the vital places of human territory, like the Primal Region, teleportation is also forbidden. Does this apply to Flame God Race also?

Universe masters were able to sculpt law engravings on some gigantic special buildings and drove them with specific crystals like Flame God Origin Crystals, by which they were able to maintain the effect of Space Seal. They could also accomplish that by using some true treasures.

"But if he did that, beings of Flame God Race also couldn't teleport themselves." Luo Feng frowned. "Did my second brother seal the space deliberately?"

Wait...!

Luo Feng sensed something going on behind him. He waved his wings, and a beam of light flashed behind him and reached the dark universe at lightspeed.

Luo Feng flew in the dark universe and arrived at the land of Flame God Race. At least, he thought he did.

"Where are the coordinates? Where are the coordinates of the lands of Flame God Race?"

Luo Feng held the locator on his left hand. The coordinates on the screen kept changing, and the coordinates at the center completely disappeared.

Luo Feng was stupefied. This was even more brilliant than the way Hu Yan Bo had hidden the coordinates in the dark universe.

"You are simply devious..." Luo Feng whispered. "You hid the coordinates in the dark universe and sealed the space! Which

means I can only fly there. Hundreds of light years... Even if I fly there at lightspeed, it'll take me hundreds of years to arrive."

Luo Feng now realized that his second brother Flame Emperor had done this on purpose. He was clearly reluctant to return the Force Armor.

However, although he hid the universe coordinates and sealed the space, he didn't come here to attack me, Luo Feng thought, It seems that he doesn't dare go against Zuo Shan Ke directly.

Chapter 1029: The Impenetrable Net between Heaven and Earth

The Yan Shen Secret Region, upon comparison, was a far cry from the Ancestral God Secret Region in regards to its level of danger. However, given the power he possessed, the Yan Shen Secret Region alone was not a threat to him in any way.

A biological planet ship was heading toward the Yan Shen Secret Region at sublight speed.

"Second brother." Luo Feng sat in the control room, holding a wine glass. "Up until today, big brother Pu Ti does not own a single real top-tier true treasure. You already have two. At the same time, you have been taking my Force Armor under your possession for as long as billions of years. This top-tier true treasure is certainly difficult to part with. Your reluctance to let go of it is completely understandable. However, being overly greedy is not good."

Luo Feng tilted his head and emptied his wine glass. Then he poured himself another glass in a carefree manner.

"The Original Star stays open for 1,000 eras. Even if I were to ride a planet ship and cruise slowly, it would only take a couple hundred years to reach your Yan Shen race's home. A couple of hundred years is merely the time taken for a meditation session."

Luo Feng was not the least bit anxious.

******

Yan Shen race had three vacant palaces surrounded by land. In the main palace, Flame Emperor's towering figure was looking far out into space, and through the layers of space that obstructed his view, he caught sight of that dark purple biological planet ship. He could even see Luo Feng drinking his wine in a casual manner inside the planet ship.

"How unbelievable. He does not know when to back off!" Flame

Emperor shook his head. "Space was sealed, and the coordinates of the dark universe were hidden... Yet you simply do not know how to stay away. Dear third brother, do you really think that your second brother would not be able to stop you if I set my mind to it? The original plan was not to offend anyone, but you were so persistent in coming here for your Force Armor. Don't blame me, then."

A trace of hostility swept across Flame Emperor's face.

******

Within the territory of the Nine Territory Alliance, there was a life planet that seemed ordinary, but this was where humans of the Mud Frog race resided.

Thousands of humans of the Mud Frog race were scattered all over this planet. In one of these communities, following the command given by a burly human of the Mud Frog race, a group of Mud Frog race took a test one after another.

"Individuals will take the test one by one in order," said the burly human. "The best performer will be able to receive one-to-one guidance from Third Elder. Upon receiving Third Elder's guidance, one can almost be considered to have become a great being and will be able to fly."

From afar, Third Elder stood with his wooden club, smiling as he oversaw everything. His single green eye of his was filled with joy. He relished the peaceful life and living together with the lowest class of this race. When he was still a weak nobody, he used to live in a simple and defenseless community like this.

"Huh?" Third Elder gripped his wooden club and frowned. "That Blade River Emperor, Luo Feng—who is a human, yet compared to a unique life form with his ability to bend Heaven's will—has actually appeared within the territory of Yan Shen race! And to have so accurately located our coordinates..."

Third Elder's single green eye showed a hint of surprise. "Unquestionably, this news was released by the Yan Shen race. Flame Emperor is a universe master. If Blade River Emperor enters his territory, will he stand back and do nothing? It is also fair to say that since Flame Emperor is one of the top-tier beings among the universe masters, this simply may not be worth his attention. Moreover, I heard that Flame Emperor used to be from the human race. This might be part of his concerns... Blade River Emperor, Luo Feng! He owns at least six true treasures... News has spread. Those who dared approach him were universe lords who were supremely confident. Senior universe knights are afraid and thus do not deserve the right to fight."

Third Elder oversaw the ongoing test. He loved life in a lowly community, and only he could understand that he was the core of the Mud Frog race—their true pillar of support. He was the greatest being of the Mud Frog race, and when it came to enhancing one's power, he was at the top of the list.

"Soul type true treasure," he muttered to himself. "I must obtain that!"

Still grasping his scepter, Third Elder remained unmoving on the same spot. His true form, however, had left the planet, leaving behind a soulless human form. As a universe overlord, he only needed an energy form to contain his consciousness. Maintaining his power to meet the level of a sector lord was child's play to him.

******

Amid one of the universe secret regions, a seemingly ordinary mountain suspended in the air suddenly opened nine gigantic eyes; these nine eyes were filled with excitement.

"Hahaha! Blade River Emperor Luo Feng has actually deviated from the human race. A soul type true treasure often seen with fighters like the bug soldiers, and every one of them are all masters of the soul type...! If I have a soul type true treasure always on

hand, nothing can go wrong. Haha...! This soul type true treasure is mine!"

Following this, the mountain vanished in the blink of an eye.

******

The moment some supreme beings of the human race got wind of this news, there were explosive reactions within minutes.

"Why did Luo Feng go to the territory of the Yan Shen race?"

"Is he tired of living?"

"Initially, I thought he would die in the Original Star. But now, it seems he finds the wait to be too long, so he headed straight into the enemy's den."

News that spread like wildfire... It started in the open-air square of the World of Glory in the Ancestral God School, which was known to be a top-tier news distribution center. It was where heirs of superpowers of the universe gathered, so it was only a matter of time before everyone got wind of this news.

Although he was unable to go to Bauhinia Island—and also could not enter the World of Glory—Bark Mirror Emperor, too, heard the news that day.

"Haha! Blade River," he gloated. "Ah, Blade River. I have always worried about how you hid among the human race, refusing to come out."

There were numerous heirs in the Northern Territory Alliance, and quite a number of them were close to him.

"Now, you have actually come out!" said Bark Mirror Emperor. "And you even made it to the territory of the Yan Shen race. Now that the Original Star is about to open, there are many universe overlords finding among themselves with a lack of true treasures, or finding that their true treasures are lacking in power. Yet you choose to make a sudden appearance here in the territory of the

Yan Shen race... You are courting your own doom, and it is not my fault."

Bark Mirror Emperor laughed heartily. This was the happiest moment for him since his resurrection from "Turning Back Time."

******

Supreme beings from various races in the universe had their circles of close friends; they all heard the news and came over to the territory of the Yan Shen race in no time.

The Yan Shen race had three vacant palaces surrounded by land. In the main palace, a blurry red light appeared. A lone figure walked through while calling out in a mildly respectful tone, "Flame Emperor!"

"Coming."

The towering figure at the palace entrance was staring into space. He smiled as he said, "Ba Feng, the reason I called you here is because of Blade River Emperor Luo Feng."

Ba Feng Knight was one of the universe overlords of the Nine Territory Alliance. The shape of his body resembled a bamboo pole while his skull was squarish. With a furry face and three eyes positioned vertically in a straight line, the moment he had his eye on someone, the other party would fall into a state of illusion. Ba Feng might have had powers that were considered average when compared to universe overlords at the same level, but when pitted against weaklings, he was excellent.

"Blade River Emperor Luo Feng?" Ba Feng Knight seemed a little uncertain. "I just heard some news. Apparently, Blade River Emperor Luo Feng has appeared here in your territory, Flame Emperor."

"Yes," Flame Emperor nodded. "Take a look."

Flame Emperor pointed into the empty space. In that split second, ripples formed within the surface, and a scene that was

hundreds of light years away appeared right before him. It was a biological planet ship in flight.

"This is Blade River Emperor Luo Feng's planet ship," Flame Emperor said with a chuckle.

"What do you mean?" Ba Feng Knight said, confused.

"As you know, I was originally from the human race," said Flame Emperor. "Dealing with this fellow... I do not want to do it myself. So you shall do it."

"I understand," Ba Feng said, nodding repeatedly.

Ba Feng Knight had lived a long life. He knew about the event years ago when Flame Emperor had betrayed his own human race. That event had been explosive news in the universe during that era.

"Do not worry, Flame Emperor," Ba Feng Knight said with confidence. "Though he has the powers of a secondary universe knight, Luo Feng is merely an undying knight. When face-to-face with me, he stands no chance. Even a senior universe knight does not scare me. He is not a cause for worry! Before me, no one can even think of escaping."

Flame Emperor merely nodded. "I know you have your ways."

Ba Feng Knight was proficient at dealing with weaklings. That was why Flame Emperor had summoned him.

"Flame Emperor, you just have to give the command, and I will take immediate action," Ba Feng Knight continued, "to kill or to capture alive at your command."

"To kill, of course!" Flame Emperor said cold-heartedly. "Why would I want a human captured alive?"

"Yes," Ba Feng Knight replied and did not dare say anything more.

"Of course, there is no rush for now." Flame Emperor shook his

head. "The news has spread, and many fighters from other races will attack him. That is why I called you here. Just in case! Should the other races lack the skills and allow Luo Feng to escape... That is when I will need your skills."

Ba Feng Knight nodded vigorously. Flame Emperor had a very high status in the Nine Territory Alliance and belonged to one of the highest tiers of existence. His status in the Alliance was definitely comparable to the status of Primal Chaos City Leader in the Hong Alliance. To handle matters under his orders, Ba Feng Knight did not dare keep a slack hand.

"Let's wait and see," Flame Emperor whispered.

"Yes," said Ba Feng Knight, standing behind the towering Flame Emperor obediently.

Flame Emperor was, however, only focused on the scene before him. He was secretly saying to himself, "Dear third brother, I trust that given how well-informed you are, you will know that I was the one who let the cat out of the bag. You still have time to escape now. If not, it will be too late. I wonder, are you going to retreat or continue to advance?

******

In the biological planet ship.

Luo Feng sat with his wine glass in his hand. His mind was still maintaining the connection with the virtual universe.

Thousand Rain Emperor was the first to contact Luo Feng through the virtual universe. His face was filled with worry.

"Blade River," he said. "Word has spread from the open-air square of the World of Glory that you, Luo Feng, have entered Flame Emperor's territory and is now advancing to where he lives. Even the universe coordinates of your location have been revealed. Now, many supreme beings of other races are rushing over. You are not really there, are you?"

Luo Feng was taken aback. "Really? The news has spread?"

"That's right," said Thousand Rain Emperor. "And the information is very detailed. I felt it must be true the moment I heard it. Luo Feng, do not hide anything from me. You are in grave danger now—extreme danger!" Thousand Rain Emperor's voice was fraught with worry.

"I got it," Luo Feng replied with a smile. "Thank you."

"Don't take things lightly!" urged Thousand Rain Emperor. "You must leave quickly, right away! Supreme beings from all corners of the universe are hurrying in your direction. If you hesitate further, I am worried that you will be hunted down in no time. By then, it will be too late to take flight." Thousand Rain Emperor was genuinely worried.

"Do not worry," Luo Feng replied. "I am very aware."

Luo Feng cut the line of communication with Thousand Rain Emperor, but following close behind it were calls from Cha Man Emperor, True Yan Knight, and even Bloody Wing Knight, who also reached out to him through the virtual universe. Clearly, they must have all heard the news and considered it a kiss of death for Luo Feng. Anyone could guess that supreme beings from all corners of the universe were bound to gather to hunt down Luo Feng!

Chapter 1030: Universe Overlords

Flame Emperor stood in the main palace with his eyes closed. He spared a portion of his mind to sense the space ripple around Luo Feng's spaceship. Any ripple would alert him.

Flame Emperor thinks too highly of that human, Ba Feng Knight thought. He's a pinnacle universe master, and he doesn't need to mind that human.

However, Ba Feng Knight still stood behind Flame Emperor quietly and respectfully.

"Hmm?" Flame Emperor suddenly opened his eyes.

Hua!

Suddenly, the biological spaceship stopped, and the golden-armored figure flew out, soaked in blurry green light.

"God Country Transportation?" Flame Emperor was startled. "Did my third brother give up and prepare to leave?"

God Country Transportation was allowed in space-sealed areas.

In the Sacrificial Tower, teleportation was not allowed, but God Country Transportation was. After all, the way they worked was different.

"This Blade River Emperor is scared," Ba Feng Knight said. "He expected many great beings of other races to arrive, so he planned to run back to the human territory with God Country Transportation. Better for him to escape with his life."

Flame Emperor whispered, grinning, "Lucky him."

"It's because of your mercy," Ba Feng Knight said. "If you attacked him and control space and time, he wouldn't even have the chance to run away."

Flame Emperor looked at the scene, smiling without saying anything.

Suddenly, Luo Feng waved his hands, and an ugly undying fighter appeared. He first groveled at Luo Feng, then stepped into the blurry green light. As for Luo Feng, instead of leaving, he went back to the biological spaceship and kept progressing forward.

"Huh? He didn't go back?" Flame Emperor frowned. "Why did he send a slave?"

Ba Feng Knight was confused as well.

"The first great being of another race has arrived." Flame Emperor said with a smile.

In another portion of space, he saw an enormous snake with a silver belly, a dark cyan back, and two wings on his back. There were nine horns on his forehead, all of which had branches that were bent. His horns wound around each other like a crown. A greenish light, mixed with dimming golden light in his eyes, gleamed coldly. He seemed to notice the gaze of Flame Emperor, so he lowered his head to show respect for Flame Emperor.

"Demon Wing Leader of the demon race," Ba Feng Knight said.

"He's an ambitious and powerful universe overlord," Flame Emperor said. Suddenly, he looked in another direction and noticed an elder of the Frog Race with a black scepter. The elder also sensed the gaze, and he bowed slightly to show respect.

"Frog the Wise," Flame Emperor whispered. "Both of them are exceptional. And the third one is coming..."

Flame Emperor looked in another direction and saw a human-like being flying toward him. There were two horns thicker than thighs on his head, and the horns wound around his godly body like braids. His blue eyes were like stars that could pierce through souls. This great being also bowed to him.

"Ma Sha Knight," Flame Emperor muttered. "He has a domain type true treasure. Against this treasure, it is the least likely that Luo Feng will escape."

Ba Feng Knight said, "Demon Wing Leader, Frog the Wise, and Ma Sha Knight are all universe-renowned supreme beings with extraordinary skills. Demon Wing Leader comes from the pinnacle race Demon Race. Frog the Wise is the leader of an entire race. And as for Ma Sha Knight, he has a domain type true treasure... It'll be difficult for Blade River Emperor to flee from any of them."

Flame Emperor smiled. "Third brother, prepare for the feast I designed for you," he said.

Hong!

Suddenly, the godly power coming out of the main palace was weakened, and the range under the space seal was reduced to 100 light years.

******

In the sector of the Flame God Secret Region, Demon Wing Leader's body slid across a floating star fragment, and he gazed into the distance.

"Blade River Emperor is supposed to be there," Demon Wing Leader said in a hoarse voice. "Blade River! All of your true treasures belong to me!"

Sou!

He teleported there.

"For my Frog race! I have to get the true treasures from Blade River Emperor," the elder of Frog Race whispered and teleported himself toward the publicized location.

"I have a domain type true treasure," said Ma Sha Knight, "and if I have a soul type true treasure and a flying-palace type true treasure... Even universe masters will find it difficult to kill me." Ma Sha Knight caressed his horns and went away.

The news Flame Emperor let out was made known to the entire universe. Because it was so well-known, ordinary universe knight

didn't dare meddle. The first three who arrived were all universe overlords!

******

The biological spaceship slowed down and stopped.

"The space seal is gone?" Luo Feng stood in the space and saw the mist permeating. "Why did my second brother stop the space seal?"

Luo Feng closed his eyes and started to feel his surroundings. His Mosha body could sense the space as well as universe knights; he inspected along the direction toward the lands of the Flame God Race and could distinctively feel that the space ripple 100 light years around him was stopped.

"Not stopped," he realized, "but shrank. No matter what you've done, you've saved me 100 years."

Luo Feng waved his hands and took back the biological spaceship. He teleported himself.

A giant snake shadow appeared.

"Teleportation ripple!" Demon Wing Leader's greenish eyes glinted with a thrill. He, Frog the Wise, and Ma Sha Knight showed up in different places and couldn't sense the other's teleportation. Besides, Demon Wing Leader was the closest to Luo Feng.

To universe knights, they were only able to sense the teleportation ripple that was 1,000 light years close to him.

"It must be him." Demon Wing Leader shook his wings and tail and teleported himself toward Luo Feng.

******

Luo Feng arrived at the periphery of the space-sealed area.

"My second brother narrowed the range?" Luo Feng stood in the space pervaded by mist and looked back. "Have those other races arrived? Whatever."

Luo Feng flew into the space-sealed area like a beam of light.

Hong!

Just as Luo Feng was flying into the space-sealed area, Demon Wing Leader showed up and saw the shadow in the distance.

"Human Blade River!" Demon Wing Leader transmitted his hoarse voice with his godly power.

Sou!

Demon Wing Leader flew forward.

******

Luo Feng kept flying in the secret region in near-lightspeed and looked back at Demon Wing Leader who was chasing him.

"You won't catch me," Luo Feng said with a glance.

"Human Blade River, you can't run away!" Demon Wing Leader roared as he chased him.

Instead of worrying about him, Luo Feng kept flying at near-lightspeed. He had already hit his fastest speed. If he reached lightspeed, he would enter the dark universe. The coordinates in the dark universe around the lands of the Flame God Race were concealed, and it would be squandering his time if he entered the dark universe.

"Law Domain!" Demon Wing Leader suddenly performed law domain, and everything for 60 million miles around him was trapped in time law domain, including Luo Feng.

Hong!

Luo Feng burned his godly power and maintained his speed.

"A simple law domain is useless," Luo Feng told Demon Wing Leader behind him.

Suddenly, two powerful ripples appeared, which shocked and terrified Luo Feng.

No...! he realized. Other hunters!

Demon Wing Leader sensed something wrong and looked back as well. Frog the Wise and Ma Sha Knight were flying toward them. They teleported themselves and arrived at the periphery of the space-sealed area, and they both went into the area and started to chase Luo Feng.

Three universe overlords were running after Luo Feng. However, none of them could teleport themselves in the space-sealed area.

"Haha! Frog and Demon Wing! This is the space-sealed area!" Ma Sha Knight guffawed. "Your law domain is only able to affect Blade River Emperor. It's not enough to trap him and kill him. It seems that I'm the lucky one after all, and the soul type true treasure belongs to me!"

"90 million Sand River Domain, build!" Ma Sha Knight's voice resounded around Demon Wing Leader and Frog the Wise.

In the enormous, spherical area were countless grains of sand, and it was indestructible. Though each grain of sand was weak, when they were combined, they could easily annihilate some universe knights.

"Damn it!" Demon Wing Leader growled. He was furious. "Ma Sha, the true treasures belong to me too!"

"Ma Sha Knight, don't be so selfish!" Frog the Wise said, glaring at Ma Sha Knight behind him.

But Ma Sha Knight was infuriated. "They're mine!" he shouted. "They belong to me! Damn frog! You dared attack me! It's useless! Your soul attack techniques can hardly affect me. I'll stop wasting my time on you two! Human Blade River, die! Your treasures are mine!"

Hong!

Under Ma Sha Knight's manipulation, each grain of the sand was glowing and dashing at Luo Feng, and their power kept

multiplying as they gathered. They formed a giant sand whirlpool and raced toward Luo Feng.

Flame Emperor watched it all from his main palace.

"Third brother," he said, "don't blame me for losing your true treasures. You're the one who wants the Force Armor."

Chapter 1031: One Strike, All Out

Flame Emperor watched what was happening hundreds of light years away, thinking that everything was under his control.

Meanwhile, Luo Feng looked at the giant sand whirlpool that surrounded him. It was hundreds of miles high, and the sand was thick and dense. Each individual grain was weak, but when numerous grains were combined, they were strong enough to make Luo Feng feel strangled.

"Mosha body," said Luo Feng, holding onto a stone in his left hand.

Hu!

The stone vanished in an instant.

Hong! Long!

The giant sand whirlpool enshrouded Luo Feng. In an instant, he was smashed to pieces. The very next instant, he was strangled to death, reduced to naught.

"Human Blade River is dead! Dead! His true treasure is mine!" Ma Sha Knight exclaimed from afar.

Ma Sha Knight was overwhelmed with excitement, anticipating what he would have when he got hold of the true treasures. It had not occurred to him that the true treasures would not be so easily obtainable. There were at least six true treasures. Did he really think that obtaining them would be such a breeze?

"Ah!" Ma Sha Knight let out a high-pitched, ferocious roar. "Where is my true treasure? The true treasures! Where are they?"

No matter how he scoured the sand, there was not a single true treasure to be found.

Sou!

In the distance, the figure of a youth in golden armor appeared.

Demon Wing Leader and Frog the Wise both looked over.

"Luo Feng! Blade River Emperor Luo Feng!"

"There he is! One moment, he was surrounded and attacked by countless grains of sand. The next moment, he is tens of thousands of miles away? Could it be teleportation? But within the confinement of sealed space, it is impossible to teleport!"

Ma Sha Knight stared at the faraway Luo Feng in disbelief. Luo Feng had not died. "Human Blade River!" he growled. "Die!"

Countless grains of sand from all around flew toward Luo Feng in a wicked flurry.

Hu!

Luo Feng vanished into thin air. Instantly, he reappeared tens of thousands of miles away.

Zoom! Zoom! Zoom! Zoom! Zoom! Zoom! Zoom! Zoom!

Luo Feng flashed about at a crazy speed. In the blink of an eye, he was already thousands of miles away.

"This is not teleportation—it is his talent technique," Frog the Wise said with a slight frown. "It is a space type talent technique, Domain...! We are in trouble."

Demon Wing Leader curled his body and spread his wings, then turned back to look at the fuming Ma Sha Knight. He sneered. "Old Frog, out of the three of us, Ma Sha Knight must be the most disappointed. Even with a domain type true treasure, Luo Feng was still able to escape... With his talent technique, Luo Feng will be able to escape from anyone below the rank of a universe master. Only a handful of universe overlords may be able to hold him back."

Frog the Wise nodded.

Domain was a technique by which one first merged with space, then transformed into a godly body. No matter how Ma Sha Knight

manipulated his true treasure to launch attacks, the moment Luo Feng merged with space, it would be easy to dodge the attacks. Of course, the situation would be different if the opponent was a universe master.

A universe master was able to fully control space and time! Everything in this space and time would be controlled. Even when merged with this space, anyone could be forcefully kicked out. However, Ma Sha Knight, Frog the Wise, and Demon Wing Leader could not achieve this.

"Damn, damn, damn it!" roared Ma Sha Knight.

Watching Luo Feng make his escape with just one technique Domain—yet being unable to do anything about it—was enough to make Ma Sha Knight feel helpless. He could only roar with fury. Frog the Wise and Demon Wing Leader watched the entire episode with amusement. Ma Sha Knight wheeled on them angrily.

"Neither of you got anything either!" Ma Sha Knight fumed. "What is there to gloat over?"

"Ma Sha Knight, you are a universe overlord, and look at what a scene you have made," Frog the Wise said, grinning. "Demon Wing Leader and I are not gloating. The three of us went after Blade River Emperor Luo Feng together, and both of us truly believed that you would be most hopeful in succeeding. We did not hold high hopes, and without expectations, we naturally would not feel disappointed. But you are different... You were so close to obtaining the true treasures, yet you did not expect Luo Feng to still have a hidden card up his sleeve? That is why a true treasure has again slipped through your fingers. This agony... Haha. We can empathize."

"Hahaha..." Demon Wing Leader let out a deep laugh. "Go," he called out. "Old Frog."

Frog the Wise nodded with a smile, then together with Demon Wing Leader, accelerated quickly and reached the speed of light

within an instant. Both entered the dark universe and left.

"Damn it! Bastard! Idiot! Aaah!" Ma Sha Knight shouted, his handsome features twisted with anger.

Although Ma Sha Knight was a high and mighty universe overlord, it did not mean he could not get angry. There were not many things that anger make beings at his level. This time, he was within reach of obtaining at least six true treasures like the soul type true treasure and flying-palace true treasure, and for everything to come to naught all of a sudden, the contrast was too agonizing and infuriating for Ma Sha Knight to bear.

"Blade River!" Ma Sha Knight gritted his teeth and let out an angry roar. Then he too entered the dark universe and left.

******

Yan Shen race had three palaces surrounded by land. In the main palace, Ba Feng Knight was careful not to utter a single word. At that moment, he knew Flame Emperor was seething with anger.

Flame Emperor stared into space with a cold look. Ripples of images appeared to show Luo Feng's advances as he relied on his talent technique Domain.

Very well, my dear third brother... I have underestimated you, Flame Emperor thought, looking at the image with indifference.

"Flame Emperor, what should we do now?" Ba Feng Knight finally spoke up after he sensed that Flame Emperor's anger had subsided.

"Do you have any way to kill him?" Flame Emperor asked, looking at Ba Feng Knight.

"If he is bent on escaping, there is no way I can stop him," Ba Feng Knight said, shaking his head. "This talent technique Domain can only be owned by some unique life forms that have excellent hiding and fleeing skills. It is said that within the Mosha race, only a handful have such power. Although these life forms do not have

outstanding fighting abilities, their survival abilities are quite strong."

"Wait," Flame Emperor said. He looked into space. "Right now, there is a continuous stream of great beings of other races making their way here. There are universe overlords, senior universe knights, and more. Who knows? There might be someone able to stop this human Blade River Emperor."

Ba Feng Knight listened obediently, but in his heart, he was confused. Is there a need for Flame Emperor to be so determined to kill this Blade River Emperor Luo Feng? If he really wanted to kill Luo Feng, he could have done the deed by himself. If he did so, he could have annihilated Blade River Emperor Luo Feng with a snap of fingers. Yet up until now, he made no move and merely paid close attention... So strange!

******

In the Yan Shen Secret Region, Luo Feng gave full play to his talent technique Domain for quite some time, then he boarded his planet ship and continued to advance.

"Second brother, the moment you sealed the space and hid the dark universe coordinates, your younger brother guessed your intentions." Luo Feng held his wine glass. "So earlier on, I arranged for a servant to take my many true treasures back to the human domain under the guise of my Golden Horned Beast body. Original earthling body, Mosha body, and Remote Ocean body... From true treasure to valuable, these three bodies do not possess a single piece. Even if they were to fail, at the very most, I would only be wasting a little energy."

Luo Feng sneered. He was no fool. Knowing that Flame Emperor would not give up the Force Armor easily, there was no way he would subject any of his true treasures like Tower Pearl and Shi Wu Wings to such risk. Upon learning that his Golden Horned Beast body had brought his true treasures back to the human

domain, he was able to face up to all obstacles without worries.

During the earlier attack by Ma Sha Knight's domain type true treasure, his original earthling body was annihilated, but the Mosha body was able to escape with the World Ring. The Remote Ocean body was hidden within the World Ring, and with the godly power of the Remote Ocean body, the annihilated original earthling body was recovered to its original form.

"This time, I have revealed my greatest trump card for escape—talent technique Domain!" Luo Feng squinted. "My teacher, Primal Chaos City Leader, once said that this technique Domain is only second to the skills of universe masters. Otherwise, the chance of escaping is almost 100 percent. Now that I have revealed this technique, I must obtain Force Armor...! Force Armor, you will be mine!"

Luo Feng looked out into space and surmised that Flame Emperor would be observing his every move.

"What is mine will be mine," he said. "No matter how hard you try, you cannot keep it!" Luo Feng gave a crooked smile.

******

Following the arrival of the earliest batch of universe overlords—the trio consisting of Demon Wing Leader—superpowers of all kinds like universe overlords and senior universe knights came flocking from faraway domains in a flurry. With techniques like God Country Transportation and teleportation, they rushed to the territory of the Yan Shen race as fast as they could. The number was increasing tremendously.

Luo Feng had ventured deep within the domain of sealed space, so the other great beings were unable to keep up with him. So Flame Emperor shrank the domain of sealed space by another 100 light years. This way, the others in pursuit would be able to catch up with Luo Feng easily.

Second brother, how shameless you can be, Luo Feng thought with a sneer.

Zoom!

This time, Luo Feng showed no trace of hesitation. First, he teleported directly to the border of the domain of sealed space. Then, with his talent technique Domain, he penetrated his way into the sealed space by speedy and continuous flashes. The moment the fastest great being of another race caught up, Luo Feng would have put a couple hundred miles between them.

The talent technique Domain was enough to convince several great beings in pursuit to give up, and when Luo Feng had penetrated into the deeper region of the sealed space, other great beings who arrived later would not even have the chance to fight him.

******

"A bunch of trash!"

Flame Emperor madly surveyed the images before him. At that moment, his rage was unleashed without restraint. The entire palace seemed to have fallen into a burning furnace.

Ba Feng Knight stood by his side, filled with fear. He did not understand why Flame Emperor was fuming over the fact that Luo Feng was not killed.

Flame Emperor swept a look in his direction. "Take your leave."

"Yes," Ba Feng Knight said respectfully. Then, stepping into the blurry red light, he left.

"Trash, trash, a bunch of trash!" Flame Emperor seethed. He had not felt such anger in a long time.

Ambushing Luo Feng had failed, which meant Luo Feng would be taking Force Armor away. This made him furious.

"Third brother, take your time," Flame Emperor said coldly. "You

still need over 100 years of flying to get here."

He had shrunk the domain of sealed space twice. With the status of a high and mighty universe master, and with the matter implicating Sitting Mountain Guest and Force Armor, he could not help losing his cool. Shrinking the sealed space twice in a row was, after all, a despicable thing to do.

The Original Star is about to open, Flame Emperor thought. I shall enter the Original Star for a round of battle. Maybe I will be able to find a true treasure that is comparable to the Force Armor.

However, he knew that the chances were extremely low. Flame Emperor had experienced many openings of the Original Star and had obtained quite a handful of true treasures. However, most of them were ordinary ones. Even the senior true treasures were few and far between, and there were no top-tier true treasures to speak of. Of course, through his ventures in other domains, killings, and fighting, he had paid dearly to be able to obtain a single top-tier true treasure—his Black Armor—as a backup plan. But Black Armor, when compared to Force Armor... The two were on completely different levels.

Heng!

Flame Emperor sat on his throne and looked into the vast space. Then he closed his eyes and silently waited for the Original Star to open. When it came to Luo Feng, he was at his wits' end. After all, Sitting Mountain Guest was a deterrent preventing him from going overboard.

Chapter 1032: The Original Star Opened

Many supreme beings rushed to hunt Luo Feng. However, those who tried to hunt him all failed after Luo Feng performed his talent technique Domain. As for those who arrived late, they couldn't even begin to chase him after him because he was already deep in the space-sealed area. They all gave up.

Yet, at the same time... Luo Feng's secret technique Domain went public. The great beings who chased Luo Feng all knew about it and spread the news. Many great beings of other races were stunned by the news that Blade River Emperor had such an exceptional skill.

Pei Feng Knight was furious after learning about Domain. "He dared to look down on me! He didn't even perform that technique when I attacked him. He didn't even fight with all his strength! Well-played, Blade River... Why did he dodge it again! Why is it so difficult for him to die?"

Bark Mirror Emperor was exasperated after realizing this. He roared so hard that the walls of his room cracked.

******

While the other races were shocked, the human race was thrilled. The talent technique Domain was bestowed by the universe and couldn't be gained by practice alone.

"Blade River Emperor will be able to survive for a long time with this technique."

"As long as he doesn't meet any universe masters, he'll be able to survive!"

"Talent technique Domain is indeed incredible, and many universe knights aren't able to deal with it. However, some still have extraordinary skills. For instance, the most powerful World Tree is already able to control space and time as well as a universe

master. There are other special life forms who can suppress the talent technique Domain."

******

Through the virtual universe, Luo Feng learned about the discussions outside, which made him further realize that the only way to win respect from other great beings was power!

Many universe knights concluded that Luo Feng going to the Original Star meant he was rushing to his own death. After they witnessed him performing his talent technique Domain, however, the number of naysayers declined in number.

Domain is only used for escape, thought Luo Feng. In the Original Star, one must fight for true treasures. Fleeing is not enough. Force Armor... I must have it.

Compared to Force Armor, the talent technique Domain was nothing. Force Armor was an item desired by supreme beings like Flame Emperor. Even Primal Chaos City Leader was willing to fight to the death for a true treasure like that.

******

Ten years passed.

At the top of Thunder Island stood Primal Chaos City Leader. "Luo Feng. The Original Star will be opened tomorrow. I heard that you're going, too?"

"Yes, teacher," Luo Feng said, standing behind Primal Chaos City Leader.

"What's your plan?" Primal Chaos City Leader asked. "Who do you want to team up with? Did you invite some great beings?"

"No," Luo Feng replied.

"If you want to team up with someone, I can help," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "You're still relatively weak. Senior universe knights often find some great beings to help them and give them a

higher chance of survival. You should also find some suitable great beings to help you."

"Team up with whom?" Luo Feng shook his head. "Senior universe knights can't help me much. As for universe overlords, even if they say yes, it'll be because of you, and from the bottom of their hearts, they'll believe that I'm dragging them back. I'd better go there by myself."

"You're thinking of doing this... by yourself?" Primal Chaos City Leader was startled.

"I just want to go there to broaden my horizons," said Luo Feng. I'll be careful."

"That's right, you have your Bloody Sea." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "It's all in your hands. But, Luo Feng, why would you go to the lands of the Flame God Race and perform your talent technique Domain? A revealed trump card is no longer a trump card. If the enemies wish to attack you, they'll prepare for this technique. You need to make sure that it's the only option before you show your trump card."

"I understand," Luo Feng said. "I decided to go there because of something private."

"Something private?"

Primal Chaos City Leader glanced at Luo Feng. "Then I won't ask any further questions. However, I must remind you that the lands of the Flame God Race belong to Flame Emperor, who is one of the top-tier universe masters. He was as talented and exceptional as you. If you've done some research, you'll know that Flame Emperor is a human. He was beyond exceptional. He never failed, and nobody at his level could rival him. He never failed...! And he respected nobody! He's a fearless great being. However, he also believed that nobody could suppress him, and he got too ambitious. He couldn't live with being under others." Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head.

Luo Feng listened quietly. Too ambitious and couldn't live with being under others...?

"To top it all off, something's wrong with his mental state!" said Primal Chaos City Leader. "He only remembers how others have wronged him. He cannot remember the good that others do for him!" Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head. "After becoming a universe knight, he grew ever more arrogant and tyrannical. And he was extremely selfish!"

"Extremely selfish?" said Luo Feng.

"He dared to attack universe masters within his own race!" Primal Chaos City Leader exclaimed. "He attacked them for their valuables! Gigantic Axe Founder decided to punish him by imprisoning him, but little did he expect that Flame Emperor had betrayed us humans with beings from his hometown. It was a great joke to the rest of the universe!"

Luo Feng was startled.

"He's indeed a genius!" Primal Chaos City Leader exclaimed. "And every time I see you, it's like seeing him. We human cultivated him, but he turned his back on us. Every time there was a war between the races, he grew crueler toward us humans." Chao City Leader shook his head. "Luo Feng, if he attacks you, just summon me, and I'll be there instantly."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng was stunned to realize what his second brother was really like.

Selfish? thought Luo Feng, recalling everything he had been through. Yeah... He's selfish, all right. Force Armor was left by Master Zuo Shan Ke to me, but he tried to keep it.

******

On the second day, the Original Star opened! It was a massive party for the billions of races in the universe! Of course, the

undying fighters didn't know of it, as it was a killing festival for the supreme beings...

Though Luo Feng was in the territory of the Flame God Race and couldn't see the opening of the portal to the Original Star, he could still watch the scene through the virtual universe... The power from the opening of each portal was more terrific than that of universe masters.

Various groups flooded into the Original Star. 10,081 portals were distributed throughout the universe.

Supreme beings from all the superpowers, made up of billions of races in the universe, flew into the portal and entered the Original Star.

10,081 original stars... The slaughter was about to begin!

"The universe takes care of me," said Flame Emperor. "Force Armor is about to be taken by my third brother, and I have to hand it over because of Master Zuo Shan Ke. Perhaps I can get better true treasures."

Flame Emperor walked into a portal to original stars and landed on one.

******

The biological spaceship traveled through the mist. Luo Feng had a simple life, spending most of his time on space law and the beast god path. Luo Feng had already fully comprehended the second mystery of space law, Seal, during the 80,000 years of creating ultimate techniques.

As for the third one, Strangle, he was close. One could become a universe knight after completing the comprehension of all three mysteries and combining them as one. Apparently, Luo Feng needed a long time.

"It's cruel in the original stars."

Although Luo Feng didn't go, he watched some footage taken by some great beings who made it out. Original stars were closest to the land of origin in the universe. They were stars full of valuables! And they were filled with hazards!

It was the first place Luo Feng knew of that couldn't connect to the virtual universe!

"My decision was a wise one," he said. "Without the Force Armor, I can only flee with my power."

To Luo Feng, he went through a peaceful 100 years, yet on the original stars, twelve large-scale battles took place because of the valuables. Hundreds of universe knights and more than 20 universe overlords died during those wars, but all the universe masters survived.

Of course, all the superpowers were excited by the slaughtering. The more precious the valuables were, the more great beings they were willing to send out.

"The footage isn't even clear." Luo Feng shook his head. "The level of the slaughter there is apocalyptic, and there's no way to record the battles clearly. Shame. None of the battles have anything to do with me."

Luo Feng stood in the control room and watched the three lands in the distance through the virtual scene. They were the inhabitants of the Flame God Race. Although he finally saw the lands, he was still so distant from them. It took him another month to get to the border.

A silver-armored undying warrior flew towards him. His eyes glinted furiously.

"This is the territory of the Flame God Race. How dare you come here, human!"

Heng!

Luo Feng frowned. Godly force permeated from him, suppressing

the undying fighter of Flame God Race.

"Flame Emperor! I've arrived at your territory!" Luo Feng shouted, looking at the main palace surrounded by the three lands. "Show yourself!"

Chapter 1033: The First Encounter

"What audacity!" the undying Yan Shen warrior shouted angrily. A long spear suddenly appeared in his palm, and he pointed its sharp tip at Luo Feng. "Human, Flame Emperor is not someone at your beck and call."

Flame Emperor was the absolute ruler of the Yan Shen race, so even though Luo Feng displayed formidable power, this warrior was not intimidated enough to retreat.

Luo Feng looked at the undying warrior. Though surrounded and oppressed by his power, the warrior was filled with fighting spirit. The moment his godly power dispersed, it would drown this undying warrior with its absolute power... Yet, the eyes of that undying warrior were so filled with anger that they looked as though they could spout fire. He did not give any further utterance.

Luo Feng looked toward the main palace and said, "Flame Emperor, even this lowly undying warrior has the guts to shout at me. Why are you in hiding? This is your sanctuary, where you can control the space and time. Don't you pretend you can't hear me!"

Finishing his words, Luo Feng waited in silence.

******

Indeed, everyone knew that this was the home of the Yan Shen race, where Flame Emperor possessed ultimate control. If he pretended to turn a deaf ear to Luo Feng's words, that would be him taking Luo Feng for a fool.

Mere seconds later...

Hong!

A strong wave of godly power spurted out from the main palace in the distance and was followed by a complete closure of the sealed space. With a flash of light, a figure appeared directly before

Luo Feng.

"Are you Luo Feng, the human Blade River Emperor?" asked a burly, single-horned man with a bald head. He wore black war armor and was approximately 30 feet tall. His body was plastered with scales resembling those of a snake. Even his face was covered with scales, leaving only his scalp bare and shiny. He was a universe knight of the Yan Shen race.

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes," he said.

"I am Ice Deuteron Knight," the single-horned, bald knight said with a smile. "Flame Emperor has instructed me to wait here for Blade River Emperor, and here you are, finally. The moment I learned of your arrival, I closed the sealed space meant to protect our race without delay."

Luo Feng laughed to himself. Closed it? He knew the sealed space had been specially prepared for him.

As the two conversed, the undying warrior who was oppressed by Luo Feng's godly power could not hear a single word. Ice Deuteron Knight gestured to him.

"Would Blade River Emperor be so kind as to release my fellow man?" Ice Deuteron Knight asked.

Luo Feng retracted his powers upon request.

Ice Deuteron Knight turned to the undying warrior and commanded, "Take your leave quickly."

"Yes, Knight." The undying warrior gave a few respectful bows. Then, in an instant, he disappeared.

Ice Deuteron Knight gave a smile and looked at Luo Feng. "Blade River Emperor, please follow me."

Luo Feng followed with a nod. He was not afraid of whatever tricks Flame Emperor had up his sleeves. While he was on his way here, he had met with all sorts of obstacles, and nothing had

brought him down. Now that he had arrived at the territory of the Yan Shen race, if Flame Emperor was unable to play nice, it would be an insult to Luo Feng... and an insult to their teacher, Sitting Mountain Guest!

******

The duo teleported directly to the palace grounds. There were endless flames around the palaces, and they burned an empty path right in the middle. At the end of the path, several undying warriors of the Yan Shen race stood deferentially on both sides.

Luo Feng and the single-horned knight walked side by side.

"Where is Flame Emperor?" Luo Feng asked.

"That is the main palace," the single-horned knight said, pointing to the highest palace in the distance. "It is also where the Flame Emperor resides. The two other palaces on each side are the secondary palaces where common guests reside. Blade River Emperor, please proceed to the secondary palace hall. You may be granted an audience with Flame Emperor when he returns."

Luo Feng changed his countenance. "Buying time?" Luo Feng stared at the single-horned knight. "Is that what Flame Emperor instructed you to do? Did you convey the news of my arrival? Don't bother trying to tell me that there is no way you can inform him at present. Flame Emperor is the one and only universe master of the entire Yan Shen race. He definitely would have caught wind of any news that spread to this area at any time."

"Don't get so anxious, Blade River Emperor." To his credit, the single-horned knight was not shaken by Luo Feng flaring up. "I have just sent word to Flame Emperor. He is currently in the Original Star, so... to return from the Original Star, he could make use of God Country Transportation, which will bring him here in no time."

Luo Feng said with indifference, "You lead the way. I will follow

your arrangements for now and take a rest in the palace. I shall just wait to see when this Flame Emperor will turn up."

"Please follow me."

The single-horned knight showed similar disregard for Luo Feng as he led the way in front. The two walked into the secondary palace hall. After instructing the servants to prepare a spread of delicacies, the single-horned knight left.

******

"A nobody! And with such arrogance!" the single-horned knight growled once outside. He looked toward the palace. With much disdain, he mused, "Even though you are an undying life form, you only possess the powers of a secondary universe knight; at the very best, you excel at escape tactics! Who are you to show disrespect to our Flame Emperor? If not for Flame Emperor's command to not create trouble, I would have shown you the consequences for being disrespectful! Humph!"

With that, the single-horned knight turned and left. He could not be bothered with Luo Feng.

******

In the secondary palace, a fine spread of delicacies from different locations throughout the universe was served. There was also a fine selection of wine. The food alone would have cost undying emperors their entire fortunes.

This second brother of mine certainly puts on quite a show, Luo Feng thought, sitting at the table. Someone leaked the news about my whereabouts, and I am almost certain it was him who discreetly spread the news. He clearly knew I was coming, and yet he chose to delay our meeting. I am here by the orders of Sitting Mountain Guest, and I wield enough power to drive the Force Armor, which is why I am here for it! This is our Teacher's command, yet he is putting on the airs of a universe master.

Luo Feng could only shake his head.

The Force Armor belonged to Luo Feng to begin with. Flame Emperor had been using it for a long time, and now that its rightful owner had appeared, he was in no rush to return it... On the contrary, it seemed he ordered his underlings to deal with Luo Feng so that he could hold on to Force Armor.

"I shall wait," Luo Feng said to himself. "Now, to see how long I have to wait. This matter has already been blown out of proportion. The supreme beings in this universe are coming after my life... News has spread all over the place, and I am certain our teacher, Sitting Mountain Guest, must have known and is also paying close attention to everything happening here. Second brother, oh, second brother. With teacher keeping an eye on you, I would like to see how far you can go in this game!"

******

One day, two days, three days passed...

Then one month. Then two months... And still, there was no news. Flame Emperor still had not arrived.

"More delays... He just continues delaying."

Luo Feng closed his eyes and mediated while staying connected with the virtual universe with his consciousness. He waited in silence.

This power was, after all, inferior to humans. He could only wait.

******

Flame Emperor sat cross-legged in one of the ancient forests on the Original Star. He was attentively feeling for the waves coming from the distance; if precious valuables were about to appear, there would be unique signs to announce their presence.

"Third brother," he muttered, "allow me to tame that arrogance of yours. An extraordinary genius from the human race? Hmm... I

was much stronger than you back then. I shall help you understand why a junior like yourself should respect someone with seniority!"

******

Luo Feng had already stayed in the palace for a year or more, and during this period, he had been waiting peacefully and patiently.

One day, was Luo Feng was meditating cross-legged, he suddenly heard a loud noise.

Hong!

A powerful force dispersed over his surroundings, enshrouding the entire palace grounds. Every being within the palace grounds, from servants to undying warriors, rushed out immediately to bow their respect.

Luo Feng also opened his eyes, then said, "Finally, you're here."

Hong! Long!

The surrounding time and space changed. Luo Feng merely observed the transformation happening. Then he found himself in a spacious palace hall.

On the throne of this palace sat a towering, lofty figure. He was densely covered with scales. With that gigantic horn, he was the very picture of the Yan Shen race. His eyes looked down at the waiting Luo Feng who felt an intangible power. It felt as if he had been cast into a burning furnace.

"Second brother," Luo Feng said, raising his head to meet Flame Emperor's eyes. He smiled. "Second brother, you are finally here. I, your younger brother, have been waiting a long time."

Hong!

The towering figure stood up. Step by step, he made his way down the stairs. His godly body shrank as he moved, and by the time he reached the bottom of the stairs, he had reduced to a

height comparable to that of Luo Feng. From an earthling's point of view, Flame Emperor carried an overbearing arrogance and ignored the presence of all others. This arrogance was in his bones—his very soul. It emanated from him naturally. There was no pretense at all! This was different from some other proud and arrogant great beings. Flame Emperor's arrogance and self-honor were so convincing that many people exclaimed that he was truly deserving to be their overlord.

"Third brother," Flame Emperor said, looking at Luo Feng with a trace of friendliness in his gaze. "I was on the Original Star, fighting with countless other great beings from the other races for valuables. I met with the crucial moment when a valuable first appeared, so I was delayed for quite a while. I trust you did not take it to heart."

"Of course I didn't," Luo Feng replied.

"Hmm." Flame Emperor nodded and said, "I had a chat with Pu Ti. Our teacher, Sitting Mountain Guest, has also given me some orders. As for you... I did gather some informative materials intentionally. You are certainly one in a million. An extraordinary genius from the human race. But you should know that everything you have today is because of teacher's faith in you. Do not be proud. Train humbly and become a universe knight as quickly as you can. Then move on to the status of a universe master. Your first brother and I are waiting for that day to arrive."

Luo Feng gave a slight frown. He did not like this display of superiority that Flame Emperor was showing, but he dealt with the situation by replying, "Of course, I will work hard."

"Luck is with you. You can take on the life or death inheritance of the Star Tower to become Sitting Mountain Guest's third disciple!" Flame Emperor looked at Luo Feng. "That's why you should cherish this opportunity more than ever. Do not ever disappoint our teacher."

"Second brother," Luo Feng replied immediately, "you must know my purpose in coming here."

"Haha! For the Force Armor. Of course, I know."

Flame Emperor smiled at Luo Feng. When it came to his third brother, Flame Emperor disliked him. It was purely by instinct. Sitting Mountain Guest had trained the young Flame Emperor wholeheartedly, which was why he had become one of the top-notched, transcendent geniuses of the universe.

And now, Luo Feng was not the least bit inferior to him.

Even Flame Emperor realized that in the future, this third brother would come to own the supreme true treasure, Star Tower! Thus, Flame Emperor saw Luo Feng as an immense threat! Yet Luo Feng was the third disciple Sitting Mountain Guest had dedicated himself to. There was no way Flame Emperor could put a stop to this.

Big brother Pu Ti was the least of Flame Emperor's concern. He had previously been Sitting Mountain Guest's servant, so his powers were a far cry from those of Flame Emperor. But this third brother... He kept Flame Emperor on his toes.

"Right," said Luo Feng. "Here I am for my Force Armor. Our Teacher instructed me to obtain it from you when I possessed the power to drive it. So now, here I am."

"Force Armor is one of the super true treasures in this vast universe," Flame Emperor replied, gazing at Luo Feng, "It has limitless power, and you have only just become undying. You are still too weak to unleash its power. You might even lose the Force Armor if it were under your possession. The way I see it, for the sake of the Force Armor—and for your own safety, my brother—you should continue cultivating your power. It is not too late for you to obtain the Force Armor when you have become a universe knight. I shall gladly continue to take care of it for you, and when you have become a universe knight, I will deliver it straight into

your hands."

Chapter 1034: Flame Emperor's Ambition

Inside the palace.

Luo Feng, who was already dissatisfied with Flame Emperor, was infuriated.

Force Armor belongs to me, he thought. Whether I am able to use it or not—and whether I might lose it or not—has nothing to do with you! I'm here to take the Force Armor under Master Zuo Shan Ke's command, and all you need to do is give me the Force Armor! Why're you rambling?

Though Luo Feng was full of anger, his only choice was to suppress it.

Flame Emperor looked at Luo Feng, grinning. "Brother," he said, "train yourself well and become a universe knight. Then you can use the Force Armor."

Luo Feng smiled. "Second brother," he said. "I was able to survive being hunted by all the great beings in the universe without Force Armor. If I can get Force Armor now, I'll be much more powerful and far less likely to die. You don't need to worry about me, second brother. Just give me the Force Armor."

"Don't take any chances!" Flame Emperor shouted. His voice trembled Luo Feng's soul. "Force Armor is a super true treasure desired even by universe masters. How can you dare attempt to try your luck?"

Flame Emperor stared at Luo Feng. His power permeated outward like a physical force, suppressing Luo Feng like mountains.

"Force Armor may have belonged to you, but it was, after all, created by Master Zuo Shan Ke after endless time and energy. You should be able to guarantee that you won't lose it. I'm doing so for your own best interests. Train yourself and become a universe

knight, then I'll give you the Force Armor."

Flame Emperor's voice rumbled, shaking Luo Feng's soul. However, Luo Feng's willpower was robust, and even without Tower Pearl, it was as strong as that of a universe overlord... Flame Emperor was only a powerful universe master proficient in close combat. He wasn't able to change a universe overlord's mind with his voice alone.

"Second brother, do I sense that are you reluctant to give me the Force Armor?" Luo Feng gazed at Flame Emperor.

Heng!

Flame Emperor suddenly became furious, and the entire palace was trapped in anger. His power suppressed Luo Feng.

"Third brother," Flame Emperor said, "I've been keeping the Force Armor for you for hundreds of millions of years under the order of Master Zuo Shan Ke, and I'll give it to you when you're strong enough! Although you can utilize the Force Armor, you're still weak, and I'm doing this for your best interest! If you lose the Force Armor, you'll disappoint Master Zuo Shan Ke."

"Don't worry about that." Luo Feng was firm. "I'll tell Master Zuo Shan Ke myself if I lose it."

"Tell him? How're you going to tell him?" Flame Emperor asked him.

"It's none of your business," Luo Feng answered.

"Just because you've accomplished a little bit, you became so arrogant?" Flame Emperor shook his head.

Luo Feng looked at Flame Emperor and said calmly, "No need to say more, second brother. I'm here today to take Force Armor. Are you going to give it to me or not?"

"You're not powerful enough—" said Flame Emperor.

But Luo Feng cut him off. "I don't have the power to take it from

you if you're not willing to give it to me. My only recourse is to tell Master Zuo Shan Ke later. If Master Zuo Shan Ke thinks you should still keep Force Armor, I won't bother you again." Luo Feng slightly bowed. "I'll show myself out."

Luo Feng turned around and started to leave. Flame Emperor was startled. He had never said that he was unwilling to give up Force Armor! He wanted Luo Feng to back off on his own... Flame Emperor believed that if Luo Feng gave up, Master Zuo Shan Ke wouldn't meddle. After all, it was Luo Feng who conceded first. Flame Emperor couldn't say no directly, as it contradicted the order of Master Zuo Shan Ke.

"Third brother!" Flame Emperor yelled.

However, Luo Feng didn't stop.

"Stop!" Flame Emperor yelled.

His voice shook the very space and time around him.

Luo Feng went back to the palace after seeing the scenes around him change. He looked at Flame Emperor and said, "Why are you stopping me? I'm going to see Master Zuo Shan Ke."

"When did I say I was refusing to give it to you?" demanded Flame Emperor. "I was just telling you that you're weak. But if you really want it regardless of my warnings, then I'll have to give it to you. Don't blame me if you lose it in the future. This is Force Armor!"

Flame Emperor turned his hands around, and a set of exquisite, diamond armor appeared on his palm. There were engravings dimming on the armor. The Force Armor was like a Heavenly God in Flame Emperor's hands, and Luo Feng held his breath looking at it.

Gazing at Force Armor, Luo Feng was thrilled. It was derived from many more solid pieces of armor—general armor, king armor, and emperor armor—and it was a superior true treasure

prepared by Zuo Shan Ke for his third disciple. Even a pinnacle universe master like Flame Emperor was reluctant to give it away. After all, he had never obtained a true treasure like Force Armor or "Flame Emperor Halberd" on his own.

"What are you still waiting for?" Flame Emperor said.

Luo Feng reached out his hands, and his godly power wound around the Force Armor like threads. He pierced Force Armor with a trace of his godly power and seared his life imprint in it, and at the same time, ancient information on Force Armor flooded Luo Feng's mind.

Sou!

Luo Feng put Force Armor into his world ring.

"Second brother, I'll take my leave now," said Luo Feng with a smile. "I'll come back and see you again, if I have the chance."

"You can come here whenever you want," Flame Emperor said.

Luo Feng left the main palace immediately and walked along the portal separating the space palaces and the outside. The palaces were isolated from the surrounding space ripples, which meant it was impossible to teleport outside. The only one who could do that was Flame Emperor, the owner of the palace.

Sou!

Luo Feng teleported himself immediately after leaving the palaces and left the territory of the Flame God Race using the God Country Transportation of one of his slaves.

******

Flame Emperor stood outside the main palace, leaning against the handrail as Luo Feng left using God Country Transportation.

Heng!

"Third brother," Flame Emperor whispered. "Impressive. Both of the two candidates died during life or death inheritance, yet you

survived..."

Although he claimed that Luo Feng was lucky, he knew clearly that Zuo Shan Ke had a wide range of options for his disciple. There were billions of beings in each generation on Earth, and Luo Feng was the first one to succeed in billions of years. Even without Zuo Shan Ke's training, he was exceptional.

Flame Emperor had become who he was today after endless suffering, but he knew that the obstacles Zuo Shan Ke gave him were not tricky. Life or Death Inheritance was the most terrifying one!

"He took the Force Armor in the end," Flame Emperor said, slowly calming himself down. Though he was wary of Luo Feng, he knew that even if Luo Feng became a universe master with Star Tower, he was, at most, an exceptional universe master who could suppress him; being a universe master was not enough to kill him. Unless he became a universe supreme master...

"There are only few universe supreme masters in the universe. As long as a race has a universe supreme master, it's a pinnacle race! Only superpowers who have universe supreme masters on their side are the real top-tier superpowers. They're able to turn back time to resurrect universe overlords, and they can withstand the backlash from the universe easily. They all have exceptional skills... They're able to control the sky and land wherever they go, and even universe law has to avoid them. Master Zuo Shan Ke is one of them. Only if someone becomes a supreme master can they be at the top of the universe!"

Flame Emperor's eyes gleamed with desire. He wasn't willing to be second-best to anyone, which was why he had always been so determined to improve his power sharply. Though he had Zuo Shan Ke as his teacher, he had made his breakthrough mainly through independent practice. He already stood among the top-tier universe masters, and he was only one step away from becoming a universe supreme master!

The term "supreme master" was self-explanatory enough. They were considered the most powerful beings in existence! They were able to dominate an entire territory of the universe! They could wander the universe alone without fear of being disturbed. They could also admit talents as their disciples by robbing other races without being stopped!

"I'll be at your level if I can take one step further, Master Zuo Shan Ke," Flame Emperor said. He turned around and walked back to his palace.

******

Human territory, Ganwu Universe Country.

Mosha Luo Feng walked out of a pit on an arid planet.

"My god country is 3,300 light years away."

Mosha body stepped forward.

Sou!

In no time, he traveled 1,000 light years forward.

Mosha body was able to merge with space better than universe knights, and when becoming a special life form after absorbing the essence from Space Heart, Mosha body had been able to perfectly merge with space. He had even gained the talent technique Domain, by which he could teleport himself 100 light years at one time. After becoming undying, his godly power and mind were significantly improved, and he could teleport himself as far as universe knights.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

He entered the space interlayer after three teleportations. He teleported once more and entered his god country.

The god country was boundless, and the Remote Ocean was expanding slowly. In the sky above the Remote Ocean, Luo Feng walked out from the gleaming golden palace and stood on the

waves.

"Force Armor!"

Luo Feng was covered by a suit of transparent armor, which had completely integrated with his godly body. Each fiber of Force Armor was combined with Luo Feng's muscles and organs, and boundless strength filled his body.

The power felt magnificent—omnipotent. Luo Feng closed his eyes and reveled in it.

"No wonder it's a true treasure prepared by Master Zuo Shan Ke!" Luo Feng exclaimed.

He had already received the information while with Flame Emperor. Force Armor was a special suit of armor. Unlike other true treasures that required law comprehension to be utilized, Force Armor required the strength of godly bodies, like soldier armor, general armor, and king armor. The sturdier the godly body was, the more powerful Force Armor would be!

Hong!

A gigantic shadow suddenly appeared. It was Golden Horned Beast.

Luo Feng smiled. "Try the Force Armor on," he said.

Sou!

The transparent armor flew toward Golden Horned Beast like a beam of light, merging with the godly body of Golden Horned Beast.

Chapter 1035: This is the Force Armor!

When Luo Feng received Force Armor, he, too, had a taste of its power. He connected to the virtual universe with his consciousness, as he wanted to inform his Master, True Yan Knight, that he would enter the Original Star.

In the virtual universe, near the boundless mountainside of Thunder Island, stood True Yan Knight's palaces. There were six figures sitting before the palaces, drinking wine while chatting loudly.

A burly, stout man with three horns on his head held up a strange wine bottle and took big gulps. "Rumor has it that on the vast plain of one original star, a splendid godly palace emerged out of the blue," he said. "In front of it, there was an ancient tablet that documented detailed information about a top-tier true treasure. With this true treasure, one can escape from enemies by teleporting or cut through layers of space easily while in battle... It is a superior true treasure that is good for escaping and attacking. This top-tier true treasure is called the 'Heavenly Gold Sail.'" He tutted and sighed. "The very next moment, three universe masters, 18 universe overloads, and more than 100 universe knights dashed into the palace. The doors shut quickly. And when it opened again six years later, the number of survivors was half the number who entered. Rumor has it that the Heavenly Gold Sail was eventually taken by a universe master of the Northern Territory Alliance."

The other five universe knights, including True Yan, jested in response.

"Really? Kuang Zhou Knight, don't make up more stories like you did before."

"If that really happened, why were we unaware of it?"

Kuang Zhou Knight glared so hard his eyes seemed to bulge out like little, round balls. "Make up stories? I did not—not now, not

then."

"But previously, the news that you shared was about something that happened when the Original Star opened two cycles back," teased a werewolf knight whose body was covered in cyan hair.

"The Heavenly Gold Sail I just mentioned is a top-tier true treasure that had just made its first appearance when the Original Star opened this time!" Kuang Zhou Knight said, his eyes still wide open. "I have many good friends, and many of them who entered the Original Star this time came back with stories of all sorts. I just learned about the Heavenly Gold Sail today and immediately came to tell you all about it. And you think I'm bluffing? If you don't believe me, just wait and see. After a few years, news of the Heavenly Gold Sail will reach everyone. By then, you all will know the truth."

"Don't be angry, Kuang Zhou Knight. Tell us more about the birth of this top-tier true treasure."

"Yes, tell us more! Let me pour you more wine."

The other universe knights persuaded him with smiles.

Kuang Zhou Knight was appeased and downed the wine in his bottle in a single gulp. Then he held it out and said, "Fill this up. You are all too greedy. These top-tier true treasures... Every one of them is precious enough to drive universe masters crazy with desire—crazy to the extent that they are willing to kill one another." Kuang Zhou Knight shook his head with a sigh. "This time around, the Original Star has only been open for slightly over 100 years. How is it possible to have so many top-tier true treasures to talk about already? If even a few top-tier true treasures were to emerge, I'm afraid there are bound to be several universe masters killed."

Suddenly, the other universe knights turned to look at a faraway figure flying toward them.

"Everyone, take a look."

"Isn't that Blade River Emperor Luo Feng?"

"True Yan, your disciple is here."

Indeed, it was Luo Feng.

"I heard your disciple was in the territory of the Yan Shen race about a hundred years ago where he was hunted down by countless great beings of other races. But he managed to escape unscathed. True Yan, upon comparing techniques, at least his ability to escape is much stronger than yours."

"Of course, he is stronger than me," True Yan laughed. "He is a future pillar of support for the human race. His survival power must be superior."

While they were chatting, Luo Feng had made his way to where they sat.

"Teacher," Luo Feng greeted with a smile.

"Luo Feng, come, take a seat," True Yan said and pointed to a seat next to him.

Luo Feng laughed and sat down. He looked around at the other universe knights and acknowledged them with a smile. "Everyone else is here, too, I see."

An elderly who resembled a lion at first glance, because his body was covered with long hair, said with a smile, "We did not dare enter the Original Star when it first opened. We would like to hear more news about it, to get to know more about what is happening in the Original Star. Blade River Emperor, we heard about your intention to enter that Original Star. Why is it that you have yet to go?"

He had inferred as much because the moment one entered the Original Star, it was impossible to connect to the virtual universe.

Kuang Zhou Knight glowered. "How would you know whether

Blade River Emperor has gone or not? Blade River Emperor has the talent of dividing himself into several bodies. Maybe he has left one body in the human race domain. That way, he would be able to enter the virtual universe anytime."

"That makes sense."

"Kuang Zhou Knight makes a lot of sense!"

The others laughed loudly. Some looked over at Luo Feng and said, "Blade River Emperor, have you been to the Original Star?"

"Not yet." Luo Feng smiled. "But really soon. I am here to inform my master. Then I will enter the Original Star."

"Immediately?" True Yan Knight was slightly taken aback.

"Blade River Emperor, who is going in with you?" the werewolf knight asked. "You are not going alone, are you?"

Luo Feng nodded. "I am going alone."

Everyone began objecting.

"That is too dangerous!"

"There were numerous senior universe knights being killed! Blade River Emperor, it is better for you to form alliances with other great beings."

Luo Feng laughed and said, "No worries. I am just going to accumulate experience."

Kuang Zhou Knight looked at Luo Feng through his bell-shaped eyes. "Well, I have some detailed information about the Original Star, including all kinds of things that have happened over the past hundred years. I like making friends. This allows me to collect all kinds of information. I may not know the most, but I definitely rank in the top three on that list! I shall provide you with the information later. Before you enter, take a good look and understand everything that roams within each original star."

Luo Feng was thankful. "That is just so gracious of Kuang Zhou

Knight."

"Kuang Zhou Knight does know a lot of things and has a plethora of information," True Yan Knight agreed, smiling.

"But Blade River Emperor," Kuang Zhou Knight continued, his eyes still wide open, "the more knowledge I collect, the more I realize how much danger lurks on the original stars. There is no law and order there to keep it in check. Initially, it may seem peaceful. However, when true treasures start to emerge, there will be much commotion. Supreme beings will come forth to fight for the right to claim them. The weaker ones will be eliminated in no time. The way I see it, with that power of yours... and the many true treasures in your possession... you are bound to attract the attention of the jealous great beings of other races. Your chances of survival may not be more than 10 percent."

"10 percent? Are you sure?"

The other universe knights shook their heads. "Luo Feng has the talent technique Domain. How can you say his chance of survival does not exceed 10 percent?"

Thanks to escaping death while being hunted down by a horde of universe great beings, Luo Feng had earned himself quite a reputation. Still, Luo Feng was taken aback. Were his chances really that low?

"Is it because of the universe masters?" Luo Feng frowned. "Universe masters are strong, of course. More than half of those gathered on the Original Star this time around are said to be universe masters. But there are few of them, and they are scattered across all the 10,081 original stars. There won't be any universe masters on the majority of the original stars. The chances of running into one are low."

"I am saying that your chance of survival is low because of the environment inside the original stars, not because of the universe masters," Kuang Zhou Knight explained. "Every original star can

only be so big, and there are so many senior universe knights and universe overlords gathered in the stars... But once your location is exposed, the others will immediately plan their counterattack against your talent technique Domain... Hence, you will not be able to escape. And eventually, you will be killed."

Luo Feng gave a slight nod. That was true. As had been pointed out to him before, a trump card revealed was no longer a trump card at all. Domain's powers may have been out of this world, but that did not make him invincible. If a few universe overlords with malicious intentions worked together, it wouldn't be difficult to defeat him. There were even some universe overlords with first-rate techniques strong enough to solve problems single-handedly.

"It is best that you have a partner," Kuang Zhou Knight warned. "Complement one another so that when there is danger, both of you can depend on your talent technique Domain to escape. Some kinds of danger require the help of a partner to withstand."

"Thank you, Kuang Zhou Knight," Luo Feng said with a smile.

"The information has been sent to you," Kuang Zhou Knight said.

The next moment, Luo Feng received an email. The attached file contained an extensive amount of detailed information in the form of text, pictures, and video clips about various events that had happened during the hundred years or more since the opening of the Original Star.

Luo Feng sighed inwardly. Luckily... he had obtained his Force Armor!

With Force Armor, it is as if I am carrying a fortress with me, Luo Feng thought. Together with the power of my Mosha body to transform and replicate the shape and aura of other beings, who could recognize me as Blade River Emperor, Luo Feng?

Back in his God Country, his original earthling body and Golden Horned Beast body had tried on the Force Armor and had each felt

its power. The situation coincided with the information he acquired as to what would happen the moment the Force Armor recognized its master.

Luo Feng could not help but marvel... Force Armor was truly a supreme true treasure! He could understand why a supreme being such as Flame Emperor would resort to such underhand means to hold on to it. Luo Feng guessed that Force Armor might even be more powerful than Thousand Treasure River.

Force Armor was refined and made according to Sitting Mountain Guest's design. It was a true treasure in the form of a unique set of armor and was very different from the other true treasures Luo Feng knew of.

To control true treasures like the Shi Wu Wings and Golden King Armor—as well as treasures like Ancient Boat Galaxy—required one to have a very high law comprehension, even someone like Luo Feng could only achieve the second forms of Shi Wu Wings and Golden King Armor. As for Ancient Boat Galaxy, he was still unable to unleash its full potential.

But Force Armor was entirely different! Soldier, general, king, and emperor armor were all unrelated to law comprehension. Instead, they were dependent on bodily strength. Force Armor was the same way; it was dependent on bodily strength. If the godly body was not strong enough, it would be useless even if one had high law comprehension. If the godly body was strong, nothing would go wrong even if one had low law comprehension.

Force Armor had three different forms. The first form required 100 million times the strength of a sector lord for activation. Once activated, it could block off and weaken the force of material attacks to 1/1,000, soul attacks would be weakened to only 1/10, and the user would gain strength equal to 100 million times that of a sector lord.

The second form required 100 billion times the strength of a

sector lord for activation. Once activated, it could block off and weaken the force of material attacks to 1/10,000, soul attacks would be weakened to 1/10, and the user would gain strength equal to one trillion times that of a sector lord.

The third form required 100 trillion times the strength of a sector lord for activation. Once activated, it could block off and weaken the force of material attacks to 1/100,000, soul attacks would be weakened to 1/10, and the user would gain strength equal to 100 trillion times that of a sector lord.

This was an extremely powerful life-saving true treasure. Once a universe master burned up his godly body to activate it, he would be able to activate the third form. With this form, any material attacks by super true treasures of other universe masters were rendered futile! Material attacks would pose no threat at all!

These effects only applied as long as one was not facing off against a more powerful attack-based true treasure, such as supreme true treasures. Should such a supreme true treasure appear in the Original Star, a heated fight among numerous universe masters would occur. For one or two universe masters to lose their lives in the fray was nothing out of the norm.

Chapter 1036: Entering the Original Stars

Inside Luo Feng's palace on Thunder Island.

In the sanctity of his private quarters, Luo Feng read the material on the original stars.

"Impressive," he said. "This Kuang Zhou Knight indeed gathered detailed information about the original stars, and my plan will work! But it's indeed dangerous. And it's a place where the strong rule. Okay, the other three bodies of mine are already at the portal to original stars."

In a space more than 100 light years away from the human territory, there were no stars in the space. Instead, there were only storms formed by hydromagnetic fluid.

A 40-foot shadow stood in the space. He had a pair of silver horns and purple eyes, and he was covered with gray scales. In addition, he had a scorpion tail... He stood there, bloody and powerful. There was a strange beast squatting on his shoulder. The beast had wings, five horns on its head, and thick hoofs.

Anyone knowledgeable would be able to identify this creature—a creature in human form with horns, gray scales, and a scorpion tail... It was "Purple Pupa Beast." Beasts could come in all forms, and some of them looked like humans. Purple Pupa Beast was one of them. Purple Pupa Beasts were known for their bloodthirstiness... Of course, most space beasts were bloodthirsty.

Many great beings would have also recognized the strange, three-foot-long beast on Purple Pupa Beast's shoulder. It was Golden Horned Beast, one of the twelve pinnacle creatures of space beasts!

"Haha! Even my teacher is unable to recognize me," Luo Feng said with a smile. "Mosha body turned into the shape of a Purple Pupa Beast, and it didn't produce any aura."

Luo Feng stroked the Golden Horned Beast on his shoulder. "The

world ring inside Mosha body was hiding Remote Ocean body, and Remote Ocean body emanated its force through the world ring..."

Luo Feng smiled. Other great beings would only sense the bloodthirsty ferocity when they witnessed Mosha body firsthand. His forceful presence rivaled that of a powerful universe knight.

The extent of a being's power was related to its godly body. The stronger the body, the stronger the power. Universe overlords were powerful because of the pinnacle or ultimate techniques they created. However, their power was similar to that of universe knights, which was why it was impossible to sense a universe overlord if he didn't voluntarily show his power.

Luo Feng's Remote Ocean body was 100 million times stronger than that of a sector lord, and because of its enormous size, its power was comparatively greater than many strong universe knights.

Of course... the power of Golden Horned Beast was even stronger! Although Golden Horned Beast was currently only around six feet long, he had already performed both Deities of the World and Beast God Transformation. Luo Feng had bought innumerable precious material to practice Deities of the World during the 80,000 years he had spent creating his ultimate techniques. After all, it wouldn't cost him much to practice as a sector lord.

Luo Feng had already been at a high status without his multiple treasures, and he could trade one of the treasures for many precious materials. He easily achieved the highest level of Deities of the World—36 times amplification. After finishing Deities of the World, his body could be easily enlarged and shrunk at will, and it wouldn't affect his power!

Deities of the World had amplification of 36 times, and the third level of Beast God Transformation had amplification of eight times... When they were combined, they could only give Golden Horned Beast's body an amplification of 45 times! However, if he

performed his talent technique Strengthen, he could reach an amplification of 90 times!

My Mosha body emanated the force of Remote Ocean Body, and it's at the level of senior universe knights, Luo Feng thought. However, the force coming from Golden Horned Beast is much more powerful.

Luo Feng looked at the Golden Horned Beast on his shoulder, and the Golden Horned Beast looked at him as well. They exchanged eye contact.

"Haha...! Anyone who sees us will regard us as two great beings of the Space Beast Alliance."

Luo Feng smiled. There were nine superpowers in the universe, and they were the six alliances of the six pinnacle races, the Ancestral God School, the Northern Territory Alliance, and the Space Beast Alliance.

The six alliances and the Northern Territory Alliance fought fiercely against each other. As for the Ancestral God School and the Space Beast Alliance, they avoided confrontations. The Ancestral God School didn't fight for any territories, and the Space Beast Alliance was rarely seen. Even an ordinary Space Beast was a rare sight.

The land of Space Beast Alliance was a secret in the universe. Although some great beings of Space Beast Alliance could be seen under some special circumstances—such as the opening of original stars—few knew where the land of the Space Beast Alliance was.

A type of being that normally avoided battle and didn't fight for territories... It was the perfect disguise.

My human identity is renowned in the universe. In my own form, I am like a moving treasury on original stars. I'll definitely be hunted down by the various races. Luo Feng took a glance at his grey scales. This appearance won't attract much attention, and I

won't be encircled by them.

After all, there were great beings of all races on original stars. They intimidated each other. They wouldn't attack others unless they could guarantee success, and the one known as Blade River Emperor—Luo Feng—was certainly tempting.

Two great beings of Space Beast, however, were not so easy to deal with.

Luo Feng looked at the distant place. There was a gigantic whirlpool among the hydromagnetic storms. It had a diameter of six billion miles. It was gleaming and twisting the space around him, and the pressure from the whirlpool could crush an ordinary undying fighter.

"A portal to original stars!" Luo Feng whispered.

Sou!

Luo Feng stepped into the portal and flew inside. The deeper he got, the stronger the pressure became.

Hong! Long!

The pressure trembled the surrounding space, and Luo Feng disappeared deep in the portal.

A towering figure flew out of the whirlpool. Its bloodiness and fierceness were terrifying. However, there was a more ferocious force around him... Two forces emanated from the towering figure and the strange, somehow endearing beast.

"These are the original stars!" Luo Feng looked around. The whirlpool portal was behind him. "They're boundless."

Luo Feng could feel the pressure bearing down on him. It was far stronger than it had been on a neutron star or in Ice Hell.

Luo Feng landed in a forest. There were 10,081 original stars, and each of them was of the same size—a diameter of 60 billion miles! Space ripples were completely frozen on the original stars, and the

pressure could annihilate ordinary undying fighters. The pressure trembled the space. In addition, God Country Transportation was not allowed here.

The star only had a diameter of 60 billion miles, which wasn't large to supreme beings... However, under such pressure, it would take Luo Feng a long time to boost his speed. Plus, under such great pressure, turning and changing speeds would be a clumsy affair. This place was like a domain coming out of a domain type true treasure.

"The pressure is enormous. Even my Mosha body with a life gene level of 100 times and strength ten million times greater than that of a sector lord finds it difficult to walk on original stars."

Luo Feng walked carefully with Golden Horned Beast lying on his shoulders. He walked out of the forest and arrived at the bottom of the mountain. There was a vast plain in front of him.

Luo Feng moved forward and carefully sensed the energy force surrounding him. According to the information gathered by Kuang Zhou Knight, sensing the energy force on original stars was the most popular way to find valuables among the great beings.

After a long while...

Hong!

An energy ripple reached Luo Feng.

"It's there..."

Luo Feng turned around.

Hong!

Luo Feng immediately sped up like a beam of light. However, the faster he got, the stronger the resistance became, and Mosha body clearly couldn't bear it.

"The resistance is so strong. Burn godly power now!"

Luo Feng started to burn a portion of his godly body. He sped up

and reached sub-lightspeed instantly. He flew off into the distance. There was a boundless plain beneath him.

Luo Feng kept flying. After a short while, he saw five great beings fighting one another on the hills.

Sou!

Luo Feng landed.

"Five universe knights," Luo Feng muttered. He saw someone from the demon race on one side. He was enormous and incredibly powerful. On the other side, there were beings of various other races. Luo Feng quickly speculated, If one of them is of the demon race, and the others are probably from Nine Territory Alliance.

There were nine superpowers in the universe, and there were twelve top powers. The twelve top powers were not necessarily inferior to the human alliance and demon alliance when it came to the number of races and universe knights. The only thing distinguished them from the superpowers was a universe supreme being!

There are six teams of great beings, Luo Feng though, looking around.

Apparently, many great beings were attracted to the fight, and there were six more spectators other than him. However, they were all watching from afar instead of meddling.

A beast with three heads transmitted its voice, calling out, "Prison race alliance, Crystal race alliance, and Ci Huan Alliance...! And there's a great being of the Space Beast Alliance, too. We've already got two of the three treasures. Let's go."

"Space Beast Alliance!" A being of the demon race with a turtle shell looked toward Luo Feng. "Let's go!"

Demon race was closely related to the Space Beast Alliance, and the demon race had always thought that space beasts belonged to the demon race.

Sou! Sou!

Two universe knights of the demon race left, and so did the other three universe knights of the Nine Territory Alliance.

Chapter 1037: Chancing upon a Valuable

After the fight, the great beings from the demon race and the Nine Territory Alliance left. The seven waves of the audience—consisting of great beings from other races attracted by the commotion—watched the fight from afar. Thereafter, the crowd dispersed quietly.

"Everything that happened matched the description Kuang Zhou Knight gave me precisely." Luo Feng said as he cruised along the skyline of the deserted plain with Golden Horned Beast crouching on his shoulder obediently. "The great beings within the Original Star are very cautious. If there too few valuables, or if they are not confident enough, they will not take action. During the fight between the demon race and the Nine Territory Alliance, there was no aura of a true treasure at all. I think it probably involved only a few treasures."

If its aura was concealed, then a true treasure would not be easy to differentiate from an ordinary treasure based on appearance alone. However, things were different on the original stars.

The original stars were full of valuables. When different types of valuables appeared, there would not be much response; when some top-tier series of treasures appeared, perhaps there would be some response. However, during the "birth of a true treasure," there would absolutely be a response!

The greater the response, the higher the level of the true treasure. There was even a palace surfacing from underground. This palace was where a true treasure was hidden. It could be implied, therefore, that the greater the response, the higher the level of the true treasure.

"Huh?" Luo Feng said, observing a whirlpool from a distance. It was suspended in midair. "Another whirlpool portal, with no means of knowing which original star the path leads to."

According to the description provided in the information given to him, there were 10,081 original stars, and there were 10,081 whirlpools associated portals randomly distributed that led to each star. Among them, only one was used for leaving the stars—which was the path leading to the whirlpool portal Luo Feng had utilized to arrive at his destination. The other 10,080 paths led to the other 10,080 original stars.

"All great beings in the original stars seek treasures," said Luo Feng. "They do not run about randomly and recklessly. Most of them probably stand guard at a certain spot and wait patiently. Once they sense a trace of an aura or any other unique, telling sign somewhere, they rush to it."

Luo Feng decided to learn from the experience accumulated from the prior generations of original stars. He would faithfully follow their practices.

Sou!

Immediately, Luo Feng dove down and found himself flying into a low-lying ancient forest. There was a mountain that was approximately 600 miles high. Although it was much taller than any other mountain on Earth, when compared to those in the original stars, it would have been considered average. The ancient trees, flowers, and foliage on the stars were beautiful.

Treading on a bed of fallen leaves, Luo Feng strolled about leisurely.

"The pressure here on the original star is overwhelming!" he said. "Weaker undying spirits would surely be annihilated. Yet these plants are able to thrive and bloom here amid mountains and rock formations." Luo Feng looked around and saw a short, sturdy tree with a trunk that was a whopping 100 feet thick. "Unquestionably, these plants could all be materials for making undying weapons. They are definitely rare materials of high value."

Luo Feng was aware of this, but he would not take anything.

There were pioneers who had already attempted to do so!

Peng!

Luo Feng kicked the tree trunk. Judging by the impact created by his strong godly power crashing against the tree, Luo Feng could sense that the large tree merged as one with the vast land. From a single kick, his entire body was thrown into the air, and he landed quite a distance away, sprawled among the lush garden of flowers and greenery. He picked himself up.

"Truly..." he marveled. "All this foliage is merged as one with the original star. The intel mentioned that the plant life here was not easily damaged. Even if super-beings tried to cause damage intentionally, they would gather together and grow rapidly to recover their original form."

Luo Feng used his godly power to isolate himself from the surroundings. Then he ignited the godly power on his right leg. His power increased tremendously. A loud Hong! sounded as he stamped his foot into the ground, creating a large cloud of soil launched into the air. The impact had created a hole in the ground.

Luo Feng stood aside and watched wordlessly. A while later, the dispersed soil redistributed itself, and the hole was once again filled. There was no sign of the hold in the ground. Everything returned to its original form.

"Indeed," Luo Feng mused. "What an amazing original star."

On the original stars, any object that was seemingly "merged as one" with the original star—the earth, the foliage, and more—could be forcefully taken away, but only for a short moment. It would always return to its rightful spot very quickly. It was destined that any efforts to harvest these objects would prove futile. Only objects that were not merged as one with the original stars, like valuables that had just emerged, could be taken away.

Immersing himself in the amazing original star, Luo Feng

strolled through the forest, observing everything around him.

Chi!

Luo Feng's leg felt something hard and solid. Given his godly power, ordinary stones would have flown away, the uneven ground would be flattened.

"Huh?" Luo Feng looked down.

A sharp, silver edge was jutting out of the ground. Its tip was stained with mud. Luo Feng felt the object meticulously. There was something unique about it.

He blinked. "I can't be that lucky, can I?" He muttered to himself.

There were so many valuables in the original stars. Some treasures might appear without any indication; they could appear in places like the river and beneath the soil. Even while walking, one might chance upon a treasure... This sort of occurrence was not unprecedented.

"Chancing upon a valuable while walking?" Luo Feng squatted down and touched the sharp edge with his right hand. His sharp nails locked on firmly, and his godly power encircled the sharp silver edge as though it were a network of threads. He exerted some force.

Hua!

As though he was plucking a carrot, he pulled. The earth loosened, and a silver object with a squarish body, approximately a foot and a half long was pulled out of the ground. Luo Feng skimmed the object with his godly power, and all the mud was wiped off. A silver, square body with an exquisite cover inscribed with some ancient laws was revealed. Its aura was indistinct, but it was undoubtedly a treasure.

"Haha! No wonder Sir Nine Blade was willing to use ten treasures as a thank-you token just to borrow one of my true treasures!" said Luo Feng. He was all smiles. "On this original star, there are so

many treasures that I could chance upon one while walking."

Chancing upon a valuable while walking... Now, that was lucky! However, there were indeed many treasures on the original star. So long as one stayed there long enough, it would not be too difficult to obtain dozens or maybe even hundreds of these treasures. They could then be contributed to one's race in exchange for a series of treasures! Moreover, these treasures could also be disassembled into valuable materials that were normally difficult to find.

Upon disassembling a great volume of treasures, countless valuable materials could be gathered and reconstructed into an ordinary true treasure. Making an ordinary true treasure was no easy feat. There may have been only one being in the universe who could construct super true treasures such as Force Armor, Original Soul, and Yan Shen halberd, and that individual was none other than Sitting Mountain Guest.

Luo Feng's life imprint branded this square body; instantly, it became his belonging. A stream of information was transmitted into him, and the silver square body shrunk rapidly, as though it were a magic cube. Soon, it was no bigger than a peach.

"Ha! A seal type treasure that could contain a sealed space within itself. This is comparable to a sealed star." Luo Feng nodded with satisfaction. "The first treasure since I entered this original star, and on the first day... If I could obtain one every day, after hundreds and thousands of years, how many treasures will I have collected? Haha...!"

He knew that it was impossible. Nonetheless, it was fun to think about chancing upon treasures every day during leisurely strolls.

Luo Feng walked about the forest for half the day, but alas, not a single treasure was to be found. He roamed aimlessly and found an empty spot where he sat down cross-legged amidst the falling leaves. There, he waited patiently.

Time flew by. The original stars had stayed open for a full 1,000 centuries, affirming the fact that the chances of previous true treasures emerging were destined to be low. The occurrence was once in a blue moon. Eventually, a series of treasures and ordinary true treasures—normally common items—became highly sought after.

Finding treasures required a little luck. It had been two years since Luo Feng had first set foot on the original star, and he had yet to catch sight of a series of treasures. Although he did manage to sense their aura on three occasions, the auras were relatively weak to his senses. This showed how sharp the other great beings were.

The ones closest to the valuables when they appeared were the luckiest ones. During the three times when the series of treasures had appeared, Luo Feng was too far away. By the time he rushed over, the fight for the series of treasures had already ended.

"Luck! I don't even have a single series of treasures. It has been two years, and I have only obtained two treasures. What a shame!"

Luo Feng stood at the apex of the ancient forest and looked out into the distance. Two years for two treasures still would have been considered quite efficient. After all, life in the original star was fraught with constant risk.

Luo Feng was now disguised as a member of the Space Beast Alliance. As the Space Beast Alliance bore a mysterious, otherworldly aura, great beings of other races would usually steer clear from the great beings of this alliance. It had been two years, and Luo Feng—along with the Golden Horned Beast on his shoulder—had earned quite a reputation for themselves. At least, many great beings had come to know and remember them.

"The Humanity Alliance, the Demon Alliance, the Automaton Race Alliance, and the Bug Soldiers Alliance have all been engaged in violent fights," Luo Feng muttered to himself. "So long as there is a pretext for violence, battles are always a possibility."

The four pinnacle races were adjacent to one another. Hatred was being perpetually accumulated, and the battles in the original stars were always exceedingly violent.

Maybe Luo Feng was still too young to understand. Even though he had experienced an ambush by spies of the bug soldiers—which had led to the destruction of a planet—as well as an assassination attempt by Mud Swallowing Knight, his detest for the bug soldiers, the demon race, and the automaton race, was not intense to the point of being extreme, nor to the extent of insanity.

Luo Feng simply did not harbor such hatred in his heard, but great beings of the human race who had truly lived for a long time were different. They had lived too long and, as a result, had accumulated countless conflicts and excessive hatred for the other three pinnacle races... One fight followed another, building up their hatred bit by bit. It seemed that eventually, every man's hatred ran deep.

"I have been here for two years, yet never once have I engaged in battle," Luo Feng sighed to himself.

Just as he was feeling some self-pity, he detected a unique aura spreading out toward where he was. Now that he was more experienced, he was stunned. Immediately, he reacted.

"It's a series of treasures," he realized. "Or an ordinary true treasure! And this aura seems close!"

Luo Feng was excited. He hadn't been even remotely close to the treasures he had sensed the previous three times, but this time, it felt very close.

Sou!

Luo Feng's Mosha body ignited its godly power in a blink of the eye. At full speed, it shot off!

Hong!

It flew straight to the source of aura.

A huge being from the Prison Race—standing at a height of over 30 feet with his entire body ablaze with golden flame—could be seen with two other universe knights, each at least 300 feet tall. They had twelve pairs of black wings over their arc-backs with bodies covered with black scales.

"This aura is quite strong! It might be a series of treasures or possibly a true treasure!"

Together, they flew over to where the aura came from.

"The aura of an emerging treasure!"

"It's a treasure!"

The six different troops who happened to have been assembled in the region now rushed toward the source of the energy at top speed. Following the aura that was spreading out, troops of two or three universe knights came rushing over to the source of the aura as quickly as possible.

Chapter 1038: All Out

Luo Feng dashed towards the energy emanating in the distance.

The energy is strong, Luo Feng thought.

He was pleasantly surprised... and worried. He was happy because such a powerful energy source implied at least a top-tier set treasure or even an ordinary true treasure! However, he was worried because even if he could get to the valuable in the first place, he would draw a bloody fight!

"It seems that my first fight on an original star is drawing near..." Luo Feng said, his eyes glinted fiercely and coldly.

Xiu!

A creature appeared beside Mosha body. It was Remote Ocean body!

Remote Ocean body shrank to 30 feet and transformed into the shape of a Purple Pupa Beast in human form, complete with horns, gray scales, and a scorpion tail! Mosha body went into the world ring instantly.

"Fight combination!" Luo Feng's eyes glinted aggressively.

Luo Feng presumed that it was difficult to kill the Golden Horned Beast because of his enormous godly body with the Force Armor! Remote Ocean body hadn't been able to kill Pei Feng Knight even with self-destruction, and Golden Horned Beast body had the same level of godly body and amplification as Pei Feng Knight.

As for size, Golden Horned Beast was thousands of times larger than Pei Feng Knight! And his Force Armor could weaken material attacks by 99.99 percent.

With Force Armor, Golden Horned Beast is solid, Luo Feng thought. Besides, Golden Horned Beast has a powerful godly body, and Remote Ocean Body has the same amount of godly power as he

does... Remote Ocean body doesn't need to serve as godly power storage anymore.

Xiu! Xiu!

Remote Ocean Luo Feng flew into the sky with Golden Horned Beast on his shoulder. He flew across the forest and the plain and arrived above a swamp.

"It's there!" Luo Feng quickly sensed the origin of the energy and dove towards it. He found a black hilt sticking out of the water. "Only one?" Luo Feng said. He exhilarated. "It's a true treasure!"

If there were several pieces, they were a "set treasure." However, based on what Luo Feng observed, it had to be a true treasure!

"And I'm the first on here!"

Luo Feng raced toward the black hilt. At the same time, a towering creature made of rocks and engulfed in flames, as well as two twelve-winged great beings of the prison race, flew toward him. They could all clearly see the black hilt in the swamp and the blade revealing itself.

The three great beings were all excited. "It's a true treasure!" one of them screeched.

"Space Beast, put down the true treasure or die!" the being engulfed in flames roared.

But Luo Feng didn't pay him any mind. He put his hand on the black hilt and started to penetrate it with his godly power.

"Huh?" Luo Feng sensed that the black hilt and the swamp were combined as one.

Oh, no... he realized. It hasn't fully come into being yet.

Luo Feng was startled. This sort of thing happened to some precious valuables, especially true treasures. For instance, when a shrine gradually revealed itself, others couldn't get into the shrine and get the true treasure hidden inside until it completely revealed

itself. The same rule applied here. They needed to wait until the black blade completely surfaced from the water for it to recognize someone as its master.

"Hahaha...!" The three great beings were overjoyed upon seeing this. The towering being engulfed in flames guffawed. "Go away!"

Remote Ocean body and Golden Horned Beast body looked at the three great beings of the prison race and protested, "This is mine, prison race! Leave it or die!"

Hong!

The giant being engulfed in flames landed in the swamp. The swamp was only half a mile deep, and it was barely up to his ankles. The other two great beings of the prison race floated into the sky and glared at Luo Feng with their wings open.

"Leave it or die?" The flaming rock giant looked down at Luo Feng. "Are you seeking your own doom?"

Heng!

Luo Feng snorted.

Hong! Hong!

Remote Ocean body and Golden Horned Beast body started to enlarge themselves at the same time. Remote Ocean body, which was only 30 feet tall, became more than 5,500 miles tall! And Golden Horned Beast became 6,000 miles tall! According to the move "Deities of the World," the length of one's body wouldn't affect its power as long as it was not too large or too small. Remote Ocean body was more than 5,500 miles tall, and he was able to wield his pinnacle power!

Remote Ocean body stood while Golden Horned Beast body floated in the sky with his wings open. Now, it was their turn to look down at the three tiny beings.

Three tiny beings... The golden-flamed rock giant was around six

miles tall, while the two winged great beings were only 0.06 miles tall; they were indeed tiny compared to the massive creatures standing before them now.

Heng!

The Golden-Flamed and Rocked being looked up at the two gigantic creatures and snorted.

"No...!" The two black-winged great beings were terrified.

Size represented power, after all.

"Lai Ni," one of the black-winged great beings said. "Though Space Beasts are known for their size, an adult Golden Horned Beast is usually 600 miles long. There are, however, methods within the Space Beast Alliance to improve their genes. We've seen Golden Horned Beasts 6,000 miles long. But what's wrong with that Purple Pupa Beast? The largest we've seen is around 60 miles. How is this one so big?"

"Don't worry about that. What matter is, the bigger they are, the more difficult it is to kill them... On original stars, universe overlords usually act alone. Almost all those who cooperate with each other are senior universe knights. There are two of them while we have three! I'll deal with the Golden Horned Beast. You two deal with that Purple Pupa Beast. Let's get the true treasure together!"

"Okay."

"Don't get wrapped up in a long battle! They're enormous, and we'll be in a disadvantage if we do that."

Remote Ocean body was more than 5,500 miles long, and Golden Horned Beast was 6,000 miles long. They were blotting out the sky and land so that the three universe knights weren't even able to see the black blade.

Luo Feng concentrated on the black blade. It was gradually surfacing and was moments away from completely revealing itself.

I just have to make it through the waiting period, and then the true treasure will be mine, Luo Feng thought and looked down at the three tiny beings under him.

He had to be careful. Usually, universe overlords acted alone on original stars, and senior universe knights acted together. Three senior universe knights made for a mighty team. However, Luo Feng was still confident that he could persevere.

Senior universe knights! They are as powerful as Shi Huo Knight! I was like an ant in front of Shi Huo Knight before, whereas now, I can deal with three senior universe knights.

But, without realizing it, he was already standing among the supreme beings in the universe.

"Kill!"

All the three supreme beings started the attack.

"Golden Thread Aurora Mirror!"

"Law domain!"

"Merge! Golden Thread Aurora Domain!"

Golden Horned Beast bared its fangs and fueled Golden Thread Aurora Mirror by burning his godly power, after which the area of 60 million square miles around him was trapped in endless golden light.

"A domain type valuable!"

"Such strong resistance. It's at least a top-tier domain type treasure, if not a domain type true treasure."

"That Space Beast has a domain type treasure!" The three great beings were terrified, as that treasure was already as powerful as an ordinary true treasure. Though there were three of them, being suppressed by the domain type treasure placed them at less of an advantage.

"Space Beast, you're courting death!" the golden-flamed rock

giant roared and dashed at Golden Horned Beast like a streak of light, wielding a fiery hammer.

"Die, bastards of the prison race!" Golden Horned Beast yelled and waved his wings.

The golden Shi Wu Wing was tens of thousands of miles wide, and it swung toward the golden-flamed rock giant like two colossal blades.

"Star and Fire Roaring Sky!"

The wing rushed at the golden-flamed rock giant. Although Luo Feng's Moon Policy had not yet reached ultimate techniques, Luo Feng had begun improving it a long time ago. After all, he could wield one mystery in different ways, and although it took him a long time, the third move of Moon Policy could already beat all the 1,600 competitors Primal Chaos City Leader had set for him. That meant it was already a top-tier pinnacle technique. It was six or even seven times more powerful than when it was first created.

Blade technique was a super pinnacle technique—the weapon was a true treasure! And with godly body and amplification at universe-overlord level!

Although he was comparatively weaker in beast god conception, he wasn't afraid of senior universe knights at all!

"Star and Fire Roaring Sky, crash and burn and earth shattering!" Remote Ocean body shouted, standing beside the black blade and wearing Golden King Armor.

He performed the move under his burning godly power and spiritual force amplification technique. Thousands of shadows flew out of his chest, forming a towering beast god. The beast god roared and dashed at the two black-winged great beings.

The third move of Star Map—Star and Fire Roaring Sky, crash and burn and earth shattering!

Luo Feng had never performed this move before. The first time

he had performed it, he'd relied on Remote Ocean body.

Remote Ocean body and Golden Horned Beast body were both going all-out, now. And with Golden Thread Aurora Domain slowing his enemies down, they clashed wickedly with the three senior universe knights of prison race.

Chapter 1039: A Pair of Wings for a Shield

Hong!

The golden-flamed rock giant swung his hammer with all his strength, and the hammer flew at Golden Horned Beast with a thunderous rumble. The force within the Golden Thread Aurora Domain was rendered defenseless... One strike from this hammer and stars like the Star Traveller or the Neutron Star would shatter and be reduced to naught. Even the Black Hole would have crumbled beneath such a strike!

The golden-flamed rock giant growled as he deployed his strongest strike. The environment within the original star did not shatter, but it was not because the hammer was not powerful enough; it was because the environment within the original star had unique traits.

Peng!

The hammer collided with the golden light blade of a pair of wings.

With hands still grasping his hammer, the golden-flamed rock giant was thrown backward and propelled into the air where his rocky legs lost contact with solid ground. He was forcibly suspended in midair.

"That loathsome Space Beast!" the golden-flamed rock giant roared in rage.

"Crush the Prison race!" Golden Horned Beast transformed into a ray of light and made a turn back before landing again. The golden light blade sliced through the air, looking as if it could make mincemeat out of every obstacle in the way.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Strike after strike! The golden-flamed rock giant was not as agile as Golden Horned Beast with its Shi Wu Wings. Moreover, the

Golden Thread Aurora Domain had met with heavy resistance and was attacked under pressure.

Golden Horned Beast was enormous. Hence, his Shi Wu Wings could spread as wide as tens of thousands of miles. Should it flap one wing down, the golden-flamed rock giant being would not be able to hide even if it wanted to!

Remote Ocean Body was like the Dinghai Divine Needle as he stood before the black blade. While watching the two twelve-winged knights of the prison race in the distance, he was also manipulating the gigantic Beast God while it hunted down the two knights of the prison race.

Hong! Long! Long!

Beast God was roaring while racing in midair quick as a phantom. The moment the two black-winged knights made it slightly further away, the Beast God would no longer give chase.

The Beast God was tasked with guarding a certain area around the black blade... If the two knights of the prison race trespassed this area, they would be attacked! It was imperative to understand that the Beast God was a true treasure in the form of a spiritual force weapon and had an extremely swift flying speed. Now that it was coupled with Golden Thread Aurora Domain... the moment the two black-winged great beings of prison race set foot within this guarded area, they would be knocked out within a split second.

Peng!

A black-winged great being was sent flying out straightaway. The other black-winged great charging into that area from the opposite direction approached the gradually ascending black blade at top speed.

Roar!

Beast God let out a roar and set off in the opposite direction so

quickly that he left a trail behind him. Right away, he rammed into the black-winged great being with a loud crash, swatting it into the distance.

"Ah! What should we do? We can't force our way in!" said one of the black-winged beings.

The two twelve-black-wings great beings traveled far away enough while transmitting their message to the golden-flamed rock giant.

"That spiritual force weapon is way too fast! And they have a domain type treasure!"

"We have used up 3 percent of our godly bodies, yet that loathsome Purple Pupa Beast has not even used 1/1,000th of its godly body! We can't afford to go on like this."

The golden-flamed rock giant gave a thunderous roar of rage. He was at his wits' end. Although he was huge, the portion of the godly body he used up was small. He was aware that the Golden Horned Beast before him would use up an amount even smaller than he had. Even if he were to set his entire godly body ablaze, the Golden Horned Beast might not even have used up 1 percent of its godly body.

But the golden-flamed rock giant suddenly transmitted a confident response. "Hahaha! I can sense great beings of other races approaching. Fight a little while longer. These two Space Beasts will definitely feel flustered when the other beings arrive. That is when we seize our opportunity."

The two twelve-black-wings great beings scanned their surroundings, instantaneously feeling joyful.

As expected, two troops appeared coming from two different directions.

"Huh?" Remote Ocean body said, noticing the new arrivals. "That is a group from the Northern Territory Alliance—a total of three

universe knights. And the other group is from the Hong Alliance. They have two universe knights." Remote Ocean Luo Feng looked around and made a speedy judgment. "Given my current identity, the group from the Hong Alliance will see me only as one of the Space Beast Alliance... and they'll react accordingly."

There was no way he could bother himself with any other concerns. He had to deal with the three universe knights of the prison race while keeping an eye on the black blade that was gradually ascending from the ground.

Gradually, it arose... The entire tip of the black blade had nearly emerged.

"Almost there—it is going to come out fully soon!" Luo Feng was anxious and expectant. "Hurry, hurry, hurry! If I hope to stand any chance at all, it must be fully revealed before the other groups arrive..."

The two troops flew over quickly. Although the members from the Hong Alliance were not humans, they made their judgment quickly.

"Hahaha! It is a valuable. Definitely a true treasure."

"And still in the midst of being born! The treasure has yet to recognize its master. Hurry up."

"While the Space Beast group and the group from the prison race are engaged in a deadlock, we should quickly grab the treasure right out from under them."

Meanwhile, the three universe knights of the Northern Territory Alliance troop were thrilled, realizing they had been presented with a great opportunity. They took off for the treasure as though their lives depended on it.

The Northern Territory Alliance was said to be the alliance consisting of the greatest number of races in the universe. A tremendous number of races gathered as one, bringing the number

of universe knights within the Northern Territory Alliance to an extreme high. For example, in the open-air public square of the World of Glory of the Ancestral God School, the number of heirs from the Hong Alliance was merely in the thousands, while that of the Northern Territory Alliance was in the tens of thousands.

There was a sizable difference, meaning that within the original star, troops of universe knights from the Northern Territory Alliance were seen more than any other group. When compared with the six pinnacle races like the human race, the distribution of resources—like treasures for great beings of similar power—were fewer in number.

Out of the three universe knights of the Northern Territory Alliance, one was over 30 feet tall. He had purple-gold plates all over his body, and he flew toward the black blade at top speed. Upon careful observation, he started to show a hint of confusion.

"Huh?" he said. "That seems to be... Impossible! It can't be."

"Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!"

Luo Feng agonized with anxiety. The black blade may have ascended to its tip, but it was emerging much more slowly than the approach of the groups of beings flying toward it... The two troops of universe knights from the Hong Alliance and the Northern Territory Alliance were still approaching at a consistently high rate of speed, even though they were within the Golden Thread Aurora Domain.

"Hahaha! You can't make it!" The golden-flamed rock giant of the prison race laughed aloud. "Space Beast, you will not be able to get that true treasure!"

"It is not yours to claim!"

Golden Horned Beast let out a thunderous roar of rage.

Hong!

Golden Horned Beast waved its wings suddenly, immediately

turning back to the area surrounding the black blade.

"Hua!" Remote Ocean Luo Feng also took a step back to stand beside the black blade. "Come on!"

Remote Ocean body and Golden Horned Beast were both standing near the black blade, obviously guarding it with their lives! They just had to endure for a short while longer, and this true treasure would be theirs.

I would stand against greater than universe knights than all of you! Remote Ocean Luo Feng thought. Even if you were universe overlords, Golden Horned Beast has the Force Armor. It is fearless! My Remote Ocean body may be slightly weaker in terms of strength. The Golden King Armor can only be activated up to its second form, which means it could weaken the power of material attacks to 1/1,000. It may be weaker than Force Armor... but Remote Ocean body is huge. Defending with its sheer brute strength should be possible for a short while at least.

Remote Ocean body and Golden Horned Beast were like two mountains. One stood by the black blade while the other hovered above it to ward off any beings who dared to venture near.

Meanwhile, the groups from the Hong Alliance and the Northern Territory Alliance both realized that the other groups had appeared.

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

"Grab the true treasure!"

"Hurry up, the other five troops are arriving soon. We need to hurry."

Three groups—the Hong Alliance, the Northern Territory Alliance, and the prison race—comprised of eight senior universe knights. Plus, the Space Beast group was charging toward the center!

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The three troops transformed into rays of light simultaneously and charged.

"Ha!" Golden Horned Beast immediately spread its wings and stood at the forefront.

Hua! Hua!

Its wings suddenly increased in size. The Shi Wu Wings, being a true treasure, could change colors at will, and this time, they were a magnificent gold. They spread wide open without inhibition, expanding outward in all directions. They became gigantic, easily spreading over 100,000 miles in a mere instant. The monstrous pair of wings surrounded the black blade like a mother hen protecting her chicks. Anyone who wanted to grab the black blade would have to forcefully move those wings out of the way.

"Attack!"

"Hahaha! He actually thinks to resist us!"

"Kill him!"

The eight senior universe knights launched their attacks as one. One knight from the Hong Alliance held a flying wheel—an ordinary true treasure—and was exceptionally generous with his attacks. Numerous crashes sounded as attacks were thrown towards the golden wings.

Golden Horned Beast stood firmly within the swamp, its four strong limbs like heavenly pillars. The depths of the swamp were unable to even submerge its claws... Its wings were propped up high and mighty.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

The eight senior universe knights' joint effort boosted their power to the level of universe overlords. They struck repeatedly!

"I must sand with this bit of power...! " Golden Horned Beast said.

He stood his ground, stable as a mountain. Regardless of the number of strikes dealt, the Shi Wu Wings and the Force Armor combined to weaken each impact... With these treasures, combined with its gigantic godly body, warding off the attacks was a piece of cake.

The eight senior universe knights from the Northern Territory Alliance, the Hong Alliance, and the prison race instantly concluded that this situation was beyond their expectations.

"Those wings are a true treasure!"

"It must be a true treasure!"

"Few treasures can expand to such a size. No matter how big a treasure can be, to be jointly attacked by eight senior universe knights, the size should reduce, or it would disintegrate... That pair of wings must be a true treasure!"

Ordinary treasures could be destroyed by some universe overlords. Even for a top-tier treasure... Whether it shrank to ward off attacks or intentionally enlarged so that the impact of the attack would be weakened—no matter what it did, escaping unscathed was out of the question. Yet the combined attacks of eight senior universe knights proved futile against Golden Horned Beast.

At that moment, Golden Horned Beast and Remote Ocean body shifted their gazes over to the black blade. The tip of the black blade was finally out of the swamp, and it was now hovering over the spot where it had emerged. Its aura was now fully restrained. It seemed like an ordinary treasure.

"Treasure, come to me!" Golden Horned Beast gave a deep command.

Immediately, a trace of godly power headed for the black blade, ready to brand the blade with his life imprint.

Chapter 1040: Blade River Luo

Luo Feng infiltrated the black blade with a trace of his godly power and sealed his life imprint on it, making the blade recognize him as its owner.

"Huh?" Golden Horned Beast's eyes glinted with confusion. "What's going on? Why is there no information being transferred?"

Remote Ocean Luo Feng was also looking down at the black blade, perplexed. Usually, when a treasure or true treasure recognized someone as its owner, it would transfer information to the owner's mind. The information was generally a description of the weapon or the techniques used to utilize the valuables.

There were, of course, exceptions—like Star Map, Shi Wu Wing, and Tower Pearl. If the great being who created the valuable had left information behind, there would be information contained in the valuable. Tower Pearl was a part of Star Tower, and so it didn't contain any information. As for Star Map, it was an ordinary true treasure created by Zuo Shan Ke with a picture scroll and lots of seal stars.

That was why some true treasures and ordinary treasures didn't contain any information. However, according to the intel Kuang Zhou Knight had gathered, true treasures and ordinary treasures that came into being on original stars were bred by the universe. They were supposed to carry information innately. This one did not seem to have anything.

"Weird," Luo Feng was baffled.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

The eight senior universe knights attacked the wing of Golden Horned Beast relentlessly, disrupting Luo Feng's thoughts.

Sou!

Golden Horned Beast shrank its giant black blade and merged it

with his body.

Howl!

He howled, making the sky and land tremble. At the same time, the gigantic golden wing quickly reduced in size from hundreds of thousands of miles wide to tens of thousands of miles wide, and he revealed Golden Horned Beast and Remote Ocean body. The eight supreme beings were disappointed.

"The true treasure is taken!"

"It has recognized him as its master."

"Goddamn Space Beast... Let's go!"

They all glared at Remote Ocean body and Golden Horned Beast body. The three great beings of the prison race left first. The other five universe knights of the Hong Alliance and the Northern Territory Alliance were also upset and gave up on their hopes of claiming the valuable.

They all knew that they stood a chance if the valuable hadn't recognized him as its owner. However, the only way they could capture the valuable was to kill the Golden Horned Beast, and Golden Horned Beast was able to defend himself against all eight of them! If he wanted to flee, there was no way they could stop him.

They were all upset. The size of the Golden Horned Beast was what stopped them from taking the valuable by force.

"His godly body is too enormous, and our godly bodies might be burned out before we can kill him."

"We should've gotten here soon."

"The true treasure fell into the hands of Space Beasts."

"Haha! You guys are late!" Golden Horned Beast said in a hoarse voice.

"You just got lucky!"

"Let's go."

The three universe knights of Northern Territory Alliance and Hong Alliance left.

Golden Horned Beast body and Remote Ocean body watched them go. He saw one team after another coming here, following the energy signature of the true treasure.

"Go!"

Remote Ocean body shrank to 30 feet tall, and Golden Horned Beast shrank to around 300 feet long. Golden Horned Beast waved his wings with Remote Ocean body sitting on his back.

Sou!

"That space beast has got the valuable!" grumbled a new arrival.

"Let's go."

"We need to wait until next time."

"Is it a top-tier set treasure or an ordinary true treasure?"

The universe knights speculated about what had happened with their companions. They were all puzzled, but they had to leave. On the original stars, those who were closest to the valuables when they appeared were the luckiest ones. Here, great beings needed both power and luck.

The three universe knights of the Northern Territory Alliance were flying back to the place they inhabited, the apex of a small mountain.

"Those space beasts are indeed lucky."

"The Space Beast Alliance is mysterious and powerful. Those two have a domain type valuable, a wing true treasure, and now a black blade true treasure."

They were all talking among themselves, and the universe knight made of metal was ruminating.

"That... that pattern. It is that valuable!"

The purple-metal knight's eyes gleamed. He isolated them from the surroundings with his godly power and looked to the Strange Beast Knight with hundreds of soft dorsal fins around his mouth.

"Hundred Raccoon Knight," he said, "you have a body at the center of our alliance, right? Send a message to our alliance and tell them that we just found the godly blade of Blade River Luo."

"Blade River Luo?" Both universe knights were dazed.

Hundred Raccoon Knight's eyes glinted with excitement. "The legendary top-tier true treasure, Blade River Luo?"

Blade River Luo was the most attractive true treasure in a century after the original stars had opened.

A giant tomb came out from underground. It was the tomb of the blade: the Blade Tomb!

An ancient tablet on the Blade Tomb told that there were many godly blades and several ordinary true treasures. And the most precious of all were the components of Blade River Luo, which were made of a compass and nine godly blades. Once all the godly blades were integrated into the compass, it could become a boundless blade river, and it was omnipotent.

If all the nine blades merged into one, the power was even more terrific. It was a domain type treasure, but it had the attacking power of a pinnacle true treasure. The compass itself was already a domain type ordinary true treasure! Its power could be improved with one blade blending in; the more the godly blades inside the compass, the more powerful the compass would become. It would reach the perfect status once all the godly blades merged with it.

It was such a superb true treasure. The last time the compass showed itself, it only carried one black blade.

"A godly blade of Blade River Luo? Where did we find it?" Hundred Raccoon Knight asked.

"Where were we?" The moment the other universe knight talked, the purple-metal universe knight said, "It's the true treasure—the black blade the two Space Beasts obtained! I've seen the photos of Blade River Luo, and the black blade we just saw was exactly the same as the blade in the photos!"

Black Raccoon Knight was startled.

"Go! Go tell our alliance!" The purple-metal knight shouted.

"Sure!" Hundred Raccoon Knight nodded.

Many supreme beings who entered the original stars had left their clone with their own race, but there were also some who left their original bodies behind! Clones were able to send simple messages, but they weren't capable of dealing with important issues.

"My clone has entered the center of our alliance."

"A universe master is meeting me," Hundred Raccoon Knight murmured.

After a long while...

"I've told the universe master what happened, and I've replicated the shape of the black blade using my mind. The universe master I spoke with confirmed that it's indeed a component of Blade River Luo! There are few true treasures, and it's almost impossible to have true treasures of the same pattern and come into being on the original stars in such a short period of time... It's got to be a godly blade of Blade River Luo."

"The universe master asked us not to take any actions. He has told some universe overlords closest to this original star and Fu Mo Master to come here. And he has marked our contribution."

Hundred Raccoon looked at his companions, and they all smiled.

The Northern Territory Alliance immediately arranged great beings to go to the original star Luo Feng was staying on.

Inside the virtual universe, in an open-air bar, many universe knights of the Hong Alliance City gathered. Almost all the great beings who entered original stars left clones, and they used them to connect to the virtual universe... This was how they conveyed information.

"Another true treasure showed up. See? It's this one. I saw it myself."

"What true treasure?"

"Come here and see!"

"On which original star?"

Everyone was interested in what happened on the original stars.

"Look, this is the photo of it." A bald-headed, golden-eyed great being covered with body hair was showing everyone a photo. "This true treasure surfaced from the swamp. Unfortunately, I arrived late, and the true treasure was captured by two great beings of the Space Beast Alliance."

"A true treasure!"

"What a pity. You can't get the true treasure even it's right in front of you, and what's worse, it was taken by the Space Beast Alliance."

"What could I do?" the bald-headed universe knight said. "Both great beings of the Space Beast Alliance have godly bodies of around 6,000 miles long... Do you really think I can still get it back? Even universe overlords would have a hard time facing such gigantic bodies!"

"Isn't this the godly blade of Blade River Luo?"

"Yeah! It's the godly blade of Blade River Luo!"

Everyone was thrilled.

Meanwhile, Luo Feng was walking toward the open-air bar.

So strange, he thought. The valuable on the original star has already recognized me as its master, but it still hasn't sent me any information.

Luo Feng was bewildered, and thus he connected to the virtual universe and came to the place where the great beings of Hong Alliance shared information. He wanted to ask some of his friends about it.

"Kuang Zhou Knight," Luo Feng shouted when he saw Kuang Zhou Knight.

Kuang Zhou turned toward him and beamed. "Blade River!"

Luo Feng walked towards him, smiling. Suddenly, he frowned as a being caught his attention.

"It's him...!"

Luo Feng recognized that bald universe knight. It was one of the two universe knights of the Hong Alliance who had attacked him.

Chapter 1041: Escape

When Luo Feng's mind was still in the virtual universe, three great beings gathered in the forest under the whirlpool portal on the original star where Luo Feng was staying.

"We arrived here as fast as we could under the order of our alliance," said one of them. "It seems we're the first ones to arrive."

"Yes," replied another. "Once those space beasts find out that the godly black blade is a part of Blade River Luo, they'll all rush to that whirlpool portal. If they succeed, they can do teleportation and god country transportation, and we can't catch them anymore. We must safeguard this place and stop them from doing that!"

"So, we'll just wait here?" the third one said in a deep voice. "There will be a group of universe overlords arriving here, and Fu Mo Master may also arrive. That's only a godly blade of Blade River Luo. How many contribution points do you think we can earn? In my opinion, Wang Jia Knight can guard this place while Bei Feng Knight and I attack him first. Bei Feng Knight and I together could kill those space beasts."

"Well..."

"Why're you still hesitating?" said the one with the deep, low voice. "Other universe overlords will arrive soon. Are you on board, Bei Feng Knight?"

"I am," said a timid voice.

"Okay. I'm on board too, but remember, if we get the godly blade, we need to divide the contribution points equitably among us three."

"Of course."

They looked at each other and smiled.

Sou! Sou!

Two creatures flew up in the sky. One of them was around 100 feet tall. He was a repulsive creature with three horns on his head and eyes like a hawk. He had thick, sturdy arms, and he grasped an ancient spear with three bloodstains on the tip.

As for the other one, he was around 30 feet tall and was entirely enveloped by a black cape. Even his face was covered by a black mask.

"Bei Feng Knight, you can attack his soul first..." said the three-horned knight holding the ancient spear. "If you can't kill them directly, you can affect them. Then I'll engage in close combat with them with my burning godly body, my ultimate techniques, and my Qi Blood Spear...! Even if the space beasts are wearing ordinary true treasure armor, my terrific attack can rival that from a universe master! Their armor might only be able to weaken the attack to 1/1,000th or even 1/100th."

"Your Qi Blood Spear is a might senior true treasure," said Bei Feng Knight, smiling behind his black mask and black cape. "We'll definitely succeed."

Qi Blood Palace Leader was a renowned universe overlord in the Northern Territory Alliance. He had three true treasures, and the weapon he used for close-quarters combat was a senior true treasure! Together with his close-quarters combat techniques, he could even fight with a universe master for a short time. Once he attacked with his full strength, it would surpass the limit of an ordinary true treasure!

Within the limit, the third form of an ordinary true treasure armor could weaken the material attack by 99.99 percent! However, once the attack surpassed the limit of the true treasure, its function would sharply decline and could only weaken it to 1/1,000th, 1/100th, 1/10th. It might even break! That was why ordinary true treasures were disdained by universe masters.

"Although they have larger godly bodies, I can kill them with my

Qi Blood Spear by attacking them several times." Qi Blood Palace Leader transmitted the voice while flying at high speed. "Bei Feng Knight, just use your soul attack to stop them from running away. I heard that the Golden Horned Beast has a wing true treasure."

"Just leave it to me."

Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader raced toward Luo Feng like two flashes of light.

Luo Feng was the first one to arrive at the birthplace where the black blade unveiled itself, so the Northern Territory Alliance quickly extrapolated that Luo Feng must be staying in an area close to the birthplace. That was how Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader knew where they should be heading.

Inside the virtual universe.

Luo Feng looked at the bald universe knight in the distance, shocked by what he saw.

"Him? One of the two universe knights from the Hong Alliance who fought against us for the valuable?"

At the same time, a large group of universe knights gathered around that bald universe knight. They seemed to be engaged in an exciting conversation. Luo Feng listened in, hearing every word that was being said.

"Blade River Luo!"

"A godly blade of Blade River Luo! Rumor has it that the compass of Blade River Luo was obtained by a universe master of the Thorn Ring Alliance! That universe master... He must be dying to acquire other blades and will be willing to get the blades at an extremely high cost."

"It looks like an ordinary true treasure, but it's at least as valuable as a senior true treasure."

"That's right. Blade River Luo will be perfect only when all the

blades are gathered, and as long as there's one blade hiding with us, the Hong Alliance, the Thorn Ring Alliance will get it back."

"What a shame. Those two space beasts got it."

A godly blade of Blade River Luo? thought Luo Feng in surprise. Taken by two space beasts?

"Unfortunately, I was late," said the bald universe knight. He shook his head. The picture of the black blade was still floating in front of him. "Otherwise, I would've got the godly blade."

Luo Feng was amazed. God! The black godly blade he had obtained was a godly blade of Blade River Luo...? Luo Feng was aware of its power and force based on some brief descriptions; it was a top-tier domain type true treasure, and it had the attacking power of that of a pinnacle true treasure! It was at least as valuable as Thousand Treasures River after all the blades merged with the compass.

A voice came from afar.

"Quick! Tell us where the godly blade unveiled itself."

"Yes! Tell us now! We'll be there as soon as possible!"

"We can kill those space beasts and get the godly blade together, after which the Thorn Ring Alliance will be willing to pay a high price for it. We can also give it to our alliance, and it will definitely give us many contribution points."

I need to flee...! Luo Feng thought, suddenly realizing that he was in great danger.

"Blade River!" Kuang Zhou Knight said and ran toward him.

"I have some issues to deal with right now, Kuang Zhou Knight," said Luo Feng. "I'll talk to you later."

Luo Feng then disappeared, which bewildered Kuang Zhou Knight.

In the forest on the original star where Luo Feng was staying.

"Quick, quick, quick!" said Luo Feng.

Remote Ocean Luo Feng and the Golden Horned Beast immediately stood up.

"Many great beings from Hong Alliance will gather soon," he said. "I need to leave now. The prison race, the Hong Alliance, and the Northern Territory Alliance all saw the black blade when I got the valuable. Great beings from the Hong Alliance have now started to gather. They might not have enough time to stop me, but those from the Northern Territory Alliance and the prison race will be here very soon."

Remote Ocean Luo Feng shrank to six feet tall and sat on Golden Horned Beast's back. Escape was his only option this time.

The Golden Horned Beast was speedy when it came to fleeing, and he was the best at defending himself against dangers.

Sou!

The Golden Horned Beast became 30 feet long and opened his wing. He burned his godly power and flew.

Under the burning godly power and the true treasure Shi Wu Wing, he zoomed like a beam of golden light.

At that moment, two universe overlords—Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight of the Northern Territory Alliance—were flying toward him. The original star was enormous. Traveling at light speed, it took almost an hour to fly from the whirlpool portal to the forest where Luo Feng stayed. That was why Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight weren't there yet. As a matter of fact, the great beings from the Northern Territory Alliance were all rushing toward the original star Luo Feng was staying on!

Including Fu Mo Master...

However, even Fu Mo Master had to fly toward the whirlpool portal slowly. Each original star was identical, having a diameter of 60 billion miles. Even someone flying at light speed, he could

only travel at 6 billion miles in an hour, meaning it would take a long time if they were far from the whirlpool. The great beings gathered together by the Northern Territory Alliance were already rushing there as fast as they could.

Finally, Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight saw it.

"Look, it's the golden light!"

"It's that Golden Horned Beast."

They were racing toward Luo Feng from the whirlpool while Luo Feng rushed to the whirlpool! Naturally, they could see each other midway!

Both Remote Ocean body and the Golden Horned Beast saw those two flashes of light.

"Huh? They might be some great beings from other races, but it's unlikely that they're here to come after me... How is it possible that they're that fast? Oh well. I'll just run to another original star later."

Sou!

The Golden Horned Beast kept flying, and he sometimes turned to keep the distance from those two traces of light.

Hu! Hu!

The two great forces made a sharp turn and got closer to him.

"No! They are after me!"

As soon as Luo Feng realized they were coming after him, he recognized them.

"The one with three horns... It's Qi Blood Palace Leader from the Northern Territory Alliance! And it's Bei Feng Knight beside him!"

Luo Feng immediately put his Remote Ocean body back into his world ring. Both Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight were universe overlords. And they were far from ordinary universe

overlords!

Generally, universe knights who reached the pinnacle level in law comprehension and technique creation and could rival most mediocre universe masters were considered universe overlords. However... Universe overlords who had ordinary true treasures and those who had the senior treasures were at very different levels! Additionally, a human universe overlord was different from a universe overlord that was a special life form with a life gene level of 8,000 times.

As for Qi Blood Palace Leader, he had a senior true treasure! And Bei Feng Knight was a universe overlord proficient in soul attack!

"Space beasts," said a mild voice, "there's no way you can run away!"

A deep voice immediately added, "Give us the blade."

Chapter 1042: Qi Blood Spear

Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight were known not to be trifled with.

Hu!

Luo Feng quickly waved his golden wings and flew off in another direction.

"I didn't expect to be discovered so soon!" he muttered. "The whirlpool portal to the outside is likely to have been discovered already. If I go there, I'll be walking into a trap. Hmm... Well, I'll just go to another original star through another whirlpool portal!"

Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight looked at him indifferently. Apparently, everything was under their control.

"It's your turn," Qi Blood Palace Leader said.

Bei Feng looked at Luo Feng in the distance. His eyes glinted.

Suddenly, the flow of time surrounding him twisted. An invisible soul attack immediately caught Golden Horned Beast and penetrated his body. It quickly started to consume his godly power. Each part of his godly power contained a soul imprint, meaning Luo Feng would be doomed if he was eroded.

"Seal!"

Power Pearl let out countless threads and connected the entire godly body instantly.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The soul erosion assaulted his soul. However, Luo Feng had a mighty willpower in addition to a Tower Pearl to guard it. Soul erosion couldn't affect Luo Feng at all.

Bei Feng Knight looked contentedly at Golden Horned Beast, flying in one direction and slowing down because of the resistance. He transmitted his voice to Qi Blood Palace Leader.

"I don't think I successfully eroded his soul," he said, "but he must have been affected when he tried to defend himself from my soul attack. Now, it's your turn."

"Haha! Just wait and see," Qi Blood Palace Leader said.

He charged at Golden Horned Beast like a flash of light. Bei Feng Knight was following him.

"Golden Horned Beast!" Qi Blood Palace Leader called out as he raised the ancient spear in his hand. The three blood stains on the tip glowed with countless bloody law engravings.

Qi Blood Palace Leader emanated bloody energy. His eyes turned red, and he quickly pressed on toward Golden Horned Beast.

"Break!"

Qi Blood Palace Leader growled and burned his godly power. At the same time, a huge amount of godly power was infused into his spear. He waved his spear fiercely.

Pu!

The spear pierced toward Golden Horned Beast, who just noticed it and tried to close his wings to protect himself.

Jiang!

The spear was so forceful that the space it passed through was twisted wickedly, forming visible space ripples. It punctured the wing of Golden Horned Beat.

Peng!

This weapon was mighty. Golden Horned Beast bounced away under the force of the shock wave. It was like he'd been hit by a planet.

"Go! Don't let him escape!" Qi Blood Palace Leader said.

Sou! Sou!

Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Knight chased after Golden Horned

Beast.

So powerful! Golden Horned Beast thought after the blast. He could feel the extent of his injury. I pretended to be affected because I wanted to test the power of the terrific spear. No wonder it's so famous. Even my Shi Wu Wing didn't help to resist it.

Luo Feng already knew that the more powerful an attack was, the less useful an ordinary true treasure armor would be against it. Shi Wu Wing was a flying true treasure. Although the wing could be utilized as a shield, it was, after all, inferior to real armor type true treasures! Luo Feng speculated that Shi Wu Wing only weakened the attack by half, while Force Armor weakened it by 99.99 percent! Together, Golden Horned Beast bore one-20,000th of the power of the Qi Blood Spear!

"That was like a drill!" said Luo Feng. "The power still entered my godly body after piercing through Shi Wu Wing and Force Armor until it was annihilated by my godly body completely." Luo Feng was startled. "Regardless, I was still injured."

Although the injury was nothing given the enormous godly body, the Golden Horned Beast had been injured. Luo Feng was still in shock.

If it hadn't been for the Force Armor... If he had only been wearing an ordinary true treasure armor... He could only drive the second form. If that had been the case, it would have been lucky if that armor could weaken the attack to one-tenth its original strength.

One-20,000th compared to one-tenth—a difference of 2,000 times! That meant that if someone was over 1,000 times stronger than the other, he could annihilate his enemy with one move without consuming any energy! For instance, when a pinnacle emperor wanted to kill an undying fighter, he could easily do so without consuming any of his godly power.

"What? Why is his still so powerful?" Qi Blood Palace Leader said.

He was shocked. "Even if he wielded the third form of an ordinary true treasure armor, he could, at most, only weaken the power by 99 percent. I performed my ultimate technique by consuming almost one-1,000th of my godly body and using Qi Blood Spear. He should have been severely injured!"

Xiu!

Golden Horned Beast waved his wing and sped up.

"Too fast!" Qi Blood Palace Leader said. "Bei Feng Knight, hurry! Stop him!"

"Leave it to me!" Bei Feng Knight said as he looked up at Golden Horned Beast.

He performed his soul attack again, attempting to affect Golden Horned Beast. However, instead of slowing down, Golden Horned Beast kept speeding up, nearly hitting lightspeed.

"He's not affected?" Bei Feng Knight was amazed.

"We've been tricked!" Qi Blood Palace Leader said, transmitting his voice. "He wasn't affected at all. He deliberately withstood my attack to demonstrate his enormous defending power... Rat bastard! He was insulting me! Insulting me! Stop him, Bei Feng Knight! I'll teach him the consequences for insulting me!"

Qi Blood Palace Leader roared hoarsely. His eyes glinted with bloodthirstiness. Ever since obtaining his Qi Blood Spear, he had become more and more ferocious. He was usually able to control it, but when he was triggered, he would occasionally go mad... And he was the most terrifying when he went mad.

Bei Feng Knight looked at Golden Horned Beast from afar and waved his hands.

Sou!

30,000 blade daggers showed up and flew toward the Golden Horned Beast. It was a spiritual force true treasure Bei Feng Knight

owned, and as a great being proficient in soul attack, he was also good at using spiritual weapons.

Even the speed of a great being couldn't compare with that of a spiritual force weapon. The spiritual weapons kept drawing near. After a short while, they surrounded Luo Feng.

"No!" the Golden Horned Beast said. He knew he was in trouble when he saw tens of thousands of shadows flying toward him. "Wing cap!"

Golden Horned Beast opened his golden wing. It immediately grew larger and blocked most of the black daggers. Some of them pierced through the belly of the Golden Horned Beast and kept hitting his body.

Golden Horned Beast body slowed down sharply as Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader approached.

"Damn you two! Still chasing!" he said.

I have Force Armor to protect me! They really think they can hurt me? I pretended to be affected by the soul attack because I wanted to feel the power of the legendary Qi Blood Spear. Otherwise, they wouldn't have even had a chance to injure me!

"You want to stop me by using a spiritual force weapon?" he said. "If I use Golden Thread Aurora Mirror, it'll have a much stronger resistance power than your spiritual force weapon."

Golden Horned Beast body looked back coldly. He didn't even consider Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight to be a threat. Though he was far inferior when it came to attacking power, his Force Armor and the enormous godly could make Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader despair. He only wanted to test the power of Qi Blood Spear, and now he was leaving.

Regardless, I need to get rid of those two, he thought. Otherwise, my plan will be seen through. I'll teach them a lesson first.

Hu!

Golden Horned Beast body growled and waved his wing.

Hua!

He turned back and dashed at Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader. Qi Blood Palace Leader was exhilarated seeing this, and he shouted, "That stupid Golden Horned Beast wanted to die! I'll happily satisfy his wish!"

Hong!

Qi Blood Palace Leader burned his godly body and raced toward Golden Horned Beast body.

Hou!

Golden Horned Beast's wing struck out like blades.

"Hahaha...!"

Bloody light flashed across the eyes of Qi Blood Palace Leader, and his Qi Blood Spear was covered with bloody light as well. He had gone completely insane! It was like two stars hitting each other!

Hong!

The space trembled. Golden Horned Beast body clashed against Qi Blood Palace Leader with his sharp wing again and again while Qi Blood Palace Leader kept dodging it. At the same time, he wielded his spear unrelentingly. The way he wielded his spear was strange. It went faster and faster, and his godly body became more and more forceful.

Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu!

They fought each other fiercely for several seconds.

Qi Blood Palace Leader backed down first. The bloody light in his eyes had already dissipated, and he was not nearly as predatory as before.

"What happened, Qi Blood?" Bei Feng Knight asked as he flew

toward him. "Even your ultimate technique is not working? Your 'Thirteen Spear' uses the special techniques contained in Qi Blood Spear and the burning godly body. You said before that you need to burn more and more of your godly body and few universe overlords can withstand the Thirteen Spear."

Thirteen Spear... When the spear attacked the first time, it only consumed one-1,000th of the godly body, but the more it attacked, the more energy it consumed. And after the spear attacked 13 times, it consumed 9 percent of his godly body!

"What? What?" Qi Blood Palace Leader's eyes flared with shock and anger. "Impossible! Impossible! I lost 9 percent of my godly body but still couldn't weaken his force?"

Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader glared at Golden Horned Beast. Golden Horned Beast looked back at them and growled. At the same time, the vigorous Golden Thread Aurora Domain enveloped the hundreds of millions of square miles around them. Bei Feng Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader were completely trapped.

"It's a domain type valuable!"

Sou!

Golden Horned Beast body waved his wing and flew away from the endless golden thread auroras and muttered, "Lesson taught. Got to go now."

For what it's worth, this Qi Blood Palace Leader is impressive. He was able to consume one-10,000th of my godly body even with my Force Armor protecting me. If I were a smaller-sized universe overlord, I might have been annihilated.

Chapter 1043: Superpowers that Should Not Be Underestimated

In the sky above the plain, Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight gazed at each other with fright and solemness.

"Impressive." Bei Feng Knight said with his mild voice. "That great being from Space Beast Alliance must have a domain type treasure and a flying type true treasure. As for the armor he uses, it must be a senior true treasure!"

"Yes! It's got to be a senior true treasure, and the third form has been triggered," Qi Blood Palace Leader said in a deep voice. "If it were only an ordinary true treasure, he wouldn't have defended against my Qi Blood Spear so easily."

They exchanged eye contact. They were in trouble!

A senior true treasure in its third form, together with that enormous godly body... This was a combination that could make universe overlords tremble.

The more powerful a great being was, the more demeaning it was to fall. It was difficult for universe overlords to die, as even if they couldn't fight against their enemies, they could still escape... And as for those with senior true treasure armor that was able to weaken the power of an attack by 99.99 percent, it was almost impossible to kill them, especially if they also had enormous godly bodies. Unless, of course, the power gap was significant, or they were attacked by universe masters or universe overlords who were special life forms.

"We can't do anything about it," Bei Feng Knight continued in his mild voice. "Besides, he was alerted to what just happened. Our arrangement might not work anymore."

"What should we do, then?" Qi Blood Palace Leader asked.

"First of all, we can't admit that we fought that Golden Horned

Beast," Bei Feng Knight said. "No great beings saw us, and nobody will know if we don't tell anyone. Secondly, we'll follow the order from our alliance. A universe master is making arrangements, and there are members of our alliance sent to the whirlpool portals close to the birthplace of that godly blade. Fu Mo Master will come here himself later, and that Golden Horned Beast won't be able to run away."

Qi Blood Palace Leader nodded. The Northern Territory Alliance was one of the strongest powers in the universe, and few could get away from the blockade.

******

Inside an ancient forest on the original star, Golden Horned Beast hid. His eyes gleamed anxiously.

"What should we do?"

"The original plan won't work now."

Luo Feng had known about the godly blade of Blade River Luo in the virtual universe previously. He decided to run right after that, and he chose to run to the whirlpool portal!

Based on Luo Feng's original plan, he would fly to the whirlpool portal first, and when he almost arrived, he would temporarily separate the Golden Horned Beast body, Mosha body, and Remote Ocean body. The Golden Horned Beast would transfer all the valuables to Mosha body, who would carry Remote Ocean body and hide by camouflaging himself as mud. Then the Golden Horned Beast would try to pass the whirlpool portal!

If he succeeded, Mosha body would follow. If he failed, he would self-destruct. At the same time, the original earthling body of Luo Feng would seek help from Primal Chaos City Leader through the virtual universe!

The whirlpool portal was the closest to human territory. After Primal Chaos City Leader arrived, he could take Luo Feng away

with his power.

The plan may have been simple, but it was also direct and efficient. However, the fight between Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight had made Luo Feng change his mind.

They both flew here to look for me, thought Luo Feng, which means the Northern Territory Alliance is fast... Perhaps the universe knights from the Northern Territory Alliance recognized the blade when it unveiled itself.

He could speculate from his combat with Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight that the Northern Territory Alliance had made arrangements for this a long time ago. The universe master from the Northern Territory Alliance was now on his way, and he might arrive sooner than Primal Chaos City Leader...

"It'll be a slaughter if I try to run to the whirlpool portal now," said Luo Feng. "I'm not comfortable with this plan... But what should I do, then? Should I go to other whirlpool portals? There are 10,081 whirlpool portals on one original star, and each of them is hundreds of millions of miles away from each other. It would normally take more than half an hour to fly from one portal to another."

It would take him around 15 minutes to fly from the whirlpool portal closest to him.

"If the arrangements made by the Northern Territory Alliance were as meticulous as I suspect, there will probably be guards at the whirlpool portals closest to the birthplace of the godly blade." Luo Feng shook his head. "If I go there, it'll be running into a trap."

It was dangerous for him to go to any of the whirlpool portals connecting the outside world, regardless of the distance! Flying to the whirlpool portals in the distance was out of the question. The universe master would have arrived by the time he made it there. The universe master could control space and time, and he could suppress his enemies even if the enemies were far from them.

"How about Mosha body's inherited technique, 'replication'?"

But Luo Feng shook his head again. Mosha body was from one of the ordinary races, and the inherited technique was just a lower-tier technique. Although it was strange and unique, it could be defeated.

The Northern Territory Alliance was one of the top nine powers in the universe, and once it had finished its arrangements... It would be almost impossible for Luo Feng to get away!

"I have to turn to my teacher now," Luo Feng concluded.

******

At the apex of Thunder Island in the virtual universe, Primal Chaos City Leader's palace was enveloped by mist.

Luo Feng stepped into the palace and shouted respectfully, "Teacher!"

A figure in a golden cape walked out. "Luo Feng," said Primal Chaos City Leader, smiling at Luo Feng. "You should be on the original star now. What are you here for?"

"I have an emergency," Luo Feng said. He hesitated. "I sent my Golden Horned Beast body and my Mosha body to the original star."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded and listened. He surely already knew this, as the original earthling body was in Thousand Treasures River.

"I happened to get a component of Blade River Luo," Luo Feng said.

"Oh...! That was you?" Primal Chaos City Leader was thrilled and laughed. "I just got the news that two space beasts from the Space Beast Alliance got the component... I was thinking that if that component could fall into the hands of us humans, it would be important leverage against the Thorn Ring Alliance."

"Yes, but I'm in big trouble now. The Northern Territory Alliance also knows about it, and it's started to prepare to attack me."

Primal Chaos City Leader frowned. "Tell me more."

"Yes, teacher."

Luo Feng started to elaborate. He mentioned Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight by name.

"You weren't hurt by them?" Primal Chaos City Leader said, looking at Luo Feng in shock.

Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight were renowned universe overlords who represented the power of ordinary universe overlords! Primal Chaos City Leader was thrilled that Luo Feng had been able to defend against him. Instantly, he speculated that his disciple Luo Feng must have a defending true treasure and that it might be a senior true treasure like a senior true treasure armor!

However, he didn't ask Luo Feng directly. He had known for a long time that Luo Feng kept many secrets, like the exceptional power of his undying godly body, which was better than those of many universe knights. Primal Chaos City Leader had seen Luo Feng become undying, as well as the scene he had caused when the origin law arrived! Besides, Luo Feng had become undying within Thousand Treasures River, and his control on space and time told Primal Chaos City Leader that Luo Feng's godly body was stronger than that of some universe knights.

Primal Chaos City Leader didn't ask any further questions.

Perhaps my disciple got lucky, he thought. Perhaps he met an omnipotent being. Perhaps it's before the Grand Nirvana Period...

Whatever the reason, Primal Chaos City Leader was happy to see it. He didn't care what happened to his disciple, as long as he could get stronger. The more powerful Luo Feng became, the more likely that a new pillar for humans would be born.

"I'm still not as good as Qi Blood Palace Leader when it comes to combat," said Luo Feng. "I survived because of my godly body."

"Godly bodies are also part of your strength," Primal Chaos City Leader said.

Luo Feng quickly replied, "Teacher, you must understand by now. Those great beings from the Northern Territory Alliance are coming after me. What should I do? I'll be in danger no matter which portal I go to. Please, teacher, would you help me out?"

"You're smart enough not to make such a decision by yourself." Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "You would be caught and killed without help, now. The Northern Territory Alliance is a rival of our alliance. And they have more great beings and races! They have all sorts of special life forms and races who have inherited techniques. You won't be able to defend yourself against them. Your inherited technique 'replication' is an impressive hiding skill. Only universe masters controlling space and time can see through your disguising."

Luo Feng nodded. Control over space and time was indeed impressive, and domain and replication would both be rendered useless. As for his inherited technique "strengthen," his godly body amplification could hit 100 times at most, and it would not be helpful.

Inherited techniques were effective only when one's power was weak. When one became a universe master, only a few inherited techniques were still useful. However, Luo Feng had achieved a perfect life gene level, and the universe had bestowed him with one of the top-tier inherited techniques, "I Am the Universe."

"Inherited techniques can be cracked by other inherited techniques," Primal Chaos City Leader continued. "There are all sorts of inherited techniques in the universe, and some might even be inherited techniques bestowed by the universe. There are different levels of inherited techniques, and naturally, they have

different levels of power and usage. Some of them counteract each other. Some of them are similar to each other. However, the more powerful you become, the less useful those inherited techniques will be."

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled and added, "For instance, the soul attack Bark Mirror Emperor has was an inherited technique, but any sort of soul attacks from universe masters are much weaker than that."

Luo Feng nodded.

"The Northern Territory has set you up, and there's no way that you can use your techniques to break out." Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head. "You've underestimated its power."

"Then what should I do?" Luo Feng said.

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "I have my ways."

Chapter 1044: A Meeting on the Original Stars

"Teacher, would you like to give me some advice?" Luo Feng asked. He listened carefully.

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "The Northern Territory Alliance might have guards in front of every whirlpool portal, which means what you need to do is not get close to any whirlpool portal!"

Luo Feng was dazed, but he understood what his teacher was implying. "Teacher, do you mean... That I should just wander across original stars and stay away from any whirlpool portal?"

"Yes." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Stay away from any whirlpool portal and the place where the godly blade unveiled itself. Then those universe overlords will find it difficult to meet you. The only way to catch you is to wait for the arrival of a universe master of the Northern Territory Alliance."

Luo Feng nodded. It would be safe for him not to go to the whirlpool portal. However, a universe master of the opposition alliance would arrive, after which he could only wait to be captured.

"Your disguise is useless in front of a universe master," Primal Chaos City Leader added. "You don't need a disguise. All you need to do is separate your Golden Horned Beast body and your Remote Ocean body. Leave all your valuables with Remote Ocean body. As for universe masters of the Northern Territory Alliance, they'll only search for those two Space Beasts, and they won't be able to recognize your Remote Ocean body even if they see it. There are universe knights of all races on the original stars. You'll be identified in you camouflage, but your Remote Ocean body doesn't need it."

Luo Feng smiled.

"Even if he kills Golden Horned Beast body, he won't be able to find any valuables," Primal Chaos City Leader went on. "He'll then start to inspect all the great beings on the original stars. But he won't dare to be reckless. As long as you separate your bodies, you can earn yourself enough time. I'll arrive by then. All you need to do is to survive until I arrive at the original stars."

Luo Feng nodded. "I understand, teacher."

It was plain and simple. All Luo Feng had to do was stall his enemies and not go near the whirlpool portals! He would be safe when Primal Chaos City Leader arrived! It was a simple plan—so simple that there were few flaws.

"Go," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Remember what I said. Besides, the universe master of the Northern Territory Alliance might get there before I do. Don't give the plan away after he arrives."

"I understand," Luo Feng said, nodding.

Within the Thousand Treasures River of the Primal Region, human territory.

Hong! Long! Long!

Thousand Treasures River vanished and transformed into a shirt, covering the towering Primal Chaos City Leader who now stood over 6,000 miles tall. He carried a rugged stone staff and stood in the sky barefoot, gazing out into the distance.

"I'll go to the original stars first," he said, "but I'll be back soon. Stop studying your techniques and help me guard the primal region."

"Yes, brother."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. He took a step into space and disappeared.

Several universe knights and servants in the palaces within the Thousand Treasures River noticed that Thousand Treasures River had suddenly disappeared.

"Where is the Thousand Treasures River?"

"Thousand Treasures River disappeared!"

"Our teacher might have gone out."

Luo Feng's earthling original body also stood outside the palace and looked into the distance. "I hope everything goes well..." he whispered.

At the end of the whirlpool portal closest to the place where the godly blade of Blade River Luo had appeared, a flash of light was approaching.

"Man Ke Knight is coming!" someone cried. "He has a domain type true treasure, and we have our third-level arrangement. We're more likely to succeed now. No matter how powerful that Space Beast is, and even if he's a special life form, he won't be able to get away!"

"The latest news is that some great beings of Hong Alliance are also trying to kill those Space Beasts."

"No!"

"What should we do? Should we just wait here?"

"Relax. The original stars are enormous, and nobody can teleport or initiate God Country Transportation here. Do you really think it's that easy to hunt someone down? Let's just wait here and guard this place."

In the forest under the whirlpool portal to the outside.

There were seven beings in the forest where Bei Li Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader landed.

"Qi Blood Palace Leader, Bei Feng Knight! You two finally arrived. You were supposed to arrive earliest. Wang Jia Knight

said that you two were surveying the surroundings."

Qi Blood Palace Leader snorted. "Of course we were surveying the place. Do you really think we'll go fight those Space Beasts?"

"Nothing's certain."

Heng!

Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight both snorted.

"Do you think I would be back this soon if I was fighting the Space Beasts? It would take a long time to travel from the birthplace of the godly blade back here." Qi Blood Palace Leader gazed apathetically at the being with almost 1,000 hooves. "Don't speculate without any evidence."

Qi Blood Palace Leader and Bei Feng Knight glanced at Wang Jia Knight, who immediately realized that they'd failed.

"Fortunately, I used quite a few resources and valuables to recover my godly body," Qi Blood Palace Leader said as he glanced around and sat down with his legs crossed. He thought, If they notice that my godly body is injured, there will be trouble.

Meanwhile...

Hong!

Hong!

Two beings showed up at the whirlpool portal.

"Look!"

"Something's happening."

All the nine supreme beings looked up into the sky.

"No need to hurry. They're universe knights who entered the original stars from the outside. They belong to the Hong Alliance."

"Two universe knights of the Hong Alliance again? Why do great beings of Hong Alliance keep coming here?"

This worried the great beings of the Northern Territory Alliance who were hiding here. Bei Feng Knight transmitted his mild voice, saying, "Perhaps the Hong Alliance also found out about the component of Blade River Luo."

"Wang Jia Knight, report this to our alliance. We'll be in trouble if the Hong Alliance meddles!"

"Okay!"

After the news about Blade River Luo spread through the virtual universe, quite a few universe knights raced toward there, and some of them only went there because they wanted to enjoy the fights. They all knew that "a component of Blade River Luo" would produce a furious upheaval, and there was no way they would miss it.

Some of the universe knights closest to the birthplace had arrived, followed by many others. On the original star where Luo Feng resided, many great beings of the Hong Alliance were flying towards the birthplace of Blade River Luo. Meanwhile, the Northern Territory Alliance was constructing a delicate arrangement.

After Luo Feng's chat with Primal Chaos City Leader...

Sou!

A flash of light flew by in the distance.

"There's another forest," Golden Horned Beast said, looking afar and diving down at sub-lightspeed. "I'll fly into the forest and separate my Remote Ocean body and my Golden Horned Beast body."

Golden Horned Beast body was fast; he quickly arrived above the forest and dove down.

"Hua!"

Golden Horned Beast body stopped after arriving at the forest. He

stepped on a thick trunk and looked at his wing. The golden wing was trembling.

"What's happening?" Luo Feng was astounded. Shi Wu Wing, which had merged with the scaled wing, was trembling unrelentingly.

Ang! Ang! Ang!

It was shivering out of Luo Feng's control—as if some singular point of origin afar was attracting it like a magnet.

"Shi Wu Wing has already recognized me as its master," Luo Feng said, shocked to his very core by what he was seeing. "A true treasure that has recognized me as its master should completely follow my orders... Shouldn't it? Why is it out of control now? What's happening in that direction?"

Golden Horned Beast looked into the sky in the distance. He felt that if he didn't suppress it, Shi Wu Wing would lead him in that direction.

"What... What's happening?"

In that direction, a being stood in the sky. He was around 25 feet tall with thick legs and eight arms. By all appearances, he looked as if he were made entirely of metal. He didn't have any hair on his body but was completely bald. He was in the shape of a being of automaton race. He wore black armor, and there was a black set of wings on his back.

Ang! Ang! Ang!

The wing quivered crazily.

"Huh?" the bald, eight-armed knight turned around and looked at his wing. He gazed into the distance. "What's the meaning of this? My wing is a true treasure, and I've been utilizing it for hundreds of thousands of years. This has never happened."

He was powerful and venerated. He had come to original stars

eight times before, and he'd been through far deadlier situations. However, this was the first time his true treasure wing had behaved outside of his control.

"What's going on?" he said, his eyes gleaming coldly.

Sou!

He shook his wing and flew in the direction of the strange sensation like a flash of black light.

Golden Horned Beast body stood on the trunk with his wing open. He looked up at the sky and could distinctively feel that the attraction was growing stronger by the second. It was as if the point of origin were approaching him.

"In that direction... There's a black spot!"

Golden Horned Beast body saw a beam of black light. There was a black point far in the distance racing toward him. It appeared to be a supreme being.

"It's him," said Golden Horned Beast body, gazing at the figure. "The source of the disruption."

The black light continued pressing on toward him. The being of automaton race also looked in Golden Horned Beast's direction and saw the golden-winged body of the Golden Horned Beast. They now both saw each other.

"Wait... the wing on his back!" said Golden Horned Beast, immediately noticing the black wing on the great being's back.

The bald, eight-armed being looked down and saw the golden wing on Golden Horned Beast body. They sensed each other at the same time.

"Could it be that my wing is only... a portion of a true treasure?" Luo Feng murmured to himself.

Luo Feng was firstly startled, then exhilarated.

The eight-armed, bald knight was also overjoyed, having arrived

at the same conclusion. "My wing is only a component?" he said, grinning.

They gazed upon one another from a distance. An aura of hostility sizzled between them.

Chapter 1045: Tian Yang Knight

"No wonder Shi Wu Wing didn't send me any detailed information when it recognized me as it master when I obtained it," said Luo Feng. "I thought it was because the great being who created Shi Wu Wing didn't leave any information. But the real reason is that Shi Wu Wing is a broken true treasure! Besides, Primal Chaos City Leader told me when he gave it to me that no other lives in the universe knew about the existence of Shi Wu Wing, and he also said that it was not created by him. Apparently, Shi Wu Wing is more mysterious than I realized. The information on Shi Wu Wing was recorded in a book my teacher Primal Chaos City Leader gave to me."

Luo Feng could still remember the book. It detailed the three different forms of Shi Wu Wing and had been discovered by Primal Chaos City Leader during his research.

"According to the information, Shi Wu Wing appeared virtually of nowhere," Luo Feng recalled. "It was exceptionally tough and tensile, and even beings as strong as universe masters aren't able to destroy it." Luo Feng got more excited. "I'm particularly curious about this part. Powerful universe masters should be able to damage an ordinary true treasure. However, based on the information given by Primal Chaos City Leader, Shi Wu Wing is indestructible! I've always thought it was because the material of Shi Wu Wing was special. Until now... It seems that my Shi Wu Wing is a component of an incredible true treasure, which is why the material is also extraordinary."

Just like that, Luo Feng's questions had been completely solved. True treasures that had recognized someone as their owners could attract each other. The only reason this had happened was because they had originally been one.

Golden Horned Beast body looked up at the sky, and the eight-armed, bald knight looked down at Golden Horned Beast.

Thoughts flooded both of their minds. Actually, in the long period of time they had spent using the true treasure wing, they both felt that their wings were different from other ordinary true treasures... However, nobody could say for sure that they were broken true treasure. After all, such a notion was inconceivable.

Like Thousand Treasures River—which was made up of over 1,000 true treasures—true treasures strengthened each other, resulting in boundless power. However, every true treasure had hidden flaws. Many fighters might only be able to wield the power of top-tier treasures. Luo Feng's Shi Wu Wing, after all, always worked as a fine ordinary true treasure.

Even a mere component of a true treasure works so greatly... Luo Feng thought. What if they're combined?

The eight-armed, bald knight looked down at Luo Feng. "Light Wing saved me several times, and even now that I'm a universe overlord, it is an ordinary true treasure that has never disappointed me. The Light Wing is actually a component of a powerful true treasure. I need to get the other part no matter what! If they're combined, they must lead to material change, and the power will be significantly improved!"

Golden Horned Beast body looked up at the being in the sky. The most prominent universe overlords had records within the human race, and Luo Feng remembered all of them. He was able to recognize most of them—except few supreme beings who kept themselves hidden.

Tian Yang Knight, thought Luo Feng. A universe overlord of the automaton race. Based on the available record, he has three true treasures. One of them is an ordinary true treasure armor, one is an ordinary true treasure wing, and one is a senior true treasure "Eight Light Shuttle." He's the candidate deified general for Xing Guang General, and he created the ultimate technique Eight Shuttle.

Luo Feng realized that he was in trouble after recalling his information. Tian Yang Knight was a handful. He was powerful and proficient in escape techniques! Luo Feng could sense that this enemy was not to be trifled with.

Though I don't need to worry about universe overlords because of my Force Armor, they have much stronger attacking skills. It's difficult for me to kill senior universe knights. As for this Tian Yang Knight... it would be almost impossible for me to kill him.

Tian Yang Knight looked down at Golden Horned Beast and was a bit hesitant.

Who is he? he wondered. It's a Golden Horned Beast in golden armor and a golden wing. I don't recall a great being like that in Space Beast Alliance.

The Space Beast Alliance was always mysterious, and the great beings who showed up were known for their giant bodies. To kill a Golden Horned Beast universe knight? Such a feat was nearly impossible.

Golden Horned Beast and Tian Yang Knight stared at each other. Each wanted the true treasure wing possessed by the other. However, they both felt that the enemy standing before them should not be underestimated; Luo Feng was not confident because he was too weak to injure his enemy, while Tian Yang Knight was not confident that he could kill a Golden Horned Beast that was over 600 miles long.

"I am Tian Yang Knight," Tian Yang Knight said, slowly coming to a landing. He landed on a branch and transmitted his voice.

Golden Horned Beast transmitted his hoarse voice in reply. "I am Golden Wing Knight."

Tian Yang Knight raised his head and looked at Golden Horned Beast. He smiled. "Golden Wing Knight of the Space Beast Alliance, my true treasure wing and your wing seem to have some sort of

special connection. I want your true treasure wing... Name your price."

"One top-tier true treasure," Golden Horned Beast said.

Heng!

Tian Yang Knight frowned. A top-tier true treasure! Even some universe masters didn't have top-tier true treasures, and even if the wings were combined, they wouldn't necessarily become a top-tier true treasure.

"So, you don't want to exchange?" Tian Yan Knight said, transmitting his voice.

"So, do you?" asked Golden Horned Beast.

They knew each other's decision the second they transmitted their voices. Apparently, they both valued their true treasure wings. They needed extremely precious true treasures... However, they wouldn't be able to afford such a trade.

Hong! Hong!

They both moved.

"Then die!"

The eyes of Tian Yang Knight glinted with hostility. This godly power started to be burned. Eight 20-foot-long projectiles emanating black light showed up on his arms. These "shuttles" shot at Luo Feng.

"You?" Golden Horned Beast burned his godly body, growled, and charged at Tian Yang Knight.

Hong! Long! Long!

Trees started to fall, and they began to fight each other in close proximity. They attacked over 100 times in a single second.

To be exact, it was Tian Yang Knight who attacked Golden Horned Beast. Golden Horned Beast quickly became half a mile

long and defended himself, using his wing to counter-strike occasionally.

"Eight!" Tian Yang Knight said, and the power of eight shuttles surged. "Eight!" Tian Yang Knight screamed again. "Eight!"

He screamed three times, and his voice resounded and shook the soul. Tian Yang Knight's face looked holy, but there was a black light radiating from his eyes.

The ultimate technique Eight Shuttles was a magnificent move. Golden Horned Beast was not able to fight back. He could only bear the attacks again and again. Tian Yang Knight grabbed the eight formidable-looking shuttles. They were a breathtaking sight. The wing on Tian Yang Knight shook continuously, and the change in the flow of time around him made his shuttles even more splendid. It was a glorious ultimate technique! And it was terrifically powerful!

"Hua!"

Golden Horned Beast rolled like a mountain and ran over the trees. He stood up instantly.

Tian Yang Knight floated in the sky and gazed down at Golden Horned Beast. "Your... Tour godly body is not even injured?" he said. He had already performed his ultimate technique and had consumed 3 percent of his godly body. Meanwhile, to his surprise, his enemy's godly body was not hurt at all.

"Unfortunately, your godly body is," Golden Horned Beast replied in a deep voice.

"A large godly body and powerful armor," said Tian Yang Knight. "Humph! Your true treasure wing will belong to me someday in the future."

Tian Yang Knight's eyes glinted with bitterness. He shook his black wing and flew away. How could he continue? A giant godly body with powerful armor made him despair.

Sou!

Golden Horned Beast flew away. After a short while, the forest recovered as if there hadn't been a fight at all.

After Golden Horned Beast left the forest, Remote Ocean body left as well. Golden Horned Beast body store Shi Wu Wing, claw set treasure, Tower Pearl, Golden Thread Aurora Mirror, Force Armor, and the component of Blade River Luo. Then Remote Ocean body shrunk to around 30 feet tall and sat down in the grass on a hill.

Golden Horned Beast body flew away without even one valuable. He flew across the plain and flew into a vast forest.

"Another true treasure wing..." Remote Ocean body said as he lay on the grass with his eyes half-closed.

"I have a strong defense and a strong godly body, just like Nine Remoteness Master facing a universe supreme master," Luo Feng said. "Universe supreme masters are much stronger than Nine Remoteness master, but they couldn't do anything to him in Nine Remoteness Ocean with a diameter of over ten light years. However, it's impossible for Nine Remoteness Master to kill a universe supreme master!"

This worked to his disadvantage. He was after all an undying fighter! Even his godly body could rival that of a universe knight with the help of the Nine Volume Manual, and he had the superior true treasure Force Armor and an enormous godly body to protect him! Even among universe overlords, there were few who had such strong defending power.

However, he was still weak when it came to attacks. First of all, he had low law comprehension. He did have true treasures for attacking and strong willpower and mind to fight against senior universe knights, but universe overlords who had true treasures and higher law comprehension could still crush him when it came to attacking skills.

Although they could crush Luo Feng, Qi Blood Palace Leader had consumed 9 percent of his godly power yet had only damaged one-10,000th of Golden Horned Beast's godly boy. Tian Yang Knight, similarly, had consumed 3 percent of his godly body, but he couldn't even damage one-10,000th of Golden Horned Beast's godly body.

"How can I get that true treasure wing?" Golden Horned Beast wondered, snarling with bitterness.

Hong!

All of a sudden, an incredible force hit the original star and permeated outward. Golden Horned Beast was entangled by the invisible force. It was complete control over the space and time!

"Control on the space and time?"

Golden Horned Beast's eyes glinted with fright. He knew... a universe master had arrived!

Chapter 1046: Fu Mo Master

A towering being landed slowly on the ground beside the space whirlpool. He was more than 1,000 miles tall, and he was covered with black and red scaled-armor. He had a green face, green eyebrows, and two cardinal horns. He had only one eye, but that eye could see through everything on the original star, which trembled the space around him.

Hong!

Every spot on the Original Star—plains, forests, deserts, mountains, swamps, and oceans—was bound by the power! All the great beings on the original star were shocked to their very core.

"A universe master has arrived."

"It's a universe master!"

"Universe masters have come to this original star!"

Most of the universe knights didn't know why a universe master had arrived, but none of them dared to resist. Although control over space and time couldn't kill a universe master, it could still make it hard for universe overlords to walk—not to mention fly! Universe masters, on the other hand, could fly all the way to their targets and kill them.

Although universe overlords could rival the most ordinary universe masters when they let out their full strength, they could only rival universe masters when they didn't use any true treasure! Unfortunately, it was impossible for universe masters not to have any true treasures!

That was why there were only a few universe overlords who dared to fight universe masters, and at least there were no universe overlords who were able to do that on this original star! This was why, when they felt the powerful binding essence, they all knew it came from a universe master, and none of them dared to revolt.

"No! It's not likely to be Primal Chaos City Leader."

Golden Horned Beast raised his head. He could feel the fetters of this powerful force everywhere. If it had been Primal Chaos City Leader, he would have transmitted his voice already.

"How powerful the universe master is!" Luo Feng exclaimed. "The fetter is so strong, and he might have not even let out all his strength."

Once someone became a universe master, he was able to control space and time; he could even turn back time and see everything that happened. If they were powerful enough, they were even able to resurrect a fallen being.

He was able to control an enormous area of space and time. The original star was completely under his control.

The universe overlords heard a voice that made their heart miss a beat. "Leave it to me," said the voice. "You can all go now."

They were universe overlords, and they knew most of the universe masters within the Northern Territory Alliance. They could tell from the voice immediately that it was Fu Mo Master!

They stopped being so careful. Instead, they were overjoyed.

Fu Mo Master stood on the plain and immediately had everything on the original star under his control. He saw through all the space, the mountains, and the mud of the ground—and easily located the Golden Horned Beast lying in the forest afar.

"Space Beast Alliance."

A chill flashed through Fu Mo Master's eyes.

Heng! Hong!

Inside the forest.

The fetter in the space and time around the Golden Horned Beast suddenly surged as if an intangible giant had grabbed him with crushing force.

"Ah!"

Golden Horned Beast felt the terrific pressure bearing down on him. He quickly started to burn his godly power to resist it. However, the power of the fetter kept increasing.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Golden Horned Beast's godly body kept being weakened—1 percent was depleted immediately. The total quickly dropped from 99 percent to 98 percent, then 97 percent... His godly body just kept being weakened.

If I have my Force Armor on me, thought Luo Feng, I can weaken the force by 99.99 percent. That way, I won't be so easily annihilated. Anyhow, universe masters are so mighty... I haven't even seen him yet, yet I'm already seriously injured!

Golden Horned Beast tried to stand still and resist the pressure.

"Golden Horned Beast," a cold voice resounded. "Where's your true treasure armor? You were attacked by eight senior universe knights, one of whom has a true treasure, yet you were not injured at all! Why is it you are hurt only by my manipulation of space and time? Where's your true treasure armor? Where's your wing?"

"Just go on and kill me! Kill me!" Golden Horned Beast growled. "Hahaha...!"

"It seems that you've moved all your true treasures," said Fu Mo Master.

Heng!

Golden Horned Beast snorted.

Fu Mo Master was omnipotent, and it was natural that he could speculate Luo Feng's actions. He just wanted to use space and time to suppress Golden Horned Beast. Then he was going to concentrate his godly power to attack him directly!

However, before he could even concentrate his godly power,

Golden Horned Beast's godly body was being consumed. This was entirely beyond Fu Mo Master's expectations. How could a Golden Horned Beast, who had incredible defending power, and who was more difficult to deal with than universe overlords, be killed so easily?

There was only one explanation. The Golden Horned Beast had transferred all his true treasures elsewhere.

"Golden Horned Beast, I'm a universe master," he said in a cold voice. "You're not even worth killing to me. I bet it took a long time for you to cultivate that godly body. Just give me the component! As long as you give me the component, or tell me where you put it, I'll let you go."

"Universe master, I might have been killed if I carried my true treasures," Golden Horned Beast said. "Unfortunately, I don't have any valuables on me, so there's no point threatening me. Golden Horned Beasts have clone techniques, so even if this godly body falls, the others will remain intact. As for a soul attack? Though my mind and willpower are not your match, I can easily self-destruct before you erode me."

All was silent. Fu Mo Master also stayed quiet for a while.

Indeed, it was extremely difficult to control a universe overlord's mind. It was almost impossible, even for universe masters who specialized in soul type attacks. Firstly, there wasn't a huge gap between the willpower and the mind of a universe overlord and a universe master; all universe overlords were extraordinary. Fu Mo Master didn't even specialize in soul type attacks, yet it would be a walk in the part for him to control the mind of a universe overlord.

As for soul erosion killing, universe overlords were perceptive and careful. Once they realized they couldn't resist it, they would destroy themselves!

"Golden Horned Beast," the voice said, growing even colder. "Are you threatening me?"

"Of course I'm not," Golden Horned Beast replied. "I just don't want to give you the component of Blade River Luo. I attained this valuable through luck and power. Universe masters are superior and venerated. Why would you need to capture my valuable using such powerful methods? You can't possibly need that valuable that much."

Heng!

Fu Mo Master was becoming angry. "You can only transfer your true treasure to other great beings instead of getting it out of the original star," he said. "After all, there were arrangements around the portal. Since the birth of Blade River Luo, there have been 122 potential universe knights who were close enough for you to have transferred it to. Out of all 122 universe knights, 89 of them are from the Hong Alliance or of the prison race, and they wouldn't be willing to help you. That leaves 33 who may have helped you. Your true treasure must be hidden with one of the 33 universe knights."

"I'll give you two choices," Fu Mo Master continued. "Option one: Tell me where the true treasure is. All I need is the godly blade of Blade River Luo. Option two: I take the time and slaughter every one of those universe knights until I find it. Odds are I I'll have to kill at least ten before I find it. After that, I'll take all your other true treasures, too. It's your choice. Option one or option two?"

Golden Horned Beast looked startled. "You... You'd slaughter universe knights just to get it?"

"Most of them will be willing to be interrogated by me under the threat of death," Fu Mo Master went on, "so I may only need to kill some of them. In any case, those who dare to go against me deserve to die."

"You—you..." For the first time, Golden Horned Beast appeared to become anxious.

Luo Feng, however, was not anxious. In fact, everything was going according to his plan.

Just as Primal Chaos City Leader had told him, he could buy himself some time by separating the Golden Horned Beast body and Remote Ocean body. And, of course, the longer he kept Fu Mo Master talking, the more time he bought himself. If Primal Chaos City Leader couldn't make it here on time, Fu Mo Master would find all the true treasures eventually.

Perhaps Fu Mo Master wouldn't really kill universe knights of other races recklessly just for a godly blade of Blade River Luo, thought Luo Feng. For now, I'll just buy as much time as possible.

Golden Horned Beast continued to act surprised. "Fu Mo Master!" he said, wide-eyed. "You're a universe master! How could you...!"

Hong!

Another terrific ripple arrived and surrounded the original star. The fetter binding the Golden Horned Beast was immediately gone.

"Another universe master!"

"Two universe masters!"

"What's happening on this original star?"

The universe knights on the original star were all petrified.

My teacher? Luo Feng thought.

A giant beast engulfed in flames, standing over 6,000 miles tall, showed up in the sky. The figure exuded boundless power.

"Fu Mo Master!" resounded the voice of the giant beast engulfed in flames. "I heard that you're going to attack a great being of the Space Beast Alliance and capture his valuable! You! Are you provoking our Space Beast Alliance?"

"Flame Star Master!"

Indignation flashed through Fu Mo Master's eyes. Flame Star Master was the most ancient and most powerful being of the Flame Star Beasts—one of the twelve pinnacle bloodlines of the Space

Beast Alliance.

Chapter 1047: Three Universe Masters Meet Each Other

Flame Star Master growled in the endless flames.

Hong! Long! Long!

Each inch of the original star was trembling, and the space and time under Fu Mo Master's control were taken away... Apparently, Flame Star Master and Fu Mo Master were fighting for the control over the original star.

"Fu Mo Master!" The giant beast in flames roared, and his voice pierced through layers of space and blasted beside Fu Mo Master's ears. "That Golden Horned Beast is a member of my Space Beast Alliance. Now that I'm here, don't even think about hurting him! Hahaha... You can't suppress him by controlling space and time, and you can only fly towards him. The great being of my Space Beast Alliance will have already left through the whirlpool long before you arrive! Hahaha!"

Fu Mo Master, who was standing on the plain like a mountain, replied with indignation, "Flame Star Master, my Northern Territory Alliance has already arranged everything! Even if you can stop me, I can still stop you from controlling the space and time! The great beings of my Northern Territory Alliance will encircle that Golden Horned Beast under my command! There's no way he can run away."

"First team, move to coordinate..."

"Second team, move to coordinate..."

Fu Mo Master transmitted his voice to the great beings arranged by the Northern Territory Alliance, and he even gave the order to the six teams on the other side through his alliance. Although Fu Mo Master wasn't able to suppress Golden Horned Beast through his control over space and time, he was still able to know his every

move.

"Yes."

Hong!

There were several universe overlords coming out of all six whirlpool portals. At that moment, dozens of universe overlords gathered on the original star and started to encircle the Golden Horned Beast.

"He's a member of my Space Beast Alliance!" Flame Star Master said, infuriated.

Although he also couldn't manipulate space and time while Fu Mo Master was disturbing him, he was still capable of knowing everything that was happening on the original star. Even Flame Star Master was amazed by the number of races and great beings of the Northern Territory Alliance. There was only one universe supreme master within the Northern Territory Alliance, but the number of universe masters and universe knights was much higher than in other alliances. That was why the Northern Territory Alliance was so reckless when it came to fighting for resources.

"Fu Mo Master, it was the great being of my Space Beast Alliance who acquired the valuable! How dare you!" Flame Star Master was exasperated. He clenched his teeth as he growled, "You have invoked my fury...!"

"Humph! Stop preaching to me!" Fu Mo Master snorted. "Power is the thing that matters most in the universe. Flame Star Master, I promise not to hurt the Golden Horned Beast as long as he gives us the godly blade."

It may have only been a component, but Blade River Luo was a top-tier domain type true treasure. It had the attacking power of a pinnacle attack-type true treasure! The blade was definitely more precious than a senior true treasure, and the Thorn Ring Alliance

would be willing to risk everything to get it back.

"Hahaha! You're joking, right?" Flame Star Master roared. The fire around him raged. "You're not the only one who can summon great beings! I'll summon Golden Horn Master here. Let's see what you can do against the great beings of my Space Beast Alliance."

Fu Mo Master sneered, unintimidated. "Do you really think I'm afraid of him? Let him come! I bet it'll take him a long time to arrive here, anyway! I hold influence over space and time here, and even universe masters will have to fly slowly as a result."

However, Fu Mo Master was a bit daunted inside. As Golden Horn Master was a terrific being among the universe masters of the Space Beast Alliance, and he had four godly bodies.

"Do you think the great beings of my Northern Territory Alliance are inferior to yours?" Fu Mo Master demanded, refusing to back down.

The great beings from the Northern Territory Alliance were notorious for their temperaments; the alliance was made up of quite a few powerful races, but none of them were pinnacle races. They had needed to be humble before they were united. But after being united, with a universe supreme master to guard them, everything changed.

The Northern Territory Alliance group would have to admit defeat against a universe supreme master. However, they would sooner die than surrender now! Once a valuable was born, the great beings of the Northern Territory Alliance would flood this place... After all, the Northern Territory Alliance was known for being reckless and for its high number of great beings.

While Fu Mo Master and Flame Star Master confronted each other, standing tens of billions of miles apart, another omnipotent force flooded in through the whirlpool portal. It was a towering figure standing 6,000 miles tall. He carried an ancient, rugged stone staff and walked barefoot. He wore a Thousand Treasure

coat.

"Hahaha! I didn't expect to find two universe masters here," his voice resounded.

Though the voice was not at high volume, it echoed in the hearts of all the great beings on the original star.

Hong! Long! Long!

Star Sky River enveloped the original star. Powerful objects floating on the blurry river. All the great beings, including the universe overlords ordered to action, froze.

Fu Mo Master was startled. "Primal Chaos City Leader!"

"Primal Chaos City Leader!" Flame Star Master was also shocked.

Both Fu Mo Master and Flame Star Master were renowned universe masters, yet they couldn't compare with Primal Chaos City Leader. Primal Chaos City Leader had three bodies, and each of them was overwhelmingly more powerful than they were. The Thousand Treasures River was a top-tier domain type true treasure, and the power of the true treasure could easily kill them!

Of course, Primal Chaos City Leader wouldn't dare kill them recklessly, unless he had made up his mind to engage in all-out war with the Northern Territory Alliance. Universe masters slaughtering the weak was a rare occurrence.

"Primal Chaos City Leader," Flame Star Master said, growing anxious. "That's a great being of my Space Beast Alliance. You're a revered universe master, and it would be condescending of you to seize a valuable from a nobody."

"Power is all that matters. What can you do if Primal Chaos City Leader actually captures it?"

"Please, Primal Chaos City Leader, for Space Beast Alliance's sake," Flame Star Master said.

If Primal Chaos City Leader hadn't had the Thousand Treasures

River, Primal Chaos City Leader couldn't intimidate Flame Star Master. However, Primal Chaos City Leader could instantly kill Golden Horned Beast with Thousand Treasures River. That was one of the advantages of a domain type true treasure. It could sweep away the weak.

"Do you really think the Hong Alliance care about your Space Beast Alliance?" Fu Mo Master said. "Primal Chaos City Leader, I'll back off now because of you and your Thousand Treasures River. As for the component of Blade River Luo, it belongs either to you or Flame Star Master."

Though Fu Mo Master had stopped meddling, he still wanted to see what would happen next. The Hong Alliance was one of the greatest superpowers. The Space Beast Alliance was aloof and mysterious, but it had strong unity. It would be interesting to see the confrontation between those two.

Flame Star Master opened his mouth. "Primal Chaos City Leader..."

"Flame Star Master, I don't think Primal Chaos City Leader would come here for nothing," Fu Mo Master said.

"Hahaha...!" Primal Chaos City Leader's laughter resounded, affecting Flame Star Master and Fu Mo Master. They were all amazed... It was clear why Primal Chaos City Leader was considered one of the most powerful universe masters.

"Flame Star Master," said Primal Chaos City Leader, "since you asked, I'll stop meddling with it for your sake."

Fu Mo Master was taken aback.

Flame Star Master quickly responded, "Thank you, Primal Chaos City Leader."

"Humph!" Fu Mo Master snorted and stepped into the whirlpool portal. "Retreat!"

Fu Mo Master gave the order to the universe overlords of the

Northern Territory Alliance. He wouldn't interfere anymore, even though he was a bit irritated. After all, as a universe master, he needed to keep his promise. He, like all universe masters, valued his reputation.

"Go."

"Let's go."

Although those universe overlords like Qi Blood Palace Leader were reluctant, they had to follow his orders.

"Universe knights of the Hong Alliance, do not attack that Golden Horned Beast," Primal Chaos City Leader commanded.

He was at the highest level in the Hong Alliance, which meant his voice was heard by the universe knights present. They all followed the order.

Hua!

Thousand Treasures River disappeared, and so did Primal Chaos City Leader.

As Primal Chaos City Leader was transmitting his voice to other great beings, Luo Feng heard a different message.

"My disciple, it's in your best interest that the Space Beast Alliance is involved in this. The Northern Territory Alliance won't interfere anymore now that Fu Mo Master has made a promise. Other universe knights won't meddle since they know three universe masters are involved. The only thing you need to worry about is the Thorn Ring Alliance, but don't be too anxious about that. Get out of here with your Remote Ocean body and some other great beings. Even if the great beings of the Thorn Ring Alliance want to come and arrange an attack, it will take them quite a while."

Luo Feng relieved.

Golden Horned Beast waved his wing, preparing to fly away—

Hua!

"Little thing," Flame Star Master's voice rang out beside Golden Horned Beast. "I've never seen you in the Space Beast Alliance before. Have you been vagabonding? Every space beast vagabonds when they are young... until they are taken back to the alliance when they become undying to be discovered. Tell me, have you never been back?"

Chapter 1048: Space Beast Alliance Sanctuary

"Wu, perhaps you don't know who I am," the voice continued. "I am Flame Star Master from the Space Beast Alliance. I was previously on another original star, and I came here because I realized that the Northern Territory Alliance had dared to attack one of us based on the conversations I heard from other great beings from the Northern Territory Alliance."

"Thank you, Flame Star Master," the Golden Horned Beast replied respectfully, lowering his head.

"No need to thank me," said the voice. "You poor thing. You haven't returned? Ever?"

"No, I haven't," the Golden Horned Beast said. "I've been alone since the day I was born, and I've never been able to return to the Space Beast Alliance."

Luo Feng was afraid of being recognized. However, he recalled what Primal Chaos City Leader had said before—that after becoming undying, souls would merge with every inch of godly power, and even Primal Chaos City Leader couldn't recognize whether the Golden Horned Beast was Luo Feng himself or a real Golden Horned Beast. However, the virtual universe was all-powerful. One could identify someone's race by connecting to it.

If the enemies of other races tried to connect to the sensor of the virtual universe, they would be denied. Unless they sent some human spies, or spies of the Hong Alliance whose minds were controlled...

The virtual universe was an incredible invention, and it had many unique functions. Even the most powerful organization, he Ancestral God School, who claimed to be the guardians of universe law, couldn't invent something like the virtual universe. It was a

universe of consciousness, and all universe origin laws could be simulated.

"Never?" Flame Star Master said. "We have space beasts everywhere in the universe, and all of them rise to power by themselves. They'll only be guided back after becoming undying. There are many great beings of the Space Beast Alliance on the original stars. You can find one of them, act, and go back to the alliance together."

"Of course, if you can't wait to go back, you can come back directly. This is the universe coordinate... This is one of the gathering places of our Space Beast Alliance. There'll be beings of our race to receive you, and you'll have the opportunity to go to the Space Beast Alliance Sanctuary."

"Sanctuary?" The Golden Horned Beast's eyes glinted curiously.

"Yes, sanctuary! Every great being who is just received will have the opportunity to visit the sanctuary once, and your power will be further improved there! We'll give you some resources based on your power and potential. You might get special treatment, given that you became so strong even without the help of our race!"

The Golden Horned Beast listened carefully.

"Remember the universe coordinates," Flame Star Master continued. "You can choose whether to go back now or not. I can tell you that there are lots of great beings from the Space Beast Alliance now, and you can take this chance to meet some of them. Also, beware of the Thorn Ring Alliance. I believe that you've transferred your valuables somewhere else, but don't waste this godly body."

Golden Horned Beast nodded mildly.

"Three universe masters came here because of that godly blade. The Thorn Ring Alliance is way weaker than us, and all they can send are some universe overlords. But be careful anyway!"

Hong!

The giant beast stepped into the whirlpool portal and disappeared.

Many great beings from the Hong Alliance and the Northern Territory Alliance had retreated when Flame Star Master and the Golden Horned Beast were talking, and Luo Feng's Remote Ocean body raced toward the whirlpool portal like a beam of light.

He kept flying. He even saw two universe knights from the Hong Alliance. Neither of them could identify the Remote Ocean body's race, but they speculated that he was a universe overlord since he dared to act alone. However, because they believed Remote Ocean body to be a universe overlord, they avoided him.

"Such a smooth journey."

"No battles at all."

Remote Ocean body flew out of the vast whirlpool portal and arrived back to the outside.

"There were indeed no shackles at all. The great beings of the Northern Territory Alliance have retreated, and I didn't see anyone from the Thorn Ring Alliance."

Remote Ocean body smiled, teleported himself to a distant place, and went back using God Country Transportation.

Golden Horned Beast flew far away from the portal, and he had flown across the plain and entered the forest. It would take him a long time to arrive at the whirlpool portal, and the Thorn Ring Alliance would have enough time to make arrangements.

"My Golden Horned Beast didn't have any valuable or slave. It's such a waste of time to just fly back like that."

Golden Horned Beast blinked his eyes in the silent forest. Suddenly, a loud explosion resounded through the trees.

Under the strong pressure and consolidated space of the original

star, only hundreds of thousands of square miles around him were affected. Many ancient trees fell, but after a moment, all the fragments gathered, and everything was recovered. It was as if the explosion had never happened.

After a long time...

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Three beings of the crystal race arrived.

"There were such strong energies, and they should have come from the battle of great beings," said one of them. "Where are the great beings?"

"Maybe they left instantly after that?"

The three great beings of the crystal race looked around, then left.

Nine universe overlords from the Thorn Ring Alliance gathered at the portal to the outside world.

"We must get the godly blade of Blade River Luo this time. Blade River Luo is a top-tier domain type true treasure, and it has exceptional attacking power. If some other power gets the godly blade, it'll definitely use it as leverage to blackmail us. We must get back the godly blades as soon as possible. Every blade can strength Blade River Luo to a large extent."

Those nine universe overlords just arrived here. They waited there for a long time.

"Why hasn't the Golden Horned Beast showed up?"

"Weird."

One day, two days, three days...

Eventually, a universe master from the Thorn Ring Alliance arrived and inspected the original star, and that was when they found that the Golden Horned Beast was no longer on the original star, which bewildered all the great beings from the Thorn Ring

Alliance, as they had no idea where the Golden Horned Beast went.

They had to end the plan.

The Golden Horned Beast had a godly body of over 600 miles, which contained excessive energies to most great beings, and they wouldn't waste it. But Luo Feng had his Remote Ocean body, which had an inconceivable amount of godly power. The power it absorbed in an instant could match the power of the entire Golden Horned Beast!

"The godly body goes back to the origin of the universe after self-destruction. My Remote Ocean body absorbs godly power form the origin sea of the universe, which takes much less time than flying to the portal."

Luo Feng stood in front of the palace and looked at the endless Thousand Treasures River. He smiled. "If the Thorn Ring Alliance made arrangements, their efforts will be in vain."

Remote Ocean body stood at a height of over 5,500 miles. The Golden Horned Beast, meanwhile, stood over 600 miles tall but had the same amount of energy as Remote Ocean body did.

Luo Feng could use Remote Ocean body as a flame god origin crystal and blow it up without feeling any remorse because he could recover it in no time... The godly power contained in a Remote Ocean body might not be one-trillionth that of the boundless Remote Ocean.

"It's not because my Golden Horned Beast is small; it's because my boundless Remote Ocean is too large!" Luo Feng exclaimed. "It's wonderful to have the boundless Remote Ocean! No wonder the Nine Remoteness Ocean of Nine Remoteness Master can rival that of a supreme true treasure."

A godly body that could rival a supreme true treasure! Nine Remoteness Master was invincible while within Nine Remoteness Ocean. Luo Feng had yet to attain such power, but his boundless

Remote Ocean held the same potential.

"Self-destruction there, recovery here..." mused Luo Feng, in a good mood.

Primal Chaos City Leader transmitted his voice to Luo Feng. "Come here, Luo Feng."

"Yes, teacher." Luo Feng turned around, looked at the main palace, and teleported himself there.

Inside the palace.

"You have come back safely?" Primal Chaos City Leader said, grinning at Luo Feng.

"Yes," Luo Feng said, smiling. "Fortunately, you showed up in time. If it weren't for you, I would've been in even deeper trouble."

"It was actually easier to deal with than I expected," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "That Fu Mo Master would have definitely confronted me if it weren't for Flame Star Master... Even if I had used Thousand Treasures River to take you away, it would have taken a while to transfer you to the whirlpool portal at lightspeed. We managed to make it out of there without any real drama, but there may be repercussions later."

Luo Feng said, "It was because both you and Flame Star Master were there that the universe masters from the Northern Territory Alliance realized they didn't stand a chance."

"Yes." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded and exclaimed, "Also, the godly blade of Blade River Luo is not that important! If it were a top-tier true treasure, Fu Mo Master wouldn't have backed down like that! He might have summoned other universe masters, leading to certain bloodshed."

Luo Feng nodded. He understood that a top-tier true treasure was enough to instigate fights among universe masters. As for top-tier domain true treasures, they didn't show up at one time on the original star. The most precious part of Blade River Luo was that

compass, and without the compass, the godly blade might not be as valuable as an ordinary true treasure blade. However, the godly blades were vital to Thorn Ring Alliance. They owned the compass, and the godly blades could upgrade the compass from its ordinary level to the top-tier level.

"What do you want to do with the godly blade?" Primal Chaos City Leader asked, looking at Luo Feng. "You can take it for your own, or you can give it to our race and get contribution points! With the contribution points, you can buy some resources you need... or a true treasure you desire!"

Chapter 1049: Nine Tiger River

"I'm willing to hand it to our race," Luo Feng said respectfully.

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Okay. Then go to Primal Chaos City now, as it's the place to donate valuables to our race. Your valuable will be assessed by the virtual universe system, and it'll give you the contribution points that match its value."

"Virtual universe system?" Luo Feng was dazed.

"The virtual universe system is what determines the valuable, and it's the best," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Besides, using the virtual universe is the fairest method because it's an artificial intelligence system without any personal bias or interests. All the great beings will be convinced."

Luo Feng nodded. "I understand. I'll go to Primal Chaos City right now."

"Go."

That same day, Luo Feng arrived at the headquarters of the virtual universe company and started his trip to Primal Chaos City by a spaceship.

Inside the spaceship.

"Ah! It's so uncomfortable," the passengers in the spaceship whispered. "The flow of time is in chaos. It's sickening."

Luo Feng was sitting in a single room, and he laughed after hearing those complaints. He also felt sick when he went to Primal Chaos City for the first time. After all, the original universe was different from the primal universe, and the flow of time was in disorder in the universe portal connecting the two. Many talents who went with him fainted on the ground.

"It's been 100,000 years," Luo Feng exclaimed.

He was still a child when he went to Primal Chaos City Leader the

first time, and he couldn't even pass the first level of the Heavenly Bridge, and the most valued talent was Bo Lan.

Now, after adventuring in the Blood River World and Demon Note Mountain, after being the special envoy of the Ganwu section of the virtual universe, after thousands of years of training in the out-domain battlefield and ice hell, after the meditation in the Ancestral God School, after venturing through Nine Remoteness Space, and after 50,000 years of vagabonding in the universe... he finally became undying!

After 100,000 years, he no longer considered Shi Huo Knight his competitor. Even if it was a universe overlord... He battled with Qi Blood Palace Leader, Bei Feng Knight, and Tian Yang Knight.

"It's been 100,000 years, there should have been many battles between talents."

There are two battles every 10,000 years, Luo Feng thought. I haven't paid much attention.

"Mr. Luo Feng, we've arrived at Primal Chaos City," the captain of the spaceship said with veneration.

"Okay," said Luo Feng.

His mind came back to reality. He glanced at the respectful captain, nodded, and walked out. Luo Feng walked across the hallway with the undying emperor captain, with undying and sector-lord crewmembers standing by his side. He stepped out of the spaceship before the other passengers got out. They all whispered, "Who is he? Even the captain is so respectful of him."

"Perhaps a universe knight."

"Incredible."

"See? Even the receptionist of the Primal Chaos City Leader saluted him."

Among the passengers discussing these matters in low voices,

some of them were slaves of Primal Chaos City Leader, and some of them were universe-level fighters, domain lords, and sector lords. Over half of them had come to Primal Chaos City in the first place, and to them, universe knights were already the supreme beings in the universe.

Luo Feng arrived at the City Leader Palace.

"Mr. Luo Feng!"

"Mr. Luo Feng."

Many guards and servants recognized Luo Feng. They all knew that Luo Feng had killed Bark Mirror Emperor and that his palace was on the mountainside of Thunder Island, and he was qualified to attend the supreme council meeting. They all showed him great respect.

Luo Feng had studied the procedures of donating valuables before coming. The location was at a side palace, and he needed to file an application for donating valuables. The side palace was closed generally, and it would open automatically after the application and the applicant arriving there.

Luo Feng walked to the side palace.

Hong! Long!

The door slowly opened.

Luo Feng stepped inside.

Hong! Long!

The door closed.

"This is the place where I donate the valuable."

Luo Feng looked around the side palace. There was only a stone plate with a diameter of around 300 feet at the center. Luo Feng needed to put the valuable on the stone plate so the virtual universe could carefully assess the valuable.

Luo Feng took out the godly blade.

"A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush," muttered Luo Feng. "I only have one godly blade of Blade River Luo, which is almost useless to me. Aside from the blades, there's a compass, and it's almost impossible to attain. As for the idea of fighting against the Thorn Ring Alliance, I'm not powerful enough to do that yet."

Luo Feng stepped forward and erased his life imprint on the godly blade. He put the blade on the stone plate.

Weng!

Cyan threads burst out of the stone plate and surrounded the godly blade. Suddenly, Luo Feng heard a voice.

"Godly blade of Blade River Luo," spoke the voice, mild and gentle. "It is worth 12 true treasure points. Are you willing to give it to our race, Luo Feng?"

Luo Feng smiled. "Of course."

Ka!

The stone plate cracked, splitting into two halves. The godly blade fell through the crack, and the stone plate quickly closed back up again.

"This is the catalog of valuables of the human race," the voice continued.

Suddenly, a giant, gray catalog showed up in the sky. It featured four types of valuables: true treasures, treasures, materials, and special resources.

Luo Feng looked up at it, considering his options.

"Special resources," Luo Feng said.

Hua!

The menu changed, and a plethora of names of resources appeared. Luo Feng was thrilled by this simple inventory, as it

might list the core resources of the human race! Of course, Luo Feng was not even qualified to see many of them. For instance, true treasures were divided into "ordinary true treasures," "senior true treasures," "top-tier true treasures," "pinnacle true treasures," and "supreme true treasures." Luo Feng could only see ordinary true treasures and senior true treasures. The others, Luo Feng was not qualified to view. Regardless, Luo Feng doubted there were any supreme true treasures in the human race even available for exchange.

As for materials, there were lots of ingredients for making weapons and potions. There were all kinds of special resources, a category comprised of anything that didn't qualify within the other categories—even "undying bug clan queen" and other special life forms for soul transfer. The prices varied based on each item's rarity and level of importance.

Luo Feng spent three hours reading the entire catalog.

I have my boundless Remote Ocean to supply godly power, so I don't need the materials or resources, thought Luo Feng. And I don't make weapons and potions.

Luo Feng shook his head. "I'll just get another true treasure."

There were two levels of contribution points. The race could bestow "treasure points" or "true treasure points."

The average ordinary treasure was worth half a treasure point or one and a half true treasure points. As for some special treasures—sets of treasures or even domain type treasures, flying palace type treasures, and soul type treasures could rival ordinary true treasures—they were much more valuable.

An ordinary true treasure was worth about one true treasure point. Generally, one true treasure point was worth 3,000 to 4,000 treasure points, and the exchange rate fluctuated within that range. As for now, one true treasure point was worth 3,200 treasure points.

"True treasures and senior true treasures..."

Luo Feng read the prices of the valuables. The prices of senior true treasure blades ranged from 8 true treasures points to 30 true treasure points. The prices of senior true treasure armor ranged from 12 true treasure points to 60 true treasure points. As for senior domain type true treasure, Luo Feng could only see the cheapest one, which was worth 180 true treasure points! Luo Feng didn't even bother reading the others.

Among the senior true treasures, close combat weapons were the cheapest, and true treasures for survival were relatively more expensive. Flying palace type, soul type, and domain type treasures were the priciest ones.

"I'll check the ordinary true treasures," Luo Feng said, shaking his head. "I have Star Map, Shi Wu Wing, and Force Armor. I don't need those senior close combat weapons, spiritual force weapons, and armor..."

He started to read about the ordinary true treasures. They were cheaper, as expected. On average, they were one-tenth of the price of senior true treasures, and the quantity was much higher. He suspected they had been donated by universe masters who didn't need them anymore.

"So cheap...! They're so cheap!" Luo Feng kept exclaiming.

However, he was dazed when he noticed the flying palace type, soul type, and domain type treasures up for exchange. The prices of ordinary flying-palace type true treasures ranged from 18 to 80 true treasures points; the prices of ordinary soul type true treasures ranged from 36 to 120 treasures points; the prices of ordinary domain type true treasures ranged from 16 to 80 true treasure points.

"These ones, on the other hand, are expensive," Luo Feng muttered, realizing he couldn't purchase any of them with his measly 12 true treasure points. "The cheapest ordinary domain

type true treasure is worth 16 true treasure points, and there are 13 of them at this price."

Luo Feng read them carefully and quickly had his eyes on a domain type true treasure named "Nine Tiger River."

Chapter 1050: Take Off

Nine Tiger River. It was an ordinary domain type true treasure, metal category, and it required 16 true treasure points. The fact that it was in the metal category was what attracted Luo Feng. He said, "Details of Nine Tiger River."

Hua!

A scene showed up in the sky, and a river with golden water flew in all directions. Inside the golden river lived nine strange beasts with scales, tiger heads, and the bodies and tails of dragons.

The nine strange beasts looked indistinct and were frolicking in the river.

"Nine Tiger River is a domain type true treasure, and it has mighty suppression and bounding power," he said in a mild voice. "If enemies are relatively weak, it can annihilate them instantly. It's a domain type true treasure of the metal category. Undying fighters who become undying under gold law are able to wield it. Together with the gold law domain and the true treasure domain, the power can be multiplied. If someone becomes a universe knight under space law, he is also able to merge space law domain with the true treasure domain because space law trumps gold, wood, water, fire, and ground law. Those who practice time space are unfit for Nine Tiger River."

Luo Feng nodded contently after reading all the information. He was already relatively satisfied with Golden Thread Aurora Mirror, which could effectively suppress senior universe knights on the original stars and was also able to affect universe overlords. That was, after all, how Luo Feng had so easily survived his encounter with Qi Blood Palace Master and Bei Feng Knight.

However, he was not satisfied enough with it. The restraining power was not strong enough!

When it came to those who were talented at escape, such as Tian Yang Knight, Golden Thread Aurora Mirror would be rendered useless. Such fighters could simply use a true treasure to escape.

If only I had a more powerful domain type true treasure, Luo Feng thought. Even Tian Yang Knight has better law comprehension than me, and even if he has a true treasure wing, he won't be able to get away. But I can escape danger with the domain type true treasure.

"Nine Tiger River!" Luo Feng whispered, concentrating on it.

Unfortunately, it required 16 true treasure points.

"Doesn't matter," Luo Feng said, clenching his teeth. "I need better valuables!"

He waved his hand, and a Rubik's cube appeared on his palm. He put the cube on the stone plate. Cyan threads burst out of the plate and surrounded that cube, and the same voice said, "A seal type treasure, which is worth 22 true treasures. Luo Feng, are you willing to contribute this valuable to the race?"

"Only 22 true treasure points?" Luo shook his head. "No."

The cube flew back to Luo Feng.

I'll try others, he thought.

Luo Feng tried one treasure after another, testing to see how many contribution points he could get. He was surprised to discover that the purple clock was worth 89 treasure points, while a seal star was only worth 30. The green axe Silver Eye had given him in the Ice Hell was only worth three treasure points... Seal type treasures were all relatively more valuable, but the purple clock shocked Luo Feng.

"The Swallowing Claw is worth 1,200 treasure points?" Luo Feng shook his head. "But it's not enough. Next, I'll try these two."

Luo Feng waved his hands, and Ancient Boat Galaxy appeared on

his left hand while Golden Thread Aurora Mirror appeared on his right.

"Wine Master," whispered Luo Feng. "My plan was to make the Ancient Boat Galaxy you left in the Land of Valuables famous throughout the universe, but I might not be lucky enough to have that chance. I'll contribute this Ancient Boat Galaxy to my race, and if no great beings exchange for it in the future, I'll get it back. If not... then perhaps it's not destined to be mine."

As a matter of fact, Luo Feng loved Ancient Boat Galaxy. Otherwise, he wouldn't have given it the name "Galaxy" in the first place. However, on the path to becoming a great being, he couldn't sacrifice his chance at an important true treasure just because of something he fancied.

"As for Golden Thread Aurora Mirror, it'll be useless if I have Nine Tiger River."

Luo Feng put the Golden Thread Aurora Mirror on the stone plate. It was a domain type treasure, which was worth 2.3 true treasure points. Ancient Boat Galaxy, a flying-palace type treasure, was worth 3.6 true treasure points.

"Ancient Boat Galaxy is more expensive than Golden Thread Aurora Mirror?" Luo Feng chuckled. "Is it because it was previously used by a supreme being?"

Without a doubt, it was. Although he had some treasures, and some were set treasures, they were all much cheaper. He might need to give away hundreds of them to gain just one ordinary true treasure.

"A flying-palace type top-tier treasure, worth 3.6 true treasures," said the mild-toned voice. "Are you willing to contribute it to the race?"

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes, I am," he said.

"Domain type top-tier treasure," the voice continued, "worth 2.3

true treasure points. Are you willing to contribute it to the race?"

"Yes," said Luo Feng.

"Nine Tiger River. Price: 16 true treasure points. Do you wish to exchange for it, Luo Feng?"

Luo Feng didn't hesitate for even a second. "I do!"

Hong! Long!

The plate cracked slowly open until it showed a portal leading to an abyss. Then a valuable flew out. It was a fist-sized golden sculpture of a strange beast with a tiger head and the body and tail of a dragon. The sculpture flew toward Luo Feng, who took it in his hand.

"Nine Tiger River is mine now."

Luo Feng penetrated it with a trace of his godly power and sealed his life imprint in it. The sculpture quickly merged into his palm, and a picture showed up on his palm.

"Ancient boat galaxy!" he said.

He looked up at the screen and selected "flying palace type treasures." A flying-palace type treasure named Silver Dragon Phantom Boat had just appeared. It was available at the price of 4 true treasure points—obviously higher than what Luo Feng had been given for it. He now finally understood... what was really meant by "contribute." Great beings supplied valuables at a lower price, and the race then sold them to other great beings at their true value. The race was thus able to acquire many valuables, which were used to cultivate the weaker members.

Luo Feng had contributed Ancient Boat Galaxy, Golden Thread Aurora Mirror, and Blade River Luo to the human race. In exchange, he had been given 17.9 true treasure points. After spending 16 true treasure points on Nine Tiger River, he now had 1.9 left.

He decided not to continue to exchange for other valuables. After all, other valuables were not worthwhile. It was more important for great beings to have quality true valuables than it was to have more valuables! A single Star Tower was much more precious than tens of thousands of true treasures.

After leaving Primal Chaos City, he went to his God Kingdom.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

In the sky above the boundless Remote Ocean, the Golden Horned Beast stood with his wings opened.

Howl!

The Golden Horned Beast howled and burned his godly power, powering the strange, golden beast picture on his chest.

Hong!

A churning river appeared with a diameter of 20 million miles with the Golden Horned Beast at the center. Nine eerie beasts could be seen swimming in the golden river.

"Law domain," sand the Golden Horned Beast, standing at the center of the river. "Nine Tiger River domain... Merge!"

Hong!

The power was multiplied, and the almighty golden river churned up into the sky.

"This domain is much stronger than that of Golden Thread Aurora Mirror," Luo Feng said. He nodded. "If I drove the Golden Thread Aurora Domain with my burning godly power before, I could annihilate an elementary universe knight. However, I can use the same amount of time to annihilate a secondary one with this Nine Tiger River."

"Power! Gather!"

All the energies in the golden river rushed toward those strange beasts, strengthening them.

"It could severely injure a secondary universe knight, and it would be able to kill one after several attacks." Luo Feng sensed the power and nodded. "Even senior universe knights would be trapped by this, and it could even slow down universe overlords."

All this greatly satisfied Luo Feng. He nodded.

"If I meet Tian Yang Knight again, he'll be slowed down if he falls in the domain of my Nine Tiger River, and I can catch up with him."

Luo Feng put the Nine Tiger River domain and the Golden Horned Beast body back in his world ring and stood above the boundless Remote Ocean. He hadn't stayed long on the original star, but the experience had certainly broadened Luo Feng's horizons. There were billions of great beings of all the races gathering, including many universe overlords!

"I'm not strong enough. True treasure wing!"

Luo Feng recalled the black wing Tian Yang Knight owned. He couldn't care less about Blade River Luo's component, as he knew that it was impossible for him to get Blade River Luo by himself... What Luo Feng really wanted was that wing Tian Yang Knight owned.

My Shi Wu Wings and that black wing attracted each other, thought Luo Feng. If they are combined, the power will definitely surge. I bet Tian Yang Knight also wants to get my wing. Hmm... Time to go to the Yin Fa Secret Region. Time to get the fourth black metal.

Master Zuo Shan Ke had given him three tasks. He could get the third black metal if he became a sector lord, and he could get the fourth black metal if he became undying. When he became a universe knight, he could go and obtain the last black metal. Then he had been trapped in Ice Hell for more than 2,000 years.

The fourth black metal is hidden in the Yin Fa Secret Region, an

area that is known for being dangerous, Luo Feng thought. It might take a long time, and I don't know what tasks my teacher has prepared for me. But I have to go and give it a try... It might take forever, but my power will escalate if I get the fourth metal! Perhaps my Golden Horned Beast body can reach a perfect life gene level...

Last time, when his Remote Ocean body had reached the perfect life gene level, he had received the inherited technique "I Am the Universe," and his godly body had become more than 55,000 miles long. However, Luo Feng had chosen to turn the godly body into a boundless Remote Ocean, which was why he couldn't perform the inherited technique I Am the Universe.

For what it's worth, the fourth black metal might help my Golden Horned Beast reach the perfect life gene level, Luo Feng thought. Once I succeed, I'll go deal with Tian Yang Knight.

Luo Feng left the human territory after going back to the primal region, and he departed for the extremely dangerous Yin Fa Secret Region!

Chapter 1051: Yin Fa Secret Region Craftsman Star

It took Luo Feng more than a month to arrive at the Yin Fa Secret Region. It was in a remote place of the universe and was one of the most dangerous secret regions in the universe. It was as dangerous as the Ancestral God Secret Region, but Yin Fa Secret Region was only as large as the Black Dragon Mountain Starfield, which was much smaller than the Ancestral God Secret Region.

Inside an unremarkable spaceship stood Luo Feng, gazing at the space in the distance. "The destination is right in front of me. 'Craftsman Star.' Master Zuo Shan Ke told me a long time ago that finding the black metal is a task for me." He frowned. "Other great beings might not know my skills, but Master Zuo Shan Ke is an exception... He knows all my power. Perhaps, it will be dangerous this time."

Xiu!

A Golden Horned Beast that was about three feet tall appeared with his wings open.

"I'll leave all my valuables with my Golden Horned Beast body," Luo Feng said. He turned around and saw Golden Horned Beast floating there. "Remote Ocean body, Mosha body, and I will go to Craftsman Star. Even if I fail, I'll just lose some energy."

"Go!"

Sou!

Luo Feng teleported himself out of the spaceship, and Mosha body showed up... Mosha body teleported all three of them more than 3,000 light years farther and arrived at the destination while the Golden Horned Beast body stayed in the spaceship with all the true treasures.

Many enormous space whirlpools swirled everywhere.

A 30-foot-tall towering being stood in the space. It was the Remote Ocean body of Luo Feng. After all, his original earthling body had gathered too much fame, and Mosha body was too weak. It would be better for Remote Ocean body to act alone.

"The legendary Craftsman Star," Luo Feng said as he gazed at the space in the distance. Here, there was a vast ocean with tens of thousands of space whirlpools. There was a gigantic star in the depths. It was the Craftsman Star—Luo Feng's destination.

Craftsman Star was an outrageously large star that could have only existed in one of the universe's secret regions. It had a diameter of 1.9 trillion miles. Although it was unusual for such a gigantic star to exist, there were many others of such size; they were simply unknown.

The reason the Craftsman Star was well-known was the great being living on the star: a universe master named "Craftsman"! He was a powerful universe master who was a "mountain" special life form. He had been born to craft weapons and had loved making them even back when he was weak.

Throughout the years, he had kept making breakthroughs, devoting an eternity to making weapons until he was considered the best weapon-maker in the universe. Zuo Shan Ke's ability to make true treasures was obscure. And this identity made him stand out among all the great beings in the universe.

Craftsman was able to make top-tier true treasures! There were two other great beings who could make top-tier true treasures, and the reason for Craftsman's superiority over those two was the "Craftsman Star." The Craftsman Star itself was a top-tier, flying-palace type true treasure!

Craftsman didn't belong to any power. The Ancestral God School had tried to appeal to him, as well as many other superpowers in the universe, but to date, he hadn't joined any power yet. For one thing, he was mighty, possessing many true treasures. Hence, it

was nearly impossible to kill him. For another, he was proficient in crafting true treasures. This placed him at a level close to many supreme beings. As a result, nobody dared to attack him.

A maniac... thought Luo Feng. Only a maniac can go this far on this path. He gazed at Craftsman Star in the distance. He consumed so much material just to turn a star into a flying-palace type top-tier true treasure.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew toward that star, sometimes teleporting himself. The countless space whirlpools around Craftsman Star were natural wormholes. There were 98,200 in total, and only a portion of them led to safe areas. Others led to extremely dangerous places.

"A tablet?" said Luo Feng.

As he got closer, he saw floating tablets in front of two-thirds of the whirlpools. One tablet after another. Most of them were labeled "Dangerous." Some read "Forbidden," and there were two with "Off-Limits" written in bloody script.

Those whirlpools without tablets might lead to safe districts, thought Luo Feng. As for Dangerous, Forbidden and Off-Limits...

Luo Feng looked at one of the two tablets with "Off-Limits" written on it. The power emanating from the words intimidated Luo Feng. Only universe masters could write such things!

Rumor has it that there are 98,200 natural wormholes around Craftsman Star, and two of them lead to places that are supposed to be off-limits! thought Luo Feng. Almost everyone who has gone in there has died! However, according to the information in the Hong Alliance, there are great beings who have survived the whirlpools. But they refuse to talk about the Off-Limits places.

In time, Luo Feng passed by all the wormholes and arrived in the sky above Craftsman Star.

"The great universe master 'Craftsman' is generous and friendly,

and he isn't as aloof as most universe masters. He favors special life forms, so many special life forms in Yin Fa Secret Region moved to Craftsman Star and live a peaceful life on the star."

Luo Feng dove.

"Craftsman Star. A peaceful place with no killings. Many great beings come here for true treasures, and many come here to learn how to make true treasures."

Luo Feng flew through the clouds and landed. He took a step, moving six million miles forward. He had gathered information about the star before he came. The residents on Craftsman Star were special life forms. Some of them were undying, and some of them were universe knights. Though there were numerous powerful beings, the star remained peaceful.

"I can sense it... The black metal is calling me."

Luo Feng moved forward, and the original earthling body in his world ring could sense the black metal, just as when he had obtained the second black metal. Not even the world ring was able to cut off the attraction.

"That direction!"

Luo Feng raced toward it.

As he traveled, Luo Feng witnessed many special life forms having fun, some of whom were a rare sight in other areas of the universe. Sector lords, undying fighters... Luo Feng even saw a universe knight-level special life form.

A streak of green light flew at Luo Feng. It was an energy body with a pretty face.

"Where did you come from, outsider?" the being demanded. "Are you here to learn how to make true treasures from Craftsman Master?"

Luo Feng smiled. "I do, but I heard that the standards are pretty

high."

The green light flew beside Luo Feng. "They are. There are always great beings coming here who want to be a student of Craftsman Master. Many have failed. Craftsman Master has 182 disciples in total."

Luo Feng smiled, nodded, and moved forward using teleportation. The green light easily followed Luo Feng.

"Have you ever been to Craftsman Star?" the green light asked. "Do you know where the Craftsman Mountain is?"

"Haha...!" Luo Feng smiled without giving anything away. After all, he was being drawn by the fourth black metal, and he was certain that the black metal was in that direction.

Luo Feng walked for half an hour before arriving at Craftsman Mountain, during which he continued talking with the green light.

Luo Feng learned a great deal during the half-hour conversation, including that the green light was called Bo Ni Sha and had moved to Craftsman Star with her race a long time ago. According to Bo Ni Sha, she knew almost everything about the star, and she saw great beings coming here for true treasures all the time.

"That's Craftsman Mountain," Bo Ni Sha said, pointing in the distance at a towering mountain piercing the clouds. "Craftsman Master lives on the mountain, and his disciples come down to gather material often. See? There are many buildings on the mountain. Most were built by great beings of other races. After all, Craftsman Master rarely shows himself, as they're not qualified to be greeted by him... They can only wait for the moment when Craftsman Master comes out and tests his disciples. That's when they go and ask for true treasures." With every word, Bo Ni Sha grew more excited.

Luo Feng nodded. He concentrated on the Craftsman Mountain, and he could feel a strong attraction even with the world ring in

the middle. The original earthling body could feel every cell of his body exhilarated by the fourth black metal in that Craftsman Mountain.

"He put the fourth black metal in Craftsman Mountain? That's where Craftsman Master lives." Luo Feng frowned. "I can't get a black metal from a universe master no matter how strong I am."

Luo Feng considered.

Bo Ni Sha flew around Luo Feng and said, "Aren't you here to learn how to make true treasures from Craftsman Master? Look, there are some universe knights groveling over there. Just go join them. If you're sincere enough and have the potential to create true treasures, Craftsman Master will admit you as his disciple."

Chapter 1052: Chrysalis Knight

The towering Craftsman Mountain shot up through the misty clouds. At the foot of the mountain, several hundred great beings of different races knelt. At first glance, Luo Feng could recognize a third of them as universe knights. The rest were undying great beings.

"Close to 200 universe knights kneeling," Luo Feng said to himself. "The ability to create true treasures must be extremely desirable."

"Hey! Why aren't you going?" Bo Ni Sha, who was beside Luo Feng, asked out of curiosity.

"I do desire to learn." Luo Feng smiled and lowered his eyes to look at Bo Ni Sha. "I certainly do want to learn the legendary skill of the Craftsman Master. However, I am not confident. Therefore, I'm here more for satisfying my curiosity... to take a look."

"They are all here to try their luck," said Bo Ni Sha. "Out of these 500 or more candidates, it will be a generous intake if two or three are accepted as disciples." She pointed to the crowd of great beings of different races on their knees. These great beings, either in the life-form of energy, flesh and blood, or rock, were all down on their knees. All waiting wordlessly...

"How long have they been kneeling?" Luo Feng asked.

"Waiting, waiting till the Craftsman Master appears," Bo Ni Sha said lightly. "Kneeling for thousands of years or even tens of thousands of years is commonplace. But the longest wait has yet to exceed 100 centuries. If one does not even have the perseverance to kneel for a long period of time, one is not worthy to learn the skill of making true treasures."

Luo Feng nodded.

"I can't accompany you any further," said Bo Ni Sha. "I'm heading

off to visit my friend." She danced around Luo Feng before flying off into a deep blue building.

Luo Feng looked up at the towering Craftsman Mountain as he made his way toward it.

"So many different races," he said.

He looked at the many buildings of different styles located quite a distance away. These numerous ancient buildings were abodes that great beings had constructed while here to seek an audience with Craftsman Master. The majority were vacated, but a sizable number of them were still occupied by great beings.

"They might be great beings from other races who are here to seek treasures," Luo Feng said to himself. "The fourth black metal board can be found on Craftsman Mountain; Craftsman Master is on that mountain. Given his power, how am I going to obtain the fourth black metal board? Even if I did manage to steal it, Craftsman Master controls the space and time here. He could catch me easily." He gazed up at the mountain. "How am I going to obtain it?"

While thinking, Luo Feng walked on, not realizing that he had already reached the foot of the mountain.

"Stop! My friend, stop!" A deep and melodious voice called out.

Luo Feng turned to look. Amid the crowd of over 500 universe knights and undying great beings, a handful looked over. Among them, there was a being with four hooves and a human body over 1,000 feet tall. He was watching Luo Feng with three golden eyes, and in a melodious voice, he said, "My friend, Craftsman Mountain is where Craftsman Master and his disciples reside. Any other great beings without prior permission from Craftsman Master will not be able to enter the region. Entering without consent would be showing disrespect to Master."

"Oh," said Luo Feng with a smile. "Thank you. I was too

engrossed in my thoughts."

"Are you also here for the purpose of asking Craftsman Master to take you in as his disciple?" The being shifted its gaze downwards to look at Luo Feng. Although he was kneeling, he was still taller than Luo Feng.

"Just curious," Luo Feng said. "If there is hope for me to become a disciple, I will work hard." At the same time, Luo Feng found himself wondering, What kind of life form does the knight belong to? Based on what he could recall, there was not a single race with a description that matched.

"That's right!" Golden Eye Knight said with a laugh. "As long as there is hope, we should never give up. I am already able to make ordinary treasures, and before coming here, I was filled with confidence. However, upon arriving... I realized that when compared with the extraordinary geniuses from the many races of the universe—where everyone is so adept at making weapons—I am inadequate. You see that being of the demon race over there? He may only be undying, but at his level, he is already capable of making ordinary treasures. His chances of being chosen to be Craftsman Master's disciple is far higher than mine."

Luo Feng was dumbfounded as he looked over. Also kneeling was a beast that resembled a golden-haired ape. It had a weaker aura, an aura that was only at the undying level.

"Undying, yet able to make ordinary treasures?" Luo Feng blinked in disbelief. "Geniuses. They really are an omnipresent existence." Luo Feng sighed to himself.

Golden Eye Knight sighed too, then said, "In the Ancestral God Secret Region, I am an honorable Weapon Master, but when I arrived here, I realized how lacking my skills were. Our unique life forms may seem very capable... but when it comes to making weapons, we are not in an advantageous position. You see, these undying beings, at their level, are already being brought by the

great beings of their races to this Yin Fa Secret Region, the Craftsman Star. If they hadn't possessed a certain level of skills, would they dare come here? These few hundreds of undying beings... I suppose the majority are already able to make pseudo treasures."

Pseudo treasures? Luo Feng was baffled. What level would a "pseudo treasure" be at? It seemed there were some terms known only among weapon masters—or at least unknown to someone like Luo Feng.

"That's all right, I'm not here to try my luck at being a disciple," Luo Feng continued. Then he muttered under his breath, "If I were to do so, I would only embarrass myself."

"You should give it a shot," Golden Eye Knight laughed. "Craftsman Master has very stringent requirements when it comes to selecting disciples. Although talent matters, there are many other factors also taken into consideration. So long as you possess some skill in making weapons and you can make a pseudo treasure... who knows? You might be lucky enough to become a disciple of Craftsman Master. Take me, for instance. I have been persistent all this while."

"I am just curious," Luo Feng repeated. "Just curious, that's all."

Luo Feng immediately left the area packed with over 500 geniuses skilled in making weapons—all sincerely hoping to become disciples of Craftsman Master. Reaching the foot of the mountain, he built himself a courtyard house.

Making weapons? he thought. As if. I cannot even handle a weapon that is of a slightly higher caliber, much less a pseudo treasure. During the remodeling of the Yun Mo planet ship, when I needed to imprint engravings, I had to engage the help of internal personnel from the virtual universe company...

Luo Feng shook his head in resignation. He was a complete ignoramus when it came to weapons. He had zero knowledge.

Compared to the numerous top-notch weapons geniuses gathered here from all over the vast universe, he could not help feeling ashamed.

Standing before the entrance of his courtyard, Luo Feng looked at over 500 kneeling figures of various races, then turned up to look at the towering Craftsman Mountain.

"My initial plan was to ask Craftsman Master to take me in as his disciple," he muttered. "After entering Craftsman Mountain, I could take my time to craft a plan to obtain the black metal board. But now it seems that, other than Craftsman Master and his disciples, no one is able to enter the mountain. And becoming his disciple is out of the question... What should I do? How am I going to obtain the black metal board?"

Luo Feng was frustrated. But even without a feasible plan, he was not anxious. He waited patiently at the foot of the Craftsman Mountain, observing the activities that took place around the area fastidiously, seeking the perfect opportunity.

In the blink of an eye, half a year had passed. During that time, Luo Feng made acquaintances with the great beings of other races who stayed in the buildings around him. The great beings of other races were all universe knights, and there were quite a few universe overlords, too! Those who had stayed to wait all sought true treasures from the great Craftsman Master.

A four-armed giant known as Chrysalis Knight, presently sitting cross-legged beside Luo Feng, sighed and lamented, "I am the leader of a race, so finding a variety of valuables for the race is my responsibility. Although I joined the Nine Territory Alliance, those of highest standing were universe masters. I am only a universe overlord, so the resources I have were far inferior. For great beings of races with universe masters, three top-tier series of treasures can be exchanged for an ordinary true treasure. For me? I will need four top-tier series of treasures!" Chrysalis Knight shook his head. "And this is only one of the many examples of unfair treatment... I

am ever at a loss."

Luo Feng nodded in sympathy as he listened.

"Things are different for the pinnacle races," the four-armed giant said, shaking his head again. "The six pinnacle races—with their overwhelming power, countless valuables, and great beings—enjoy a blessed life. When they exchange valuables internally, no one experiences unfair treatment. But for races like mine, where I am the sole universe overlord... Humph! Remote Ocean Luo Feng, should there come a day that I am killed, please help me. Please help my 'Silk and Rock race' to live on and pass on its legacy."

Luo Feng replied, "Chrysalis Knight, don't talk like that. Should death befall you, the Nine Territory Alliance will resurrect you. But if you really need my help, I will reach out to you."

Chrysalis Knight was one of the great beings here whom Luo Feng had come to befriend, and he was one of the few Luo Feng got along with fairly well. He was the honorable leader of the Silk and Rock race, and if he did fall, the entire Silk and Rock race faced the risk of dying out.

Chrysalis Knight needed to take care of his race. As such, he was unwilling to exchange his treasures with the Nine Territory Alliance for true treasures. He would only stand to lose.

"I can only approach Craftsman Master with my plea for help!" said Chrysalis Knight. "Craftsman Master, with various materials obtained from treasures, could make a true treasure. This would be much better than exchanging treasures within the race." Chrysalis Knight sighed. "This way, I would still be able to retain a fair bit of resources for my race. With the race developing, I can also grow stronger. Only then will our future generations continue to grow... Aye..."

Luo Feng was full of admiration. His capability was considered strong, yet he did not have any such responsibilities. Humans, as a whole, were very much stronger and more dominating. Although

there was little difference between him and Chrysalis Knight... Chrysalis Knight had to shoulder the rise and fall of his entire race.

Xi Luo Duo, who had the capability of a universe overlord, held a fate somewhat similar to that of Chrysalis Knight, thought Luo Feng. While Xi Luo Duo was with them, the Golden Horned race was able to stand as an independent race in the universe. Yet the moment Xi Luo Duo was killed, the Golden Horned race could only rely on stronger great beings for survival and became a vassal race."

As Luo Feng and Chrysalis Knight were chatting, a voice suddenly exclaimed, "Look! Those are Craftsman Master's disciples."

"It's Craftsman Master's disciples!" someone else shouted.

Luo Feng and Chrysalis Knight stood up at the same time. From the palaces and buildings around them, knights of various races stepped out. They were all there seeking true treasures. The number of figures emerging, at one glance, numbered several thousand.

These great beings all yearned for the same thing: to engage Craftsman Master's help in making true treasures. Such true treasures would be comparable to those obtained through trading within alliances but at a much lower price.

Thousands of knights—some burly and others petite, some hairy and others metal-plated—all flocked toward the figures approaching the ground.

The handful of figures landed.

"Dear brothers," said a great being from the 500-plus great beings kneeling on the ground, speaking in a respectful demeanor. "May I ask, when will Craftsman Master meet us?"

"What's the rush?" one of Craftsman Master's disciples answered. "Master has gone visiting. He may not return for thousands or tens

of thousands of years. Enjoy the wait."

Following his response, the disciples rapidly transformed into rays of light and made a speedy departure.

"Visiting?" Luo Feng said, squinting into the distance. "Hmm..."

Chapter 1053: In the Flames

The great beings conversed excitedly among themselves.

"Meeting a friend? Craftsman Master is meeting a friend, so we're just going to wait here and do nothing? From my perspective, we should go to the original stars first, and perhaps we can get something precious."

"The original stars will stay open for a thousand eras. It's only just begun. We have plenty of time."

"That's right. We don't need to rush now. Let's ask Craftsman Master to help us make a true treasure, and then we'll go to the original stars. We can get more valuables with the true treasures."

"Let's go."

"No, let's wait!"

The great beings of other races from various territories in the universe were quite disappointed and started to go back to their residence. All 500 of the great beings kneeling at the foot of the mountain were upset as well, but they continued groveling and didn't dare stand up. They believed that there were great beings watching their every move, reporting back to Craftsman Master. Sincerity was of the utmost importance if someone wanted to be a disciple. One might be eliminated if he wasn't sincere enough while groveling.

"Let's go, Luo Feng," said Chrysalis Knight. "We might need to wait for thousands of years for Craftsman Master."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded, smiled, and walked back with Chrysalis Knight.

He stood in front of the door and looked up at Craftsman Mountain.

Meeting a friend? thought Luo Feng. Does that mean Craftsman

Master is not here? His eyes gleamed. A great opportunity!

He had been waiting for half a year, but it was still impossible for him to get the black metal with Craftsman Master guarding the Craftsman Mountain.

Craftsman Mountain is the sanctuary of the entire planet, and Craftsman Master lives here, Luo Feng thought. Only Craftsman Master and his disciples can live on the mountain, while other great beings were not allowed without permission, which means there are only a few great beings on Craftsman Mountain. As for his disciples, no one is a universe master, based on the information I gathered.

Craftsman Master had 182 disciples in total. Some disciples were universe knights, and some were undying. Although Craftsman Master only picked those who were highly talented, none of his disciples had reached the level of universe master. One of the reasons was that it was exceedingly difficult to become a universe master. Another reason was that his disciples devoted most of their time and energy to making weapons, and hence, they didn't get enough training.

Nobody can stop me if there are no universe masters, thought Luo Feng. But I still need to be careful. It won't be easy to get something from Craftsman Master.

******

Luo Feng was afraid that Craftsman Master might come back if he didn't act in time, so when it turned dark, he sent Mosha body carrying his original earthling body. Mosha body was the best at fleeing and hiding.

The original earthling body had the same level of combat power as Remote Ocean body, which was why the Remote Ocean body was waiting at the mountainside and observing how everything went while the original earthling body and Mosha body started to climb the hill.

Mosha body shrank to the size of an ant and stood beside a stone on the hillside of Craftsman Mountain. He looked up at the towering Craftsman Mountain.

"Craftsman Master..." Mosha body said, stepping forward.

Sou!

He teleported himself to the depths of Craftsman Mountain. He was able to teleport himself and match the space ripples without being noticed by universe knights. He arrived at the closest spot to the valuable after just two teleportations.

Hong! Long! Long!

On the hillside of Craftsman Mountain were numerous gigantic caves billowing steam exceeding temperatures of one million degrees. The steam flowed around Craftsman Mountain, and the energy contained in the steam was equivalent to that of a star. Every cave glowed red in color.

Mosha body, under a rock, didn't care much about the steam. The energy of stars was nothing to him now.

Space seal? Mosha body thought. Around one-tenth of Craftsman Mountain is enveloped by the steam, and it is under space seal! It means this is the center of Craftsman Mountain.

As Mosha body watched, two towering beings suddenly walked out of one of the caves. One of them was around 70 feet tall with four claws. Various patterns coated his naked body. The other was around 300 feet tall and had thick arms. The two of them walked out together, and Luo Feng could tell from their power that they were both undying.

"It's too hot inside!" the four-clawed creature exclaimed. "We couldn't even stand it for a second. How are we supposed to make top-tier treasures if we don't have enough time?"

"We're just not strong enough," replied the other. "Look at our universe knight-level brothers. They're able to make weapons at

the center, and they can keep trying... Especially our ninth brother..."

"I really admire ninth brother."

"Not only is ninth brother a universe overlord, but he also has true treasure armor, and he's an energy life form of the fire category... He's able to go deep into the center to make weapons, and he has been bestowed some precious material used by our teacher. See? He's already made a senior true treasure, and he's second only to our teacher on the Craftsman Star." The towering creature shook his head and exclaimed, "It'll be much better if we can become universe knights!"

"It's not that easy."

The two undying fighters were not alerted to Mosha body's presence. After all, there was no reason to expect that anyone would trespass on Craftsman Mountain.

Mosha body heard their conversation easily.

The center? he thought. It seems most of their brothers are staying at the mountain center. He looked at the cave. And the center of the mountain is the center of the space seal. I can feel that the fourth black metal is at the center of the mountain. I need to be careful. I must not be discovered by the disciples of Craftsman Master.

Mosha body was careful. Although he was proficient at stealth, many of Craftsman Master's disciples were universe knights or even universe overlords.

Sou!

Inside the space-sealed area, teleportation was not allowed. Mosha body instead performed his inherited technique "Domain" and went into a cave. The two undying fighters outside the cave never noticed a thing.

******

It was blistering hot inside, and Mosha body moved forward carefully. The cave was surprisingly deep, and the deeper he went, the hotter it got. Some rocks inside the cave glowed red with the heat. It was so scorching in here that Luo Feng thought sector lords might be killed instantly by the temperature alone.

Hong! Pa!

Hong! Pa!

Hong! Pa!

Upon hearing a series of rhythmic sounds, Luo Feng turned into a stone and rolled inside. Some of the patterns on the stone allowed for sight, and Luo Feng observed the distant places using them.

The fire was surging. At the top of the fire, life forms of other races of all sizes used hammers to pound the metal, producing the sounds he had heard: Hong! Pa!

They're all undying, Mosha body thought. My black metal is down there.

Sou!

He performed Domain again and traveled almost 6,000 miles down. He moved still deeper with Domain and was able to avoid attracting the attention of the great beings of other races who were making the weapons.

Luo Feng noticed something special about how the disciples of Craftsman Master made weapons. Those who were at the top of the flames used a strange type of hammer, while those in the middle of the flames were universe knights who used hammers of different sizes and needed to wield them using their godly power.

As for the bottom of the fire, there were only three universe knights. One of them was the ninth brother those two undying fighters had talked about. Apparently, the fire intimidated all ordinary universe knights.

"It's right down there," whispered Luo Feng. "My black metal is right down there." He hid beside a rock, camouflaged as a small stone. "I can sense clearly that the black metal is above the three universe knights at the bottom. They might notice me if I go there... What should I do?"

Luo Feng grew anxious. He could sense that the black metal was around 180 miles away from him, and the three universe knights at the bottom were also around 180 miles away from him. That meant the black metal was close to the three universe knights.

Just wait, Luo Feng told himself. I bet they won't keep making weapons here for long.

Luo Feng watched the three beings in silence. Although Luo Feng didn't know anything about weapon-making, he was still amazed at how the three universe overlords made the weapons... It was an art.

The three universe overlords only used strange hammers at different sizes, but the hammer wielded by that ninth brother was unique. It looked fierce enough to shatter the universe, yet as mild as a breeze. All the materials it touched mixed with each other perfectly, and the scene was breathtaking.

After more than a month, the ninth brother ceased his work and announced, "Haha! The top-tier set treasure is finally finished. If the material were good enough, I could've made a true treasure."

"Congratulations, ninth brother."

"Congratulations."

"Haha!" he laughed in triumph. "Now, I'll go and have a rest."

"Sounds good. Let's go together."

"Let's go."

With that, the three universe overlords finally went to rest. They flew out of the flame like beams of light.

After they disappeared, Luo Feng turned back into a human form, robed in black.

"Finally," he said, looking down at where the black metal was.

Chapter 1054: Flame Space of the Craftsman Star

In the twinkling of an eye, the black-robed figure of Luo Feng transformed into a rush of black current and condensed into a stone. Thereafter, he fell directly toward the bottom.

As the stone fell, it bumped its way down into the deepest depths of the mountain.

Pa!

The stone rammed into the red-hot stone wall and finally came to a halt. Then the stone transformed back into the black-robed form of Luo Feng.

"I've arrived," he said, taking in the view before him. He could not help exclaiming, "So beautiful!"

This was the bedrock of the mountain. He could see a strange, black matter about six miles ahead. It hung suspended in the air, standing than ten feet tall and in the shape of a "gourd-class" object. As this black gourd hovered in midair, its mouth facing upwards, it spurted endless flames that spread outward, nearly filling up the entire mountain. Disciples of Craftsman Master who were undying beings and universe knights created weapons forged by the heat of these endless flames.

As the black gourd hovered in the air, there were invisible connections all over the place—like lengths of chain that could not be seen by the naked eye—connecting the mountain with virtual space. Although these chains were invisible, there were traces of flames strung onto them. They came from the surrounding space and moved inward, directly into the gourd's mouth.

"There are a total of 36 virtual chains," said Luo Feng. He frowned inwardly. "This black gourd seems to merge with the limitless space here. And through this limitless space, it absorbs

and stores energy from the flame continually. Is that how it maintains its ability to produce eternal flames?"

Luo Feng was Master of Star Tower. Star Tower absorbed energy from the vast universe to continue revolving, and so, looking at this black gourd... based on what he knew, Luo Feng was able to make a similar judgment quickly.

"Unquestionably, the flames near to the gourd's mouth will require the power of a universe overlord to ward off," he said. "These endless flames spread out almost 100 miles away... Every individual flame is strong enough to annihilate an eternal star. With such energy is being released continuously, there must be a source where it comes from."

Luo Feng could sense that the energy of these endless flames was being continuously transmitted into the black gourd through the 36 virtual chains.

Space transmission? wondered Luo Feng. What method is Craftsman Master using to maintain such an energy-consuming process? As a master craftsman of true treasures, he wouldn't be so foolish as to use up his own energy so relentlessly. There must be a source! Like Star Tower. To maintain such strong energy...

Luo Feng's eyes lit up as the realization dawned upon him. "Of course! The Craftsman Star! Only the Craftsman Star can do that! Craftsman Star is the greatest true treasure that Craftsman Master ever created. With its massive size, it can absorb the limitless energy in the atmosphere of the entire virtual space. Could it be that the star absorbs and internalizes the surrounding energy, then transmits the energy to the gourd? This gourd... It could be a part of the Craftsman Star."

After a few seconds of observation, Luo Feng had deduced the truth. Craftsman Master had made the Craftsman Star for two reasons. One was to build a protective home for himself. The other was to construct a primary tool for creating true treasures. The

entire Craftsman Star would be used to absorb limitless energy and continuously churn out flames, which were drawn to the black gourd for the forging process.

"Killing two birds with one stone," said Luo Feng. "Just by modifying the massive Craftsman Star, he was able to achieve this effect. In fact, with Craftsman Master's ability, it would be a piece of cake." He stared at the black gourd. "I can sense that the black metal board is inside that black gourd. What should I do?"

Take the gourd away?

The thought crossed his mind, but he banished it instantly. It was a laughable idea! The black gourd was a part of Craftsman Star—it was a subject with a master! Craftsman Master would certainly know if he were to take it away...

More importantly, Luo Feng was not the master of Craftsman Star. If he wanted to take the black gourd, a component of it, he would have to take the entire Craftsman Star! Given the weight and power of Craftsman Star, he might as well have tried to move Thousand Treasure River. Even a universe master wouldn't have been able to make it budge. In this way, it was just like Star Tower. If it were to completely unleash its power, even a universe supreme master would not be able to take it away!

"I'd better not move the black gourd," Luo Feng told himself. "I should not act rashly. The gourd's mouth will always be open to spurt out flames. But if I follow the path of the flames being drawn into the gourd's mouth... There's no reason I should meet with any obstructions."

Still, Luo Feng was not so sure. He wondered whether the gourd was empty on the inside or filled with even more terrifying flames.

"Heck, I'm going to go all out," he said. "The black metal board is inside the gourd. I have to go in!"

The temptation was just too strong. In an instant, the black-

robed form of Luo Feng's godly body split into two. One was his Mosha body, the other was his original earthling body.

"Mosha body shall try first."

Sou!

Right away, he used his talent technique "Domain." In the blink of an eye, he was taking the path into the gourd through the gourd's mouth.

Hong!

Stepping directly into a bed of red-hot, endless flames, Mosha body did not even have a moment to look around, nor did it have even a moment to react before it was annihilated. Not even a strand of hair managed to make contact with the flames.

Poof!

Moshy body was gone in an instant—up in flames faster than it took a single strand of hair to burn. The moment a godly body entered, it was annihilated immediately, without a split second to react.

Luo Feng studied the black gourd suspended in the air by the 36 virtual chains. Instantly, his body unleashed some godly power that rapidly converged to restore Mosha body. Mosha body might have been similar to his original earthling body in size, but qualitatively, there was a substantial difference; only a small amount of godly power was required to restore his Mosha body.

"Time to let my original earthling body try," said Luo Feng. "This godly body of mine is comparable to an ordinary universe knight."

Luo Feng frowned as he took out a world ring and toss it over to his Mosha body. At the same time, he also went into the world ring.

"Go!"

Mosha body immediately took the World Ring and used the

talent technique "Domain" again.

Sou!

Instantly, they made their way to the black gourd's mouth.

******

Inside the world ring.

Hong! Long!

Luo Feng looked up at the sky to see the countless cracks on this side of the world. The next thing he knew, the world around him collapsed. Having briefly witnessed how terrifying the flames were, it was obvious that the material used to make the world ring was starting to melt. Then everything on this side of the world collapsed.

The next moment, Luo Feng found standing right in the heart of the flames.

"This is the inside of the black gourd?" he said.

The moment he appeared in this flaming space, the first sensation he felt was scalding hot. He was reminded of how it had felt when he had first scalded himself as a child. Yet, given his willpower today, Luo Feng was able to suppress this bit of pain without difficulty.

"Black metal board!" he said.

Luo Feng felt as though every cell of his body was boiling. The feeling was insane. He lowered his gaze to the bottom of this flaming space. There were many various materials here, and all were very precious and unique. All were able to put up with the high temperature without any trouble. And among them... was the black metal board!

******

At the foot of Craftsman Mountain.

Everything was peaceful, just like any other day. Amid the countless buildings left behind by various great beings from all over the universe, Remote Ocean Luo Feng stood at the door of his courtyard.

Mosha body was annihilated in an instant, he thought. Its consciousness did not even have time to react. My original earthling body only managed to lower his head. Though it was only a split second, his consciousness was allowed a moment of thought.

Remote Ocean Luo Feng sighed to himself. "This is so nerve-wracking," he whispered. "No wonder universe overlords can only resist the flames from outside... The flames on the inside of the gourd are far more frightening than those on the outside."

Luo Feng turned to go back into the house. He sat down cross-legged, to think in silence.

The flaming space within the black gourd contains extremely precious materials. However, these may only be a portion of the materials Craftsman Master owns.

Luo Feng understood that every type of material had different characteristics. Not every material was suitable to be stored within such a scorching hot place. This would be determined by the great beings' natural instincts. Truly precious materials would be carried about by great beings so that they could safeguard them.

My Remote Ocean body is much bigger than my original earthling body. The power of its godly body is much stronger, so I suppose it may be able to hold on much longer. Craftsman Master has three formidable disciples: the one called "ninth brother" and two others who are currently not around. I cannot miss such perfect timing... Let's give it a shot!

Luo Feng made up his mind. He divided some godly power and directed it to converge with his Mosha body. Then Mosha body brought his Remote Ocean body over to Craftsman Mountain,

where they snuck in once again.

******

Mosha body snuck into the bedrock of the mountain easily for the second time, then stopped a distance away from the black gourd suspended in midair.

"Are the flames really that powerful?" he muttered. "I only need a small amount of time to grab the black metal board and fly out quickly."

With Remote Ocean body, Mosha entered the black gourd once again. Inside, Mosha body was annihilated in an instant, as expected; the world ring melted, and the side of the internal world collapsed.

The moment Remote Ocean body appeared, he lowered his head and accelerated toward the bottom in one swift dive.

"Black metal board!"

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Endless, red-hot flames annihilated the godly body of Remote Ocean body in a frenzied craze by the time he had managed to cover only about half the distance. Before Remote Ocean body was able to get to the bottommost area of the flaming space, where all the precious materials were, it was destroyed.

******

Yin Fa Secret Region, 3,000 light years from Craftsman Star.

A universe planet ship hovered in midair.

In the control room, an adorable Golden Horned Beast, only three feet long, lay sprawled on the sofa. Its eyes were full of frustration, and it was mumbling under its breath, "I knew it wouldn't be so easy. I knew it! Those frightening flames were much too powerful. Just like how a pinnacle emperor can easily subdue an official level undying with one hand, Craftsman Star has

annihilated my godly body effortlessly."

"Remote Ocean body was massive," it continued, "but it only took a split second for it to be destroyed. The difference is much too great... No matter how much energy my godly body has, it is bound to burn. This power is more terrifying than the attack of a universe overlord—more powerful than the greatest attack by Qi Blood Palace Leader. I'm sure it far surpasses the limit of defense of ordinary true treasure armor. Under such force, just as how Golden King Armor's power was greatly reduced, to weaken it by one-tenth would be considered a blessing."

Golden Horned Beast shook its little head and continued mumbling, "Even if the power could be weakened to one-tenth, persevering would still be impossible in those endless flame. The fire within black gourd is more powerful than any other flames in the outside world."

The outside world needs universe overlords who have ordinary true treasure armor. In that gourd... isn't it a must to depend on Force Armor? With my Force Armor, the strength of the flames could be reduced to 1/10,000. That would make things much easier. But if I fail, I would lose Force Armor, too!

Golden Horned Beast lay sprawled in the same spot, letting out low growls intermittently. "I knew it... It is not that easy. Not that easy!"

Sou!

"To bring Force Armor or not? To go or not to go?"

Luo Feng sat down on the sofa with a wine glass in his hand. Golden Horned Beast was also lay sprawled on the sofa. Both sat there, deep in thought.

Chapter 1055: Craftsman Master is Back

A spaceship floated in a space more than 3,000 light years from Craftsman Star.

Should I go or not? Luo Feng wondered.

He had sent Remote Ocean body out before. He didn't mind a slight energy loss, and he wouldn't care about the Golden King Armor. However, after experiencing the power of the flames—and seeing the three universe-overlord disciples of Craftsman Master standing outside the flames wearing ordinary true treasure armors—Luo Feng had confirmed that ordinary true treasure armors were not enough!

"Should I use my Force Armor?" Luo Feng frowned. Star Tower and Force Armor were the most important true treasures he had! The Force Armor would still be a great boon to him, even he became a universe master in the future.

Luo Feng thought about it for more than six hours. Numerous ideas popped up in his head, but all were vetoed.

"I'll go!" he finally decided.

After a short while, Mosha body took off with Golden Horned Beast body and Remote Ocean body.

Luo Feng had six true treasures in total: Tower Pearl, Star Map, Shi Wu Wing, Force Armor, Golden King Armor, and Nine Tiger River. He sent the Golden Horned Beast carrying three true treasures: Force Armor, Shi Wu Wing, and Nine Tiger River. The Force Armor was for Golden Horned Beast to resist the fire, and the Shi Wu Wings and Nine Tiger River were to be used to escape!

As for Golden King Armor and Star Map, they were useless under these circumstances. Although Tower Pearl was helpful, it was used for Star Tower to recognize Luo Feng as his master, and he couldn't lose it! Compared to Force Armor, the supreme true

treasure Star Tower was far more important to Luo Feng. Thus, he wouldn't risk it.

If I fail and lose my Force Armor, losing my Shi Wu Wings and Nine Tiger River will be the least of my worries, Luo Feng thought.

Compared to Force Armor, Nine Tiger River and Shi Wu Wing were worthless.

******

Inside the vast space in Craftsman Star were space whirlpools beyond count. Mosha body floated in the sky and looked at the Craftsman Star in the distance.

"I must get the fourth black metal!" he said. "If Craftsman Master is there, I won't be able to get it. Fortunately, he happens to be outside, and the three universe overlords are resting. I might need to wait for an eternity if I miss this chance..."

I must go! he thought. Even if I fail and lose the Force Armor, there's still a chance I can get it back when I become stronger in the future. After all, Craftsman Master won't be able to use it, even if he does get it. It won't be difficult to get it back. And besides, Master Zuo Shan Ke might also interfere. The Force Armor was made by him, and it won't be a problem for him to get the armor back.

After taking this all into consideration, Luo Feng decided to go! His Force Armor was important to him, but the fourth black metal was even more so! Once he got it, he was likely to make his Golden Horned Beast body reach the perfect life gene level, after which he could perform the inherited technique known as "I Am the Universe."

"My power will surge with this move!" he said. "Even if I lose my Force Armor and get killed, my boundless Remote Ocean body will create more bodies. There's nothing to worry about."

Although his Force Armor was significant to Luo Feng, it wasn't

vital. Still, if it weren't for the fourth metal of the "Nine Volume Manual," he wouldn't have risked it.

******

Mosha body teleported himself to Craftsman Star and entered the Craftsman Mountain after another teleportation. He was experienced, now; he had used his inherited technique "Domain" to enter the cave before and now went deeper inside. After performing Domain 100 times, he arrived in the deepest portion of the mountainside.

A three-foot-tall Golden Horned Beast floating in the air gazed at the black gourd connected by 36 chains. The gourd's mouth expelled endless flames, which were so powerful that they might turn an ordinary treasure into ashes.

The Golden Horned Beast body had performed "Deities of the Earth," "Beast God Transformation," and "Inherited Technique Amplification," and had reached his limit. He had even hidden a world ring that contained the Remote Ocean body and Mosha body.

"I'm consuming the godly power while the Remote Ocean body is supplying godly power," he said. "The Golden Horned Beast body, Remote Ocean body, together with Force Armor... I'll definitely get the fourth black metal now!"

The Golden Horned Beast body shrank to the size of a fist.

Sou!

He flew toward the mouth of the gourd. The black gourd was ten feet tall, and its mouth was about the size of a human head.

He entered the gourd. Inside, the Golden Horned Beast body immediately felt the horrifying heat of the flames. The black gourd was used to extract fire for Craftsman Master to make weapons. The flames that spewed from it made up only a small portion of the fire that raged inside. Here, the flames were much stronger—

perhaps enough to annihilate a top-tier set treasure.

Hong!

The flames were endless.

The Golden Horned Beast became three feet long and drove the Force Armor by burning his godly body, which maximized his defense.

"Hahaha...! Nice! The Force Armor is indeed impressive. Although the fire is mighty, it's weakened to only 1/10,000th of its original power. It's still consuming my godly body, but it doesn't have any real effects now. Perhaps only 20 percent of my godly body will be gone when I get the black metal and leave."

Actually, his godly body was already being consumed quickly, but Luo Feng remained fairly relaxed.

Sou!

The Golden Horned Beast dove down. The godly body was also consumed gradually... 99.9 percent, 99.7 percent, 99.5 percent... 98.7 percent... However, after a short while, the Remote Ocean body started to transfer godly power from the world ring to restore the Golden Horned Beast body, and it went back to 100 percent. The Remote Ocean body had the same amount of godly power as the Golden Horned Beast body did.

Sou!

Sou!

Luo Feng kept diving down. The space inside the gourd was not large, having a diameter of around 6,000 miles, and the Golden Horned Beast body reached the bottom quickly. However, once he hit the bottom, he started to succumb to the heat. The flames at the bottom of the gourd were more sizzling than in any other area. Apparently, it was the essence of the fire. The flames glinted purple.

97 percent... 94 percent... 91 percent... 88 percent... His godly body was being quickly consumed.

"No! I need to hurry!"

The Golden Horned Beast reached the bottom where there were lots of materials. He grabbed the fourth black metal.

Weng!

There was dimming black light on the black metal and the material at the bottom. The Golden Horned Beast wasn't able to catch the black metal with all the integrated black light.

Howl!

The Golden Horned Beast looked down. The fire was worming its way inside the bottom of the gourd through the engravings in the black light. Energy accumulated at the bottom. Apparently, it was an engraving seal used to store the energies, and the materials were sealed under it.

"Trying to stop me by using an engraving seal without a master?" he said. "Break!"

His Shi Wu Wing slashed the black light!

Pu!

The black light was cut in half. His hoof grabbed the black metal, and he swallowed it. The godly power recognized him as his master like before, and the information contained in the black metal was transferred to him.

"Go!"

The Golden Horned Beast didn't dare hesitate. His godly body was down to only 62 percent, and the Remote Ocean body was at only 68 percent...

Sou!

The Golden Horned Beast shrank to the size of a fist and flew out

of the gourd through its mouth. He landed on a rock.

"Finally, I got it!" the Golden Horned Beast said, elated.

Hong!

An enormous amount of power suddenly arrived, frightening Golden Horned Beast.

No...! Cutting the engraving seal alerted the Craftsman Master. He came back to his home to see what happened!

"You dare... to break my engraving?" an ancient voice roared.

Hong!

A gigantic arm descended through all the fire, and the Golden Horned Beast was seized!

The Golden Horned Beast felt the pressure pressing down on him. His godly body was quickly consumed... 50 percent... 42 percent... 36 percent...

"Supply! Remote Ocean body! Supply!"

Golden Horned Beast grew anxious. His godly body was quickly restored by the energies from the Remote Ocean body. When the palm stopped exerting power, Remote Ocean had already used up his power entirely, and the power in the Golden Horned Beast body was only at 42 percent.

"You survived my attack?"

The rocky arm grasped the Golden Horned Beast. There was a rumbling sound. He was Craftsman Master, and the conception contained in that move was enough to annihilate an ordinary universe overlord.

"You withstood my grab and have only stolen a material that is of no use anyway," said Craftsman Master. "I'll spare your life..."

Hong! Long! Long!

The space was reversed. The Golden Horned Beast felt the space

and time around him changing, and he was already out in the space surrounding the Craftsman Star when he began to see things clearly again, in front of one of the giant space whirlpools.

"There are 98,200 wormholes," said the giant form of Craftsman Master, standing 6 million miles tall. "Two of them lead to places in the Land of Extremis!"

The giant threw the Golden Horned Beast into one of the giant space whirlpools—one bearing a tablet reading, "Land of Extremis" on it.

"I've given you a chance to survive," the voice said, entering into Luo Feng's mind as the Golden Horned Beast was tossed through the space whirlpool.

Chapter 1056: Land of Extremis

Golden Horned Beast was thrown into the space whirlpool... and Craftsman Master—the mountain giant who was as tall as tens of millions of miles—stood quietly in the air, watching the space whirlpool that would lead to the Land of Extremis.

Craftsman Master was a mountain giant, millions of miles tall, with many gigantic glass arms sticking out of it. At one look, it would seem to have at least 100 gigantic arms. Furthermore, the stone face of the mountain bore an enormous pair of eyes.

"Golden Horned Beast," he said, "don't blame me if you are trapped in the Land of Extremis for trillions of years." Craftsman Master gazed at the space whirlpool and continued, "All of these are Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest's instructions." Craftsman Master could not help letting out a soft sigh. "Poor fellow."

Sitting Mountain Guest's wish would always be Craftsman Master's command. He would carry out his orders without fail.

Given his capability, his skills in making weapons, and his massive, mountainous godly body, he really had nothing to fear when facing a universe supreme master! Firstly, he was capable and had a massive godly body in addition to a flying-palace type true treasure: "Craftsman Star." He was able to fend for himself when facing other universe supreme masters. Secondly, he had an extensive network of friends. On the level of universe supreme masters alone, a few were very close to him. He was also close to the human race, the demon race, and several other races, as many would frequently employ his help in making true treasures. So, if any other universe supreme masters dared to "command" him about, he would dismiss them without a second thought.

But things were different with Sitting Mountain Guest... Craftsman Master treated Sitting Mountain Guest with the utmost respect!

Back in his younger days, he was passionate about making weapons and was very gifted in this aspect. During the earliest stage of the birth of the universe, when very few life-forms existed, Craftsman Master was already a universe knight. Once, while making weapons, Sitting Mountain Guest happened to sit by his side and watch him work. At that time, he was furious. How could his skill of making true treasures be seen by other great beings who might pick up his skills secretly?

He was fuming, but there was nothing he could do. Sitting Mountain Guest was already a universe supreme being at that point in time. His power to control the surrounding universe could have rendered Craftsman Master immobile.

Thereafter, Sitting Mountain Guest gave his two cents' worth on Craftsman Master's weapon-making skills, commending his merits but also pointing out his shortcomings. He even gave pointers on how improvements could be made to boost his weapon-making skills. Craftsman Master had been appalled... During that period, the lonely Sitting Mountain Guest had resided on Craftsman Master's planet, where Craftsman Master was still a nobody and had yet to earn his reputation by remodeling a flying-palace type true treasure.

Occasionally, Sitting Mountain Guest would give him some pointers. This had allowed Craftsman Master's skills to increase by leaps and bounds. Even his law comprehension showed tremendous improvement. Eventually, he achieved a breakthrough and attained the universe master level! His skills in making weapons also reached a very high standard.

"Your skills have already attained an extremely high level," Sitting Mountain Guest had said. "My guidance is no longer useful. What happens next will be up to you to discover and experience."

Sitting Mountain Guest had left him thereafter. From the beginning to the end, Sitting Mountain Guest had not mentioned anything about making him a disciple. He also had not taught him

any self-cultivation techniques, nor had he given Craftsman Master any true treasures. Sitting Mountain Guest's help... was merely staying on his planet for a longer time to guide him in improving his skill in making weapons.

Still, Craftsman Master had always used the salutation of "Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest." In his heart, he thought of Sitting Mountain Guest as his teacher! There were a few occasions where he asked Sitting Mountain Guest to be his teacher... but Sitting Mountain Guest was unresponsive. When Sitting Mountain Guest approached him with instruction this time around, he would certainly perform the task to his very best and absolutely without a trace of delay.

"Poor fellow. But you are one lucky fellow," Craftsman Master lamented with a sigh. "Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest has set a test for you. To train you. I think it means that he thinks of you as his disciple. However, Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest has very high expectations. If you are unable to make it out on your own, you will be trapped in the Land of Extremis for all eternity."

Craftsman Master let out yet another sigh.

Hua!

The next instant, that massive being vanished into space and went back to Craftsman Star.

******

A moment later, the three disciples of Craftsman Master flew down toward the foot of Craftsman Mountain, where over 500 universe knights and undying beings—all of whom were gifted with talents in making weapons—were kneeling in wait.

"Teacher has returned!" shouted one of the three disciples.

"Teacher has returned," announced another.

"You should all start preparing quickly. Soon, Teacher will be testing you all. Only those who pass the final test get to become

Teacher's disciples."

Upon hearing the shouts, everyone looked far into the distance with surprised and delighted expressions. From the buildings, the universe knights of the many races rushed out at top speed.

"Hurry up! Craftsman Master is about to make an appearance!"

"Hurry up!"

"The chance to enlist Craftsman Master's help in making true treasures is finally arriving."

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Thousands of universe knights came forth in large numbers.

"Remote Ocean Luo Feng!" said Chrysalis Knight. "Craftsman Master is about to appear! Remote Ocean Luo Feng? Remote Ocean Luo Feng?"

Chrysalis Knight went to Luo Feng's abode to look for him, but he could not find him anywhere. He could not help but let out a sigh.

******

In the Yin Fa Secret Region, a lone universe planet ship cruised through space. Luo Feng's original earthling body sat in it, and beside him, a Remote Ocean body appeared. Earlier on, to ward off the blow Craftsman Master had dealt to Golden Horned Beast, Remote Ocean body had supplemented Golden Horned Beast's godly body with more power, thus using up all his godly power. He was annihilated as a result. Naturally, another Remote Ocean body would be formed.

"Where is it?" Luo Feng muttered in alarm. "My Golden Horned Beast body... Where has it gone to? Normally, I am able to connect with my Golden Horned Beast body through our consciousness, but I cannot sense its location."

Luo Feng was taken aback. Nothing like this had ever happened before. Even on the Original Star, the two bodies had been able to

sense each other's whereabouts.

"Where did Golden Horned Beast body go?" Luo Feng wondered aloud. "The Land of Extremis... Where is it found in this universe?"

Luo Feng was growing increasingly perturbed. Even in his current standard, he still felt that the universe was a difficult book to read. There were always mysterious lands seemingly popping up out of nowhere.

******

Going through that gigantic space whirlpool, Golden Horned Beast suddenly found himself in the middle of a starry sky. He looked around, feeling at a loss.

"This place... Where am I?"

Golden Horned Beast looked off into the distance.

In the bright, starry sky, looking afar, there was the star level and a star traveler level. He could even see a gigantic, red star. Given Golden Horned Beast's eyesight, the vast, limitless galaxy he saw seemed like an ordinary starry sky. But Golden Horned Beast body was keenly aware that this place was nowhere near ordinary! He was unable to sense the space ripples—he also could not sense his God Country or the virtual universe!

"How is this possible? Where are the space ripples?" Golden Horned Beast let out a low growl while suspended in midair. He studied his surroundings. "There are no spaces sealed, so where have all the space ripples disappeared to?"

Here in this vast starry sky, it was as though it was perfectly natural for space to be without a single trace of ripples. It was as if this place was completely isolated from the original universe.

"I cannot sense the virtual universe, and I cannot sense my God Country. I was unable to connect to the virtual universe when I was in the Original Star, too, but this is only the second place in the entire universe where I have been unable to connect to the

virtual universe."

Golden Horned Beast surveyed his surroundings. He was quite aware of the capabilities of the virtual universe, and a place that could cut off all contact with the virtual universe was certainly no ordinary realm.

"What about the space whirlpool?" Golden Horned Beast looked around. He had arrived here immediately after stepping through that space whirlpool. Thereafter, the space whirlpool had disappeared.

"Why did it disappear? Could it be...? That the space whirlpool on the Craftsman Star can be transmitted to different spots randomly?"

Luo Feng was baffled. Back when he was at the Ancestral God Secret Region, he had met with a spate of random occurrences involving space whirlpools where he was transported to the core lands of certain places. But Mosha body had eventually undergone an evolution.

******

Luo Feng's Mosha body appeared in midair while Golden Horned Beast body hid within the World Ring.

"This Land of Extremis... What secret does it hold? Why do I not see any form of danger here?"

Luo Feng scrutinized his surroundings, but because he could not sense his God Country, there was no way he could utilize God Country Transportation. Hence, his injuries would not be able to recover.

"Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest... What does he have in mind for me?" Luo Feng wondered.

Luo Feng was no fool! While planning a way to steal the fourth metal board, he had not confirmed whether there was any relation between Craftsman Master and Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest.

However, when Golden Horned Beast was caught while trying to escape, Craftsman Master had shown up.

Craftsman Master's appearance wasn't a surprise. What was surprising was the minor punishment he had meted out. He had not even taken back the metal board, nor had he taken any of Luo Feng's true treasures before tossing him into the space whirlpool leading to the Land of Extremis!

What a weak race! The audacity to steal.

Surely, Craftsman Master knew that for a being to come out of the black gourd alive, he must have a formidable true treasure armor, thought Luo Feng. Even though he knew this... Craftsman Master still did not take any of my valuables. How could he be so benevolent? Even a benevolent master would have killed me right away. And if he intended to punish me instead, there are many ways to do so. Why would he desert me in the Land of Extremis?

Super great beings kill one another on the Original Star for the sake of obtaining top-tier true treasures. Yet Craftsman Master is unable to see a valuable true treasure right before his eyes? No. I am truly a fool. This must have been Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest's arrangement.

Luo Feng was grateful to Sitting Mountain Guest for this, but he was doubtful of his intentions and motives. Sitting Mountain Guest usually showed much indifference to Luo Feng, but when he had instructed Luo Feng to obtain the first three black metal boards, Luo Feng had to obtain the three boards in three different stages, one when he was at sector lord level, the second when he was at undying level, and the third when he was at universe knight level. They were clearly three different tests.

"Back when I was seeking the Green Knight and the Purple Knight... I eventually ended up being sent to Ice Hell," Luo Feng recalled. "If not for Master of Sky Wolf, I'm afraid I would have been there a long time. I would have had to kill a colossal number

of great beings in Ice Hell to make it out alive. Is this like Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest's motive back then?"

Luo Feng could only speculate, as Sitting Mountain Guest's arrangements were usually more casual and impromptu. Even if Luo Feng was able to escape thanks to Master of Sky Wolf and Primal Chaos City Leader, Sitting Mountain Guest would not intervene.

"What about this time?"

"What is his motive this time? If it weren't for Master of Sky Wolf and Primal Chaos City Leader, I would have been trapped in Ice Hell for a long, long time." Luo Feng looked up at the vast, starry sky. "In this mysterious Land of Extremis, I can't sense my God Country, nor the virtual universe. I can't even determine its universe coordinates! There is no way I can seek help! And if my godly body is depleted, I can't go to the Remote Ocean to recharge..."

"The moment I fail," Luo Feng said to himself, "my Force Armor, Nine Tiger River, and Shi Wu Wings will be gone."

"I can't afford to worry. Regardless of what Sitting Mountain Guest has in mind, he is training me, and I have improved my abilities so rapidly, all thanks to him. Regardless, capability is the fundamental concern!"

Luo Feng speculated no more.

Sou!

Immediately, he transformed into a beam of light and flew off at top speed. He continued accelerating and soon reached the speed of light.

"Huh?" Luo Feng's eyes widened. "I have reached the speed of light! No! I am starting to exceed the speed of light! Why am I still not entering the dark universe?"

While in the form of light, Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

"What is this place? Is this really the original universe? Could it be that there is another universe that is similar to the original universe?"

Chapter 1057: The Prisoner in the Land of Extremis

He wasn't able to feel his god kingdom, and neither could he enter the dark universe and reach a speed faster than light. And there were no space ripples...

"Where am I?"

Luo Feng was still flying at high speed through space using his inertia. He looked around at all the stars gleaming.

"Wait," he said. "This doesn't feel right. I'm already faster than the speed of light, and I should only be able to see the front."

Luo Feng looked back, and he could still see the scene distinctly, which baffled him. He permeated his godly power and sensed light speed.

"I'm moving too fast," he said. "So... Light speed in the Land of Extremis is different from that in the original universe."

Light speed in the original universe was 186,000 miles per second, while light speed in the Land of Extremis was 100 times faster!

"The speed of godly power?" Luo Feng frowned.

Sou!

A beam of godly power spread, which made Luo Feng exclaim, "The fastest godly power is 186,000 miles per second in the original universe! But light speed in the Land of Extremis is 18 million miles per second!"

Sou!

Luo Feng accelerated and flew across the sky. Two times light speed in the original universe. Three times light speed in the original universe... He kept accelerating.

The laws of the universe were sharply different in the Land of Extremis. Luo Feng felt like he had around Zuo Shan Ke but also as if he were in the primal universe. Zuo Shan Ke was a universe supreme master, and he was able to change all the laws in his surroundings, while the primal universe was an entirely different universe with some fundamental differences.

Luo Feng kept speeding up, and the pressure on his godly body kept surging. The Mosha body was 100 times stronger than an ordinary pinnacle emperor, and he was able to withstand the pressure.

"100 times light speed in the original universe! I can speed up no more..."

Luo Feng wasn't able to accelerate any further, even after burning his godly power. He remained at 100 times the speed of light in the original universe. He was at light speed in the Land of Extremis.

Hua!

Suddenly, the view behind him became dark, and Luo Feng was only able to see the starry sky in front of him.

"I didn't enter the dark universe even after hitting the speed limit. It seems that there's no dark universe in the Land of Extremis." Luo Feng was perplexed. "Let's see... what kind of place Land of Extremis is."

He continued flying 100 times faster than light speed in the original universe...

******

Inside Luo Feng's god kingdom.

The Remote Ocean was churning, and Luo Feng sat on the square in front of his god kingdom.

"Although I'm trapped in Land of Extremis, I have gained more

than I lost! At least I got the fourth black metal of the Nine Volume Manual."

Luo Feng smiled. The fourth black metal had been hidden in the mountainside of Craftsman Mountain, and the information contained in the black metal was already transferred to him when the Golden Horned Beast swallowed the black metal. He gathered the practice methods of the first five volumes. However, a lot of information was missing in the fourth black metal, and when combined with the first three, they gave the practice methods of the first volumes.

"I've obtained the first seven volumes of the Nine Volumes Manual. Perhaps the last black metal can give me the last two volumes. I'll start practicing now!"

And so his original earthling body started the sixth volume of Nine Volume Manual...

******

Mosha body kept flying, moving 100 times faster than light speed in the original universe as the Golden Horned Beast inside the world ring started to practice the sixth volume of the Nine Volume Manual. Even if he failed to finish the sixth volume and his body turned into ashes, Luo Feng's godly body was strong enough to be immortal.

His body could be recovered as long as there was a portion of it left. The ashes would be gathered, which meant he was able to practice the Nine Volume Manual the in Land of Extremis without having to worry about failure.

He kept flying at the same speed for more than a year and finally flew into a galaxy.

Luo Feng exclaimed, "One star is jade, one is yellow and white, and one is rainbow-colored!"

When he reached the center of the galaxy, an old voice came out

of the yellow star, and it reached Luo Feng's surroundings several seconds later: "There is an intruder from another race in the Land of Extremis."

"We've been alone for a long time, Demon Sword Knight," replied a wicked voice from the rainbow-colored star.

"We haven't seen any other races for more than 60,000 eras," said a cold voice from the jade star.

Luo Feng was disturbed.

Hong!

A trace of invisible godly power penetrated Luo Feng as a soul attack, but Mosha body wasn't afraid of soul attack.

"He's an energy life form, and he doesn't fear soul attack," the wicked voice echoed through the sky.

"Let me crush him," said the cold voice.

"My turn," said the old voice.

******

Luo Feng looked into the distance, and three beings flew out of the stars. They reached the speed that was 100 times that of the light speed in the original universe and dashed toward Luo Feng.

"My Mosha body isn't good at fighting," he said.

Hua!

A three-foot-long Golden Horned Beast floated in the sky with his wings open, and Mosha body went into the world ring.

"Oh? A space beast?" said one of the three beings.

"A Golden Horned Beast," said another.

"Much better." The green being had a voice that was apathetic yet filled with aggression.

The Golden Horned Beast floated in the sky and recognized all

three of the universe overlords. They were universe-renowned universe overlords who had vanished from the universe a long time ago. They were Demon Sword Knight, Ce Tian Knight, and Feather Dark Horde Leader.

The Golden Horned Beast's voice resounded through the sky. "Demon Sword Knight, Ce Tian Knight, and Feather Dark Horde Leader... I can't believe you three are still alive!"

They slowed down and stopped in an area tens of thousands of miles away from Luo Feng. All three great beings were surprised.

"Somebody still remembers us!" said Ce Tian Knight.

"We aren't forgotten," Feather Dark Horde Leader said at the same time.

Demon Sword Knight gazed at the Golden Horned Beast indifferently and demanded, "Tell us now! What has happened in the past 200,000 eras?"

Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader also stared at the Golden Horned Beast.

"Demon Blade Knight," The Golden Horned Beast growled. "You speak as if commanding a slave. I don't like the way you talk... Although I empathize with you and I'm willing to tell you what's happened, the way you talk has disappointed me."

"Damn you!" Demon Blade Knight's eyes glinted coldly. "If you don't want to talk, then I'll beat the truth out of you!"

Hong!

His godly body started to burn.

Hua!

A streak of jade light streaked through the sky and charged at the Golden Horned Beast.

Luo Feng hadn't expected Demon Blade Knight to be so angry. He would have gladly answered him if Demon Blade Knight had asked

nicely. From the bottom of his heart, Luo Feng was willing to have a conversation with those universe overlords. Unfortunately, Demon Blade Knight didn't view him as his equal.

"Charge!" Ce Tian Knight said and instantly slammed Luo Feng with a staff that grew 6,000 miles long.

"Hahaha...!" Feather Dark Horde Leader guffawed, and his voice pierced the Golden Horned Beast body.

Although Luo Feng's willpower and consciousness were at the universe-overlord level, he was still affected. The Golden Horned Beast started to burn his godly body, and he shook his wing to try to dodge the blade.

Chi!

The blade slashed toward the Golden Horned Beast.

Peng!

The staff hit the head of the Golden Horned Beast. Demon Blade Knight and Ce Tian Knight cooperated with each other perfectly, and Feather Dark Horde Leader was affecting Luo Feng's mind and willpower constantly... The Golden Horned Beast was weaker than those universe overlords, and his godly body was still injured from his the encounter at Craftsman Mountain. He could only stand there and be beaten by them.

"His wing is a true treasure!" Ce Tian Knight shouted.

"And he's wearing true treasure armor," Feather Dark Horde Leader added. "He's able to resist all the attacks from us! He must be wearing a senior true treasure armor."

"Kill him!"

"Get the true treasures.

"The true treasure armor is mine, and you can have the others," Demon Blade Knight said coldly.

Both Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader were a bit

angry, but they knew that Demon Blade Knight was stronger than them... Besides, they still hadn't found a way to get out of Land of Extremis.

Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader nodded.

"Okay," said Ce Tian Knight.

"Okay," agreed Feather Dark Horde Leader.

"Golden Horned Beast, we don't care what's going on outside. We want your true treasures more." Then Demon Blade Knight looked at the Golden Horned Beast and said, "Die."

Howl! Snarl!

Hua! Hua!

Endless golden waters spread and enveloped the sky for tens of millions of square miles. Nine strange beasts swam in the water, and the Golden Horned Beast stood in the middle.

Feather Dark Horde Leader, Ce Tian Knight, and Demon Blade Knight were all shocked.

"A domain type true treasure!" they said as one.

"Want my true treasures?" said the Golden Horned Beast. Under the pressure of the golden river, the three universe overlords couldn't so much as touch the Golden Horned Beast. The Golden Horned Beast glared at them, infuriated. "Let's see who dies first!"

Chapter 1058: The Golden River in the Sky

The water in Nine Tiger River flowed through the sky and trapped the three universe overlords. They quickly slowed down.

"What should we do? He has a domain type true treasure, and we can't even get close to him," said Ce Tian Knight, sounding anxious.

Demon Blade Knight, however, frowned. "Feather Dark Horde Leader, can you attack you using your illusion and slow him down?"

"No, I can't!" answered Feather Dark Horde Leader, sounding helpless. "He has incredibly strong willpower and a strong mind—I can only affect him to a very small extent. He's still able to fly and dodge perfectly."

Under soul illusion, some top-tier techniques might not be perfectly performed. However, it would still be easy to fly.

"Forget it," Demon Blade Knight said. "We can't kill him, as he has a domain type true treasure. Let's spare his life and leave."

"Okay."

"I guess we have to do this."

Ce Tian Knight, Demon Blade Knight, and Feather Dark Horde Leader started to fly back to their planets.

"Want to flee?" asked a furious voice, and the Golden Horned Beast started to chase Demon Blade Knight.

"Humph! You dare to chase me even after I spared your life?" Demon Blade Knight glared at the Golden Horned Beast coming after him. "Perhaps I might not be able to catch you in your domain, but don't blame me for killing you since you delivered yourself to me!"

"Sounds like my life is in your hands," said the Golden Horned

Beast. "Hahaha... Hilarious! Demon Blade Knight, let's see who'll die!"

The Golden Horned Beast shook his wings and dashed at Demon Blade Knight. Under his burning godly power, his Shi Wu Wings slashed Demon Blade Knight! And the nine strange beasts in the Nine Tiger River also encircled Demon Blade Knight. The nine strange beasts were mighty and were able to severely injure secondary universe knights with the help of the Golden Horned Beast's godly power and amplification. As for universe overlords, though they were not able to hurt them, they could suppress their speed.

"You must be seeking your own demise," Demon Blade Knight said with disdain. He had scorned the Golden Horned Beast since the moment he first saw him. "You're too weak to fight me. And the only reason you're still breathing is your background, coming from the Space Beast Alliance and being bestowed an incredible true treasure... You couldn't hope to fight against me!"

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

The noise was deafening as Demon Blade Knight and the Golden Horned Beast began to fight within the golden river.

The Golden Horned Beast was only able to concentrate on one enemy at a time. Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader watched the fight from a distance, relaxed.

"He's just playing with fire," said Ce Tian Knight. "Not only did the Golden Horned Beast not flee with his domain type true treasure when he had the chance, but he dared to try to fight."

"Let's see how Demon Blade Knight crushes him," said Feather Dark Horde Leader.

The fight continued... One minute, five minutes, ten minutes... Although it was a fierce battle, it was the Golden Horned Beast who was haunting Demon Blade Knight. The Golden Horn Beast

kept being hit, but he didn't back down. He continued bringing the fight to Demon Blade Knight.

Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader watched, stupefied.

"This... Demon Blade Knight has burned one percent of his godly body at this point," Ce Tian Knight said with shock. "But that Golden Horned Beast's force doesn't change at all!"

"His godly body isn't weakened at all, even after burning for such a long time," said Feather Dark Horde Leader, also stunned.

******

Demon Blade Knight ceased being aloof and disdainful. Instead, he was distressed and furious. "His godly body hasn't changed at all after being hit for such a long time. But how? No wonder it's a senior true treasure armor!"

He sensed that the Golden Horned Beast was weak, and he even thought that the Golden Horned Beast hadn't triggered its third form. However, even the second form of a senior true treasure armor could weaken attacks to 1/1,000th.

"Even senior true treasures are useless. Break!"

A jade blade light tore through the golden river and slashed the Golden Horned Beast.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

Pu! Pu! Pu!

Pu! Pu! Pu!

There were nine attacks in total, and each successive attack was more powerful than the previous one. The ninth attack consumed two percent of Demon Blade Knight's godly body. Now eight percent of Demon Blade Knight's godly body had been consumed.

"What?" Demon Blade Knight was terrified. He glared at the Golden Horned Beast. "His godly body isn't weakened at all?"

Howl!

The Golden Horned Beast howled and shook his wings. His wings tried to strike Demon Blade Knight again.

Demon Blade Knight was in a fluster now. "The technique in his attack is only mediocre," he said. "Apparently, his law comprehension is not deep enough to drive the third form of a senior true treasure armor! Besides, I have a senior true treasure godly blade, and I just performed the ultimate technique I've perfected an eternity in the Land of Extremis. Even a universe overlord with a senior true treasure armor should be severely injured."

Hong!

The Golden Horned Beast dashed toward Demon Blade Knight again.

"Demon Blade Knight, I already told you...!" the Golden Horned Beast shouted. "Let's see who will die!"

Demon Blade Knight's eyes glinted with fear as he finally understood the Golden Horned Beast's plan.

"Damn it."

Demon Blade Knight tried to fly away.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Under the pressure of the golden waters, he wasn't able to fly fast enough! The Golden Horned Beast was 100 times faster than him, and he caught up with Demon Blade Knight instantly.

"Even if my godly body only has 42 percent left, it's a godly body with 600 million times that of a sector lord! It's millions of times stronger than yours! Besides, my Force Armor is a pinnacle true treasure! Even if you have a senior true treasure blade, and even if your technique is powerful, the Force Armor can weaken it to 1/10,000th... I might not be able to kill you! But I can slowly

consume your body! You can't even run away under the influence of Nine Tiger River! You can only die!"

The Golden Horned Beast howled. Demon Blade Knight had lost all his pride and only wanted to fly away.

******

Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader both understood what was happening, and they immediately left the domain of Nine Tiger River.

"Quick! Go!" said Ce Tian Knight. "Go!"

"What a terrific Golden Horned Beast..." Feather Dark Horde Leader said in amazement.

"The technique he used to defend against us was clumsy," Ce Tian Knight said. "It was like a technique from a secondary universe knight. I thought his true treasure armor only reached the second form, and I thought there was no doubt that Demon Blade Knight's ultimate technique would severely injure that Golden Horned Beast... But neither of us was correct. Demon Blade Knight's godly body was sharply weakened, but that Golden Horned Beast's godly body didn't change at all!"

Both Feather Dark Horde Knight and Ce Tian Knight were thrilled.

"He's dead," Ce Tian Knight said.

"Demon Blade Knight's definitely going to die," agreed Feather Dark Horde Knight.

Feather Dark Horde Knight and Ce Tian Knight exchanged eye contact. Both of them knew now that the Golden Horned Beast couldn't be killed. Demon Blade Knight couldn't run away under the pressure from the domain type true treasure. If he kept burning his godly body, his godly body would keep being weakened... And he would fall at some point! But if Demon Blade Knight stopped burning his godly body, he would be 1,000 times

weaker, and Nine Tiger River would be able to keep injuring him... Demon Blade Knight would die no matter what!

******

Demon Blade Knight transmitted his voice reluctantly. "Golden Horned Beast, spare my life, please."

"No chance!" The Golden Horned Beast roared. "Wait for your demise!"

"You're pushing me!" Demon Blade Knight was infuriated.

"Yes, I am! Weren't you trying to kill me? Your law comprehension is indeed deeper than mine, but you'll die anyway!"

The Golden Horned Beast kept charging Demon Blade Knight, who had no way to escape under the pressure from Nine Tiger River. This was what made domain type true treasures so precious. This one could trap the enemies when the user was at an advantage, help the user get away when he was at a disadvantage, and slaughter weaker opponents all at once.

"You, you, you...!" Demon Blade Knight roared in exasperation.

"Wait for your death," the Golden Horned Beast said and kept charging.

Even if Demon Blade Knight was many times better at fighting than the Golden Horned Beast, his godly body was being weakened continuously. But he didn't dare stop burning his godly body, as if he did, his defending power would tumble. His godly body would then be consumed even faster.

60 percent... 50 percent... 40 percent...

His godly body kept being weakened, and so did his power. And as he lost his power, his godly body was consumed more quickly.

"Golden Horned Beast!" Demon Blade Knight roared. "If I'm resurrected by turning back time, I'll become a universe master and kill you!"

"Then I'll kill you again!" the Golden Horned Beast bellowed. "Remember, it's me who'll kill you... Don't look for the wrong one! Unfortunately, you're a universe overlord. Perhaps it will be difficult to resurrect you."

"Just—just wait for it!" Demon Blade Knight shouted.

He was from Nine Territory Alliance, and there wasn't a universe supreme master in that alliance. Once a universe overlord was killed... the Nine Territory Alliance would need to ask for help from other powers or some lone universe supreme masters, which would be costly. Demon Blade Knight wasn't sure whether the Nine Territory Alliance would be willing to pay the price.

32 percent...! Demon Blade Knight could feel his godly body being weakened, and he got more infuriated. If he didn't self-destruct, he would be knocked out, and his soul might be controlled. But if he did self-destruct, he would die. And perhaps he would remain dead forever.

"I'll definitely die if I don't self-destruct, but at least I might still have a chance if I do so," he said.

"Goddamn you, Golden Horned Beast!" Demon Blade Knight roared. "Ah!"

Hong!

Demon Blade Knight blew himself up with a cry. The energies from the explosion swept across Nine Tiger River and annihilated it after producing tumbling waves.

"Humph," the Golden Horned Beast said, looked at it coldly. "I was planning to have a conversation with you, but you insisted on robbing me. Unfortunately for you, your valuables are mine now."

He waved his hands. The two valuables flew toward him. They were a green armor and a jade true treasure godly blade.

"He only had two true treasures?" The Golden Horned Beast took the true treasures.

Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Horde Leader witnessed what happened and sighed. A universe overlord had just died.

Hua! Hua!

The waves were churning, and the Golden Horned Beast stepped on the waves and transmitted his voice, saying, "Ce Tian Knight, Feather Dark Horde Leader, are you still going to be my enemies?"

Chapter 1059: Star Tear Gold

Ce Tian Knight and Feather Dark Knight looked at one another and communicated their thoughts through their gazes. They were a little fearful of this Golden Horned Beast, but it was only a feeling. After all, they were far away, so Golden Horned Beast's Nine Tiger River would not be able to exert its power over them. Without the oppression of Nine Tiger River, they would be able to accelerate easily to a speed 100 times of the speed of light of the Universe. Then Golden Horned Beast would never be able to give chase. But who would be willing to live like a homeless dog always on the run?

"We had no intentions of becoming your enemy, but Demon Sword Knight was so bent on killing you that we could only act according to his wishes," Ce Tian Knight said in his elderly voice.

Golden Horned Beast looked at the two faraway figures, and with much vigor, he inquired, "Would you be able to tell me how you got here? This Land of Extremis. How well do you know it?"

Feather Dark Horde Leader's spine-chilling voice said, "Since time immemorial, many great beings have fallen into this Land of Extremis. The majority were on adventures in secret regions but were accidentally transported here. There is a long list of ways how one can be transported here. There are also great beings who were drifting through the universe when they were suddenly swallowed by the seemingly normal starry sky, only to arrive here at the Land of Extremis."

"There is no regular pattern," Ce Tian Knight continued in his elderly voice.

Golden Horned Beast remained silent. After a moment of silence, he asked, "Has anyone made it out before?"

"Feather Dark Horde Leader, Demon Sword Knight, and I do not have other bodies," Ce Tian Knight. "Once we entered Land of

Extremis, if we were to self-destruct, our bodies would be disintegrated to naught. That is why we do not know anything about the outside world... We knew that Cang Hua Knight, with his ability to divide his body, had one of his bodies in the outside world and the other in the Land of Extremis. That was when his body in the outside world realized that there were great beings in the Land of Extremis who also had bodies in the outside world."

"Cang Hua Knight?" Golden Horned Beast said. "Where is he?"

"He made a final decision to abandon his godly body, along with a true treasure he had brought here," explained Ce Tian Knight. "He self-destructed."

"Are there others being trapped in the Land of Extremis?" Golden Horned Beast asked.

"Yes," said Ce Tian Knight,

"There are quite a few," Feather Dark Horde Leader said.

"Where?" Golden Horned Beast asked, watching the pair in the distance.

"They are somewhere in this vast, starry sky, but you want to know where, exactly?" Feather Dark Horde Leader said. "Great beings often drift about and change their locations. We are unable to tell for sure."

"How big is the Land of Extremis?" Golden Horned Beast asked. This was the question he was most concerned about.

"Land of Extremis has a diameter of close to 100,000 light years," said Feather Dark Horde Leader. "It resembles an ordinary star sky." He sighed and continued. "Yet everyone is restricted to flying within this domain of 100,000 light years. Even if one does manage to venture outside of this domain, the result is always to unknowingly be returned to the same place. It is like a maze. We are trapped in here eternally."

Luo Feng was appalled. A diameter of 100,000 light years? A

maze? If it was like a maze, then the great beings must still be exploring. Obviously, they had been flying around for a long time.

"This is like a gigantic prison cell," said Feather Dark Horde Leader. "We great beings are the prisoners, imprisoned here for life. There is no escape." Feather Dark Horde Leader looked at Golden Horned Beast. "You are a Golden Horned Beast. You must have the ability to divide your body... If you abandon your true treasure, you can self-destruct and leave."

Ce Tian Knight added in his elderly voice, "Golden Horned Beast, I advise you to self-destruct. After all, you have another body; if you are trapped in here for all time, you will experience the pain of imprisonment for life. As for your true treasure, so long as you are alive, you will be able to escape from danger alive."

Roar!

Golden Horned Beast let out a roar that resonated through the entire sky. "Ce Tian Knight, Feather Dark Horde Leader, self-destruction is never an easy choice to make. I will take my leave first."

Hua!

Golden Horned Beast and his sea of rolling golden waves vanished. A black figure transformed into a ray of light and disappeared quickly into space. He became a ray of light that shot off into the distance and out of sight.

"Demon Sword Knight has fallen," Ce Tian Knight sighed.

"Who can he blame but himself?" Feather Dark Horde Leader sneered. "He often abused his power and made us his victims. Humph! For him to succumb to Golden Horned Beast, it is just his luck."

******

In the starry sky, Mosha body sat cross-legged on a meteorite. He transformed into a beam of light and rode off to roam the starry

sky.

"To be able to kill a universe overload..." Luo Feng mused. "Luckily, this is Land of Extremis, where there is no way to contact the outside world and no way to call for help. Otherwise, how would a universe overlord perish so easily?"

Universe overlords were difficult to kill. When an unfavorable circumstance occurred, the first thing one should do would be to escape. Should one not manage to escape, then stalling for time to devise a plan—and immediately calling for help—would be the next step!

If Demon Sword Knight had been fighting against Luo Feng on the original star, the direst situation would be to sustain injuries, and he could count on the other great beings of the Nine Territory Alliance to come to his rescue immediately. But here in the Land of Extremis, there was simply no way to call for help. That was why Demon Sword Knight had to lose his life.

"Among the many universe overlords within my human race, there are some who have yet to kill universe overlords. Yet I have killed one now. Haha...!"

Luo Feng shook his head and laughed. Upon killing Demon Sword Knight, Golden Horned Beast's godly body had merely fallen below 42 percent to 41.9 percent.

Hua!

Sitting cross-legged on the meteorite, he continued speeding through the star sky.

******

In the twinkling of an eye, two months passed. In Luo Feng's God Country, in front of a golden palace in the vast sky above the Remote Ocean, Luo Feng stood up.

"Finally, a success."

Spending one year or so on training, he had finally managed to accomplish the sixth and seventh volumes of the Nine Volume Manual. Of course, he had his original earthing godly body to thank for that, as its small size helped speed things up... Golden Horned Beast body must still be stuck at the sixth volume—and only at the beginning stage of the sixth volume. Obviously, its massive size would impede the evolution of its godly body.

"Back when I was training for the first five volumes, my godly body genes were 48 times stronger after merging with 100 blood river crystals. By default, blood river crystals should generate an increase of 100 times, but it seems like the more I advance, the more the multiplying effect starts to gradually weaken... Now, I have only achieved an increase of 3,000 times. I am now going to work on two more volumes. My godly body is around 9,800 times stronger. There is no attaining the perfect gene level."

Luo Feng sighed. The blood river crystals would no doubt help to increase his life gene level, yet for his original earthling body, the increment—in theory and in actuality—did not correspond to 100 percent.

The first seven volumes of the Nine Volume Manual had brought his genes up 192 times... but with 100 blood river crystals, there was only an increase of 50 times more.

"9,800 times," he said. "Out of all the unique life-forms that were unique in the universe, there were only a few who could get this strong. I should be satisfied. Moreover, there is still the eighth volume. And the ninth! I don't believe that even after I reach the ninth volume I will still be unable to attain the perfect gene level. And my Golden Horned Beast body can take this opportunity to reach the perfect gene level in one stroke."

Luo Feng had not lost hope. Golden Horned Beast body had already exceeded 6,000 times previously! The sixth and seventh volumes were strong, and the blood river crystals were compatible with Golden Horned Beast. So long as there were no accidents, he

would be able to attain the perfect gene level.

"That is when Golden Horned Beast will become invincible. At least by that time I would be able to put my incredible talent technique 'I Am the Universe' to good use." Luo Feng could not wait for that day to come. Calculating the time required, he estimated that Golden Horned Beast would take at least 100 years to complete the sixth and seventh volumes.

"Well, it is only 100 years. It will pass in the blink of an eye."

******

In the vast, starry sky, black-robed Luo Feng sat cross-legged on the meteorite. It felt like he was moving very fast, but in contrast with the vastness of the sky, he might as well have been casually strolling.

Hua!

Suddenly, countless space ripples were seen.

"What?"

Luo Feng, sitting on the meteorite being driven by inertia, went right through the layer of ripples. There were no obstructions in his way, yet the moment his godly body grazed the ripples, he felt an intangible force brush past his godly body and permeate his world ring. There, it grazed his Golden Horned Beast godly body.

It was unstoppable. He had been completely grazed by the ripples.

The feeling that he got when being grazed by the ripples was unbearable. It felt like layers of knives slashing his godly body. When he made it past the layer of ripples, his Mosha body was left with only 30% of its godly being.

"Such frightening space ripples. What exactly is that? This... this starry sky has changed?"

Luo Feng was shocked to discover that after passing through the

ripples, the space before him was completely different. The sky before had been like any other in the universe, where the distances between the stars were generally far, and the star traveler levels were average. Yet on this side of the sky, it had a beauty that was out of this world. The distance between stars was nearer. Together, they were connected to depict a beautiful picture.

Luo Feng was vaguely aware that the countless planets combined to paint a picture that contained some form of secret law engravings.

"A hidden starry sky exists in the Land of Extremis?" Luo Feng wondered aloud.

Sitting on the meteorite, he cruised along at a leisurely pace, and soon, he was nearing the first star traveler level, which was the one closest to him.

He was approaching a khaki-colored planet that appeared ordinary. But Luo Feng faintly sensed something...

"This khaki-colored planet with no signs of life and a diameter of 13,000 miles... Star Tear Gold! It actually contains the mineral veins of the Star Tear Gold!"

Luo Feng's face turned pale. Looking at the star traveler level without any living beings, he was shocked.

"What an impressive energy reserve. If I were to swallow this star, my Golden Horned Beast's massive godly body would be able to recover to 80 percent."

Luo Feng could not help feeling incredulous.

Star Tear Gold, although it was only a G-grade metal, was unique... It was said that when a great star level collapsed to become a black hole, it would produce a piece of metal: Star Tear Gold. Star Tear Gold was, hence, a product of the tearing of the star level. Although it was only a G-grade metal, its functionality made it very precious.

Luo Feng had yet to come across such a thing, where a precious metal could form mineral veins that occupied almost an entire planet! Even the godly body of a universe overlord as big as 600 miles, upon swallowing this star, would be able to recover to 80 percent.

Hua!

Luo Feng disappeared in an instant, and Golden Horned Beast appeared.

Sou!

Golden Horned Beast flew off the meteorite and sped toward the khaki-colored planet.

A moment later, when he was about to arrive at the khaki-colored planet, Golden Horned Beast chanced upon another golden planet that that was quite close by. Casually, he exerted his godly power, and what he sensed gave him a shock.

"What? That golden planet contains Void Rock mineral veins. What an alarming reserve! In terms of value, it is definitely comparable to the Star Tear Gold of this planet."

Hong!

Golden Horned Beast landed on the khaki-colored planet, raised his head to look at the countless planets, and decided, "I shall investigate these two planets, they have precious mineral veins. And this mysterious space has countless planets. Does it mean that all of them contain precious mineral veins?"

Chapter 1060: Space God Mountain

Silence.

It was dead silent in this mysterious space, and the Golden Horned Beast was the only living creature here.

"No matter what, I'll recover my godly body first. I can only better handle the danger when I become stronger."

The Golden Horned Beast was suddenly enlarged, and he became 60,000 miles long. He floated above the space, and the space only had a diameter of 12,000 miles. The Golden Horned Beast was much larger than the planet.

"Inherited technique, 'Swallow'!"

The Golden Horned Beast opened his mouth, and the space around the planet was completely twisted. He was able to swallow the entire planet if he wanted, but he felt like it would be a waste if he just destroyed a star filled with Star Tear Gold. He controlled how fast he swallowed the Star Tear Gold. Masses of Star Tear Gold flew out and went into the mouth of the Golden Horned Beast. His gaping mouth swallowed the gold like a black hole.

Star Tear Gold and rocks kept being absorbed by the Golden Horned Beast, and the gold godly power kept recovering the Golden Horned Beast.

After a short while, half of the Star Tear Gold was swallowed by the Golden Horned Beast, and his godly body recovered to 60 percent.

"I'll go to another planet," he said.

The Golden Horned Beast flew to the closest planet and started to swallow the void rocks floating in space. He finished half the void rocks. He started to go to the third planet...

And found that on the third planet was the precious "Bright

Barium Swallowing Crystal Lake." Bright Barium Swallowing Crystal was a black, liquid metal like mercury. There were three enormous lakes on the third planet, making up 90 percent of the planet. The Golden Horned Beast finished an entire lake, and his godly body was completely recovered.

"Incredible." He floated around the third planet and gazed out into space. "I can sense the precious substances in the fourth planet... There's some more! There are twelve planets in the galaxy, and there might be valuables on every planet." The Golden Horned Beast gazed in the distance. "What about other galaxies?"

The galaxies were all close to each other. The images that were formed amazed Luo Feng; the space was like an enormous engraving in the sky.

******

Though it was mysterious and beautiful, it was quite boring here. There were no other creatures. The Golden Horned Beast flew to the fourth and fifth planets and started to inspect them... He wanted to dig out the secrets in this space.

Hong!

A powerful force emanated from the planet third closest to the star, and the force permeated at a speed of 20 million miles per second. After a short while, the Golden Horned Beast on the planet fifth closest to the star was alerted.

"Godly power! It's very strong. It must be coming from a universe knight."

The Golden Horned Beast raised his head and looked to the planet third closest to the star. He waved his wings and flew toward it. As he sped up, he saw another towering being flying toward him.

The Golden Horned Beast kept his godly body at 60,000 miles long. Another being with a godly body 60,000 miles long was flying

toward him.

"This... This is..."

The Golden Horned Beast looked at the universe knight of other race in surprise. He was a being with black scales and six gigantic hooves—a space beast known as a "Tremble." Trembles were at the second highest level among space beasts, only beneath the twelve pinnacle bloodlines.

The Golden Horned Beast and the Tremble were flying toward each other.

"Golden Horned Beast," said the Tremble.

"Tremble," the Golden Horned Beast replied.

They met each other halfway.

"Why are you also here?" the Golden Horned Beast asked.

"Because of you," the Tremble growled. "I'm here under the orders of the Space Beast Alliance to receive you. Come with me."

"What?" The Golden Horned Beast was dazed.

Luo Feng was completely bewildered. He had assumed that this space beast was also trapped in the Land of Extremis, but it sounded like he was here to retrieve him.

"Does this space belong to our Space Beast Alliance?" the Golden Horned Beast asked.

"Of course." The Tremble nodded his head, which was covered in armor. "This space is used by our alliance to cultivate precious materials. I know that you've swallowed some mineral veins. They belong to our alliance, and they're off-limits to individuals. But relax. The alliance won't punish you, as you don't know the rules. Besides, you've been wandering in the universe for so long and just came back. Our alliance won't punish those of the same race."

The Golden Horned Beast blinked. "So, that's what the Land of Extremis is?"

"Yes. This is the space controlled by the greatest being in the Space Beast Alliance: 'Ancestor.' It's the holy grail of all us space beasts," the Tremble said. "Ancestor is one of the greatest beings in the universe, and he changed the operation law in this space."

"Ancestor." Luo Feng quickly inferred that the Ancestor was a universe supreme master. "We're still in the original universe?"

"Yes," the Tremble explained. "However, the space is isolated from the outside! Only those wormholes can be utilized for transportation. To keep other races out, there are two areas: outer space and inner space. The outer space is the area where the other races are trapped in for an eternity. As for the inner space, it's hidden inside the outer space. You must've broken the space ripples before you got in. Only space beasts are able to get in without being killed. The other races aren't even able to find this place, not to mention enter it."

The Golden Horned Beast understood everything now. Land of Extremis was only the periphery of the sanctuary of the Space Beast Alliance.

"How did you get in?" the Golden Horned Beast asked. "Neither teleportation nor God Country Transportation is allowed here. How did you get here?"

"We space beasts rarely come here because we're usually at the center of the space, the center of the sanctuary of our alliance, Space God Mountain," the Tremble said. "I've got an order to receive you, and that's why I was transported to that planet. One planet in every galaxy in this space has a wormhole inside, and they all lead to Space God Mountain."

"There's a wormhole in every galaxy?" The Golden Horned Beast was shocked.

"That's right," the Tremble said. "Ancestor is almighty, and it's easy for him to create wormholes. Let's go. The supreme beings in the Space Beast Alliance are waiting for you."

"Okay."

Sou! Sou!

The two towering beings flew toward the planet third closest to the star. The Tremble reduced his size to 60 miles long.

"Golden Horned Beast, can you make your godly body smaller?" the Tremble said.

"Sure."

The Golden Horned Beast became 60 miles long, matching the size of the Tremble. They flew toward the planet while talking. Then they shrank to several feet long and entered the center of the planet.

"This is the wormhole," the Tremble said. "We can get to Space God Mountain through it."

"Let's go," the Golden Horned Beast answered expectantly.

He looked at the space whirlpool in front of him. It had a diameter of only a few dozen yards.

The Tremble and the Golden Horned Beast flew into the space whirlpool.

******

It was a vast space containing numerous space whirlpools. All the whirlpools had a diameter of dozens of yards. However, there were too many of them, and one couldn't see the end of the space. At the center of those whirlpools was a towering mountain.

The Golden Horned Beast and the Tremble exited the space whirlpool at the same time.

"This..." The Golden Horned Beast was shocked by the scene before him. The space whirlpools were dispersed throughout this space, surrounding the gigantic mountain like flowers.

A black mountain! It was a mountain several light years tall—a

gigantic mountain that could rival Star Tower and the Five-Color Aurora Lake. The black mountain was floating. He could sense the dimming force, and there were some space beasts flying around.

"See, the supreme beings of our alliance, universe masters, and the greatest Ancestor... They all live there!" the Tremble growled, and his eyes glinted with pride. "This is the sanctuary of our alliance, Space God Mountain!"

The Golden Horned Beast was amazed.

"There are countless great beings in Space God Mountain, as well as countless valuables and inheritances," the Tremble growled. "It's got everything, and it's even connected to the universe. It's a universe that only belongs to us space beasts."

"A universe?" the Golden Horned Beast gasped in astonishment.

"Yes," the Tremble answered proudly. "A universe! A universe that only belongs to us! Go! Go to Space God Mountain! Every space beast vagabonding in the universe needs to go to Space God Mountain. As long as you're recognized by Space God Mountain, you'll be one of us! The mountain will eliminate any other races... After all, some space beasts have had soul transfer done on them. It's difficult to differentiate, but nothing can be hidden in Space God Mountain."

No...! The Golden Horned Beast was terrified.

"Go, " the Tremble urged him, looking at the towering mountain. "There are several universe masters waiting for you. See? Great beings are coming to receive you."

More than ten powerful Golden Horned Beasts flew toward him from afar, emanating a powerful energy.

"They're the great beings of you Golden Horned Beasts," said the Tremble.

Chapter 1061: Golden Horn Master

Luo Feng had roamed the universe for close to 100,000 years, but this was the first time he had come across other golden horned beasts. It was also unique that ten of them were universe knights.

The dozen enormous golden horned beasts approached at high speed, their resounding voices were transmitted loud and clear.

"Brother."

"Welcome home, my brother."

"Our brother who has been roaming the universe! Welcome home."

The Golden Horn Beast version of Luo Feng, along with his companion, "Tremble," had no choice but to also approach them.

Tremble said in a low voice, "I have fulfilled my orders in bringing him here. Now that all of you are here, I will hand things over to you."

"You may leave."

"Leave it to us."

"We will take care of everything," the dozen golden horned beasts said in unison.

Tremble nodded slightly and smiled at Golden Horn Luo Feng before he transformed into light and took off. Golden Horn Luo Feng was then surrounded by the group of golden horned beasts who were all quite warm and friendly. They had all roamed the universe as loners for a long time before being invited into the Alliance. And so, these seniors were sincere and compassionate toward a member of their own kind who had just returned to join the team.

"I am Fan Knight."

"I am Mountain Engraving Knight."

"I am Mercapto Gold Knight."

Each golden horned beast introduced itself. Every name was very different, as these golden horned beasts all had their fair share of life encounters. As they roamed the universe, they had chosen names to identify themselves. It was nothing uncommon, as knights often had different names.

Facing the group of golden horned beast knights who were all oozing with enthusiasm, Golden Horn Luo Feng could only reciprocate. "I am Golden Feng Knight," he said.

"Haha, Golden Feng Knight! Welcome home! It is very rare for someone to only return to Alliance for the first time after attaining the universe knight level."

"To be able to cultivate yourself independently to attain the universe knight level, Golden Feng Knight, my brother, your talent is impressive."

"With the help of our Alliance, you will become stronger."

Golden Horn Luo Feng listened on, replying with occasional responses. Inwardly, he was enjoying himself in this atmosphere. These golden horned beasts were supposedly cold and murderous, yet their so-called "murderous" nature was only displayed against hostile races. When they met with other space beasts, they were warm-hearted and affectionate; when they met with their own race, they would feel an even stronger cordiality for one another, as they all shared the same bloodline.

Rumor has it that the Space Beast Alliance is very mysterious, thought Luo Feng. Internally, they are all very united. No wonder. Golden Horn Luo Feng gave a discreet sigh. They have been alone for too long, so when they meet their own race, every one of them will treat each other like kin.

"Let's go, go, go. Universe Master must be getting impatient."

"Let's talk no more."

"We should hurry back."

The dozen golden horned beasts led the way for Golden Horn Luo Feng, and one could see a group of golden horned beasts roaring at one another as they ascended into the star sky. Then they took off for the faraway Space God Mountain.

******

Golden Horn Luo Feng and the dozen golden horned beasts cruised through the sky together, but he was secretly worried.

Based on what Tremble told me, in Space God Mountain, everything hidden will be exposed. Will I be exposed too?

Luo Feng was also aware that this territory of the Space Beast Alliance was under the control of its noblest being: Ancestor. But there was no backing out now!

"Mercapto Gold Knight," said Golden Horn Luo Feng as they flew in midair. "If I were to meet our universe master, which universe master would it be?"

"There are a number of universe masters who are curious about you," one of them answered. "But, first and foremost, you must meet the two universe masters who are of the same bloodline as us, the golden-horned beasts. They are Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master."

"Two of them?" Golden Horn Luo Feng was surprised.

"We golden horned beasts have a bloodline that is characterized by strong capabilities," Fan Knight said proudly. "For the 12 pinnacle bloodlines, every one of them only has one universe master. But our golden horned race... We have two! Golden Horn Master is the most senior universe master of our golden horned race, while Xuan Mie Master is a newly-appointed universe master who has become a universe master 1,000 centuries ago."

Golden Horn Luo Feng listened obediently. As they flew, they engaged in conversation while maintaining a speed that was 100

times the speed of light. Very quickly, they arrived at their destination, the vast and boundless Space God Mountain.

"Space God Mountain..."

Golden Horn Luo Feng gazed at the mountain attentively, but all he could see was a boundless mountain covered with pitch-black stones. It was not ordinary black but rather a hue that resembled a black hole, exuding a sense of emptiness. It was as though every stone represented a black hole... Space God Mountain was extensive beyond description, and it was divided into numerous domains. Constructing so many of these gigantic godly palaces would have been more tedious than constructing the godly palaces for humans.

"Space ripples?" It was the first time Golden Horn Luo Feng felt a space ripple here.

"Places with space ripples allow one to teleport," one of the golden horn beasts answered. "This is how Ancestor enables us to get to different places quickly. However, there are many restricted lands that do not have space ripples."

"Follow me."

"We're going to the palace of Golden Horn Master."

The dozen golden horned beasts led the way with great enthusiasm as they flew in the sky of Space God Mountain. Space God Mountain towered at a height of countless light years... Even the huge body of a golden-horned beast, when compared to the Space God Mountain, was like comparing an earthworm to a star.

Sou!

Sometimes they teleported, but sometimes they advanced normally. This pattern went on for six minutes, and finally, they arrived at a towering, gigantic palace hall engraved with countless golden horned beasts' embossments. This palace was around 60 million miles high. It emitted an intimidating vibe, which led Luo

Feng to a verdict instantly... This should be a flying-palace type true treasure.

"This is Golden Horn Master's flying-palace type true treasure. Its power is extremely strong," Fan Knight said.

"Proceed. Let's go in."

There were several undying golden horned beasts flying and playing with one another in the open square before the palace. When they saw Golden Horn Luo Feng approaching, every one of them looked over with eyes filled with curiosity. Everyone knew the number of golden horned beasts in the Space Beast Alliance was small; practically everyone knew each other. But no one knew this newcomer brought in by the dozen golden horned beasts knights.

The undying golden horned beasts conversed among themselves in hushed tones.

"Could it be his first time coming to the Alliance?"

"He just got escorted in here?"

"The aura of his godly body is so strong. It is stronger than the godly bodies of many other universe knights."

On the other hand, Mercapto Gold Knight, Fan Knight and the other golden horned beast knights led Luo Feng straight to the doors of the palace. This might be Golden Horn Master's palace, but there were no guards at the doors.

"Come on in, my child," a booming voice came from inside.

Golden Horn Luo Feng felt the tremors running through his veins. He obeyed... He suspected the voice would be that of Golden Horn Master. Golden Horn Master was the oldest and most senior universe master of the golden-horned beast race, so it was understandable for him to call the younger ones who were returning to the race his "children." After all, Luo Feng was much younger by unknowable centuries.

"Go in."

"Move."

Fan Knight and the others went in with Golden Horn Luo Feng. Four hooves took great steps as they made their way into the spacious godly palace. Their footsteps were very fast; they could cover at least one million miles per second. They advanced straight to the center of the palace and stopped.

"We're here to pay our respects, Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master," Fan Knight and the dozen other golden horned beasts said, greeting them respectfully.

"I'm here to pay my respect, Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master," Golden Horn Luo Feng said, followed suit. Then he lifted his head and saw that high above stood a towering golden horned beast with gigantic wings covered with scaled armor.

This was a most intimidating being, with an aura that could be likened to an endless universe. The being was looking down at him. On its left stood another golden horned beast. It wore dark red armor. The basic features of a golden-horned beast would be to have five sharp claws, but this beast in dark red armor sported an extremely long and golden middle claw. As it looked down at Luo Feng, there were indistinct traces of an endless whirlpool, as though its gaze could have annihilated the universe in a fleeting moment. Luo Feng immediately concluded that this noble being in the dark red armor was the newly appointed universe master known as Xuan Mie Master.

"Fan Knight, you all may take your leave," Golden Horn Master ordered in a measured pace.

"Yes," said the dozen golden horned beasts as they bowed in respect and flew off together.

In the great hall, there remained only Golden Horn Luo Feng and the two universe masters: Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie

Master.

Golden Horn Master looked down and exclaimed in a resounding voice, "What a strong godly body! For you to have roamed the universe alone and achieved what you have now... That is quite unexpected."

"You are even comparable to quite a number of universe overlords," said Xuan Mie Master in a voice that was gentler.

Golden Horn Luo Feng listened submissively. On the surface, no one could tell that he was undying. Firstly, his godly body was indeed strong; secondly, the space law took metal, wood, water, fire, and earth as the upper law, so he was considered a space knight. Godly bodies could easily manifest themselves into any one of the five elements—metal, wood, water, fire, or earth—or even manifest into complete space. As for golden horned beasts, most would normally manifest their space godly powers into the gold element.

"To achieve the level you are at, all by yourself, you are indeed outstanding," Golden Horn Master said with joyful eyes. "I was discussing with the other universe lords about how we could carry out some unique training for you. With the Alliance's guidance, you have high hopes of becoming a universe master."

Xuan Mie Master, standing beside Golden Horn Master, began to laugh. "Haha! If you become a universe master, then the Golden Horned Beast legacy shall have three universe masters. We will be ranked first on the Twelve Lineages, alongside Qiu He Beast."

Qiu He Beast... One of the Twelve Pinnacle Lineages.

Luo Feng listened attentively. Inwardly, he sighed...

If I made it this far without any great beings' guidance, then the elaborate training that the Space Beast Alliance could provide would certainly raise my chances of becoming a universe master! No wonder the Space Beast Alliance is giving me so much

attention. What a pity... I am capable enough to hope to become a universe master, but I am a human! Not a golden-horned beast!

"Space God Mountain houses many inheritances and countless valuables," said Golden Horn Master. "To boost your blood lineage, godly body amplification technique, or soul amplification technique! All are available." Golden Horn Master gazed at Luo Feng and continued. "The Ancestral God School's God inheritance token, the general inheritance token, and even the Beast God inheritance token are certainly available to you, too. Actually, the general inheritance token differs from the other amplification techniques only because it has an additional set of powerful and unique techniques. That's all."

Luo Feng understood what he was trying to explain. He remembered that the demon note general inheritance token consisted of two aspects: one was the soul amplification type of technique, and the other was the demon note secret technique.

The Hong Alliance also had the godly body amplification technique and soul amplification technique... These required contributions, however, and Luo Feng did have enough to exchange for them. It would require a long time to cultivate and master the techniques, which was why Luo Feng intended to first obtain the fourth black metal board before returning for training.

"Huh?" Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master suddenly turned to look at one another.

Golden Horn Luo Feng also sensed something amiss. He raised his head to look at the two universe masters.

"My child, Ancestor has orders," Golden Horn Master's voice resounded loudly. "He beckons you."

Gold Horn Master moved forward, stepping down from where he had previously stood.

Chapter 1062: Space Beast Ancestor

"Meet the Ancestor?"

Luo Feng was truly terrified. The nine superpowers were classified as superpowers because they had a universe supreme master, like Gigantic Axe Founder within the human race. Although Luo Feng belonged to the human race, he still hadn't met him. The only universe supreme leader he had met was Zuo Shan Ke. And now, he was going to meet the greatest being in Space Beast Alliance?

Hong! Long!

Golden Horn Master stepped on the floor and walked to Luo Feng's side.

"Don't worry, and don't be scared," Golden Horn Master said, looking at Luo Feng gently. "There are many universe knights within our alliance, but most of them haven't met the Ancestor! Yet you are to be received by the Ancestor right after you came back... You're lucky."

Xuan Mie Master also walked down. "If Ancestor values you," he said, "you'll get many more resources. Ancestor has the greatest power within our alliance."

"I'm just a bit intimidated," Golden Horned Luo Feng murmured.

"It would be weird if you were not. Let's go."

Then Golden Horn Master constrained Luo Feng by manipulating the surrounding time and space and flew out like a beam of light, followed by Xuan Mie Mater.

******

Flying, teleporting and flying. Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master led Luo Feng and reached the peak of Space God Mountain after almost 20 minutes. There was an independent mountain at

the peak! The mountain was around 60 million miles tall, and it looked blurry. There were countless beast sculptures, including all the races within the space beasts.

There were 12 universe knights guarding the mountain down there, and each of them was from a pinnacle bloodline of space beasts.

"Golden Horn Master, Xuan Mie Master." The guards gave a salutation and cleared the way. Apparently, they had been informed ahead of time by Ancestor.

Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master were walking in the front, followed by Golden Horned Luo Feng. They walked along a mountain road.

"This is Ancestor Mountain," Golden Horn Master said slowly. "It's a terrific true treasure."

"Indeed, it is," Golden Horn Luo Feng said. He could feel the energy coming from Ancestor Mountain, which made it difficult for him to even stand up straight. But it made sense, as a true treasure used by a universe supreme master was certain to be mighty. Although it was inferior to Star Tower, it was definitely much more powerful than Thousand Treasures River.

"We must walk on the road. Otherwise, we'll be attacked. A simple attack from the Ancestor Mountain can kill a universe knight easily, so don't trespass without permission." Golden Horn Master instructed Luo Feng as he walked forward.

They arrived at the deep of 'Ancestor Mountain' very soon. Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master lowered their heads almost at the same time to show respect.

"Ancestor."

"Ancestor."

"Ancestor?" said Golden Horned Luo Feng. He didn't see him. He looked to the distance, and that was when he saw a dimming soft

body showing up slowly. A gigantic head showed up from the mountain. It looked like a dragon's head, but it was topped with nine horns like crowns.

The head itself was thousands of miles long, and a part of a claw showed up in the forest afar. Luo Feng could see that there were nine toes on the claw. Although he could only see a small part of Ancestor, he speculated that he was tens of thousands of miles long.

"Ancestor," Golden Horned Luo Feng said, keeping his head low.

Ancestor raised his eyelids and glanced at Luo Feng. "Is this the exceptional talent you deem worthy of our alliance?"

"Yes," Xuan Mie Master replied respectfully.

"Ancestor," Golden Horn Master said, raising his head, "although this child just came back, he has an incredibly powerful body. Besides, Flame Star told us before that this child was able to seize a component of Blade River Luo. Though we don't care about that component, it still shows his power. Hahaha! There shall be a third universe master among us Golden Horned Beasts."

Golden Horned Luo Feng kept his head low. The component of Blade River Luo? He had exchanged it for Nine Tiger River...

"You two can go back first," Ancestor said.

"Okay," Xuan Mie Master reply.

Golden Horn Master asked with thrill, "Ancestor, are you going to train him yourself? He's an exceptional talent among the golden horned beasts. Don't fool us!"

"Yes," Ancestor replied.

Golden Horn Master was exhilarated. He turned his head to Luo Feng and said, "Golden Feng, Ancestor is going to train you himself. You're fortunate enough to have that. Treasure this great opportunity."

"Yes," Golden Horned Luo Feng said, listening carefully.

"Let's go."

Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master left.

The giant head of Ancestor stared at Luo Feng. Luo Feng remained standing to one side.

"Impressive of you to kill Demon Blade Knight," said Ancestor.

Luo Feng understood that Ancestor completely changed the operation law in the Land of Extremis, and naturally, nothing could be hidden from him. He said, "Just luck."

"Do you really think you can fool me, human?" Ancestor's voice resounded through in the space.

He was recognized.

"No wonder you're peerless in the human race," Ancestor said slowly. "Luo Feng, you're a human, not a space beast. You cannot attain the resources of my race."

"I understand."

Golden Horned Luo Feng went into the world ring, and Mosha body appeared in his place. Ancestor must have known about his Mosha body since the Land of Extremis was under his control.

Luo Feng turned back into his human form and gave a salutation. "Ancestor! I was trapped in the Land of Extremis accidentally, and I couldn't escape it. I could only wander around, and I was led here. I didn't mean to deceive you. I did soul transfer on a golden horned beast body when I was weak. Please, forgive me."

"Your hometown was almost destroyed by a golden horned beast," Ancestor said. "It was lucky that you did the soul transfer. Indeed, you didn't mean to come here, so I don't care about that."

Actually, before becoming undying, the Space Beast Alliance didn't care about space beasts no matter what happened to them, and the alliance would only guide them home after they became

undying.

Luo Feng was shocked by Ancestor's insight. Even among humans, only a few knew about what had happened on Earth with the golden horned beast. How did Ancestor know about it?

"You didn't come here by chance," Ancestor said slowly. "Instead, you came here because of your master, Zuo Shan Ke."

Luo Feng was dazed. Zuo Shan Ke?

"Zuo Shan Ke values you more than his second disciple Flame Emperor," Ancestor said. "He asked me to open the center of my alliance... There's no need to thank me. If you make efforts, there will be rewards. Your master Zuo Shan Ke has paid a sufficient price."

Luo Feng now understood that everything had been planned by Master Zuo Shan Ke.

"You're following the path of beast god," Ancestor continued. "In the universe, I'm the best at cultivating great beings following the path of beast gods. As for the Ancestral God School... They only know a little about beast gods. Space beasts are the heirs of beast gods."

"What?" Luo Feng was shocked.

Heirs? Luo Feng had already been baffled at how Golden Horned Beast was able to easily merge with so many blood river crystals and wield the power fully. And now, he knew that space beasts were the heirs of beast gods!

Wow! he thought. A secret! Definitely a top secret in the universe!

"I opened the most important place of my alliance to you," said Ancestor. "I bet you can understand it." He looked down at Luo Feng. "However, don't think it's easy. Your master has made a requirement, that if you can't meet the requirement, you'll be trapped forever."

Luo Feng blinked his eyes.

"Zuo Shan Ke has a ridiculously high requirement." Ancestor studied Luo Feng. "In my opinion, you won't be able to do that. Even after billions of years."

Luo Feng frowned. This came from Ancestor! A universe supreme master! A universe supreme master knew exactly how many miracles Luo Feng had achieved, and he knew that Luo Feng had only been practicing for less than 100,000 years. However, he still dared to say something like that Zuo Shan Ke's requirement had was incredibly tough.

"I even bet him that if you can succeed within 100,000 eras, I'll give you a true treasure series most suitable for those following the beast god path. However, if you fail, your Master will give me a pinnacle true treasure." Again, Ancestor looked down at Luo Feng. "I can tell from your eyes that you're determined and confident, and I know that you have always made miracles. However, you'll be desperate when you know your Master's requirement. I even think that you'll be trapped forever. Unless you're willing to self-destruct and leave."

Luo Feng clenched his fist.

Just wait and see! Even if you are a universe supreme master, I'll show you! You're underestimating me by saying that I can't succeed within 100,000 eras!

Luo Feng considered for a moment. But on second thought, what challenge has Master Zuo Shan Ke given me that he is willing to risk a pinnacle true treasure and Ancestor is willing to risk a set true treasure?

"Go in," Ancestor's voice boomed. "I bet you're not going to succeed in 100,000 eras."

Luo Feng disappeared.

Chapter 1063: Beast God Sector

Luo Feng felt the ever-changing nature of time velocity. It was as though he were passing through the universe path leading back to the primal universe.

Hua!

The surroundings zoomed into clarity.

"Where am I?"

Luo Feng looked around and saw towering trees and plants. Those ancient trees were at least 60 miles high.

Sou!

He shot up into the air and hovered above the forest. High up in the sky, he surveyed the surroundings. At first glance, there was a vast plain a distance away from this forest. Within his field of vision, he could only see two vast domains: the forest and the plain. On these two domains, he saw numerous enormous, towering sculptures representing the legendary Eight Natural Beast Gods. Every one of these Natural Beast Gods had its own set of sculptures that were doing various things like sleeping, roaring with their heads raised, playing, and in many other poses...

There were many different types of Natural Beast God sculptures, and each of these had an intimidating presence. It was as if the actual beast gods were present.

"Where am I?" Luo Feng said again. "The Space Beast Alliance's Ancestor told me that he would grant me access to the Space Beast God Alliance's restricted land. Is this it?" Luo Feng looked around. "Could this be their restricted land?"

Suddenly, Luo Feng's face contorted in surprise. "No...! Time velocity!"

He had just connected with his original earthling body via his

consciousness, and he quickly realized that there was a huge difference in time velocity between the different spaces the two consciousnesses were in. The magnitude of this difference was overwhelming, and it gave Luo Feng quite a shock.

Merely one second in the primal universe had gone by, yet Luo Feng had spent a good 100,081 seconds here, meaning to say that the ratio of time velocity was an alarming 1:10,081.

"How is that possible? How can the ratio of time velocity be so exaggerated?" Luo Feng found it unbelievable. "That means that spending 10,000 years here would only be spending one year in the primal universe! Even if I were able to purchase a 'time palace' from my human race, the normal ones can accelerate time velocity by ten times or several dozen times."

Valuables like time palaces could only be made by universe masters who had complete space law comprehension, yet the time palaces created were no different from a place for cultivation. The only difference was that time velocities were much faster in time palaces. Ten years of cultivation in a time palace would equate to something like a month on the outside world. According to what Luo Feng knew, a time palace was very costly. Normal ones that accelerated time velocities by ten or a few dozen times were considered average, but those with acceleration of up to 100 times cost a fortune.

For those with an acceleration of 10,000 times... humans would not possess such time palaces.

an elderly voice resonated throughout the entire place: "Luo Feng!"

Luo Feng turned his head abruptly. In the distance, he saw some black clouds approaching, and the clouds gave off an overbearing force that suppressed the entire world. When these clouds neared him, they transformed into a golden horned beast, and this beast transformed again, now taking the form of an elderly human

wearing a white robe and nine sharp horns on its head.

"Ancestor?" Luo Feng asked hesitantly.

"This is my other body," Ancestor said, stepping out into midair. "The place you are in now is a universe owned solely by my Space Beast Alliance!"

"Another universe?" Luo Feng was taken aback.

He had learned during his chat with Tremble that the Space Beast Alliance owned a universe. Luo Feng found it likely, as the Space Beast Alliance was comparable to the Hong Alliance in terms of capabilities. Since the human race owned the primal universe, it would not be unheard of for the Space Beast Alliance to own one too.

"And here, right in the middle of this universe, is the Beast God Sector," Ancestor continued, watching Luo Feng. "This is a place specially for training the great beings among beast gods."

"Beast God Sector?" Luo Feng said.

He gazed into the vast, boundless world, thinking about how intimidating the numerous beast sculptures looked. They exuded a powerful energy that felt much more oppressive than the Xi Luo Duo sculpture had back then.

"This is the actual restricted ground of my Space Beast Alliance," said Ancestor. "Even the geniuses of my Space Beast Alliance may not have the chance to enter. Your Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest has been very willing when it comes to you. He even approached me personally to ask for my help, but I doubt you will be able to succeed within 100,000 centuries. 100,000 centuries in the Beast God Sector is only 10,000 years on the primal universe." Ancestor smiled. "One year in one century... I'm afraid you have yet to experience it."

"Yes," Luo Feng said. He was full of admiration for this form of time velocity.

"May I ask what request Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest asked of you?" Luo Feng pressed Ancestor for answers. "What do I need to achieve to make it out of here?"

"He gave a simple request." Ancestor looked at Luo Feng, then revealed, "Defeat me, then you can go out!"

"De... Defeat... you...?" Luo Feng's eyes widened.

How could he defeat the Ancestor of Space Beast Alliance? Defeat a universe supreme master?

You've got to be kidding!

Ancestor smiled. "I will maintain my power and strength at the same level as your godly body," he said. "My godly body will be using the same strength as yours, so if you are able to defeat a similar godly body such as mine, you are able to make it out of here."

"How is that possible?" Luo Feng shook his head vigorously. "You are a universe supreme master. Your techniques and methods are all out of this world... Even if a universe master were to be here, he would not be able to do this. Let's not even mention universe masters at all—another universe supreme master might not even be able to do this."

"Right. A universe master would not be able to do this," Ancestor told Luo Feng. "But another universe supreme master would be able to. Because this is only another body of mine... The best he could do would be to suppress a universe master. But to suppress a universe supreme master, this body is not enough."

"Does that mean I have to become a universe supreme master to get out of here?" Luo Feng shook his head. "Impossible! How outrageous could this possibly be?"

No matter how confident Luo Feng was, he would not dare to say that he could become a universe supreme master within 100,000 centuries! He had not expected Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest to

be foolish to such an extent. Regardless of how conducive this restricted land of Space Beast Alliance might be, it did not have the conditions to groom him into a universe supreme master. Moreover, there was certainly no way a universe supreme master could be cultivated!

Cultivation of the beast god path, time space path, and many other such paths could only lead up to the universe master level. This was the limit. There was simply no proper way to become a universe supreme master! If one wanted to become a universe supreme master, the only way was to depend on oneself. This was what Sitting Mountain Guest had told Luo Feng in the past.

"Do not worry," said Ancestor. "Your teacher has given you a glimmer of hope." He smiled again.

Luo Feng let out a silent sigh of relief. Maybe the request would not be quite so outrageous.

"When you are at the undying level," said Ancestor, "I can only utilize the 'pinnacle technique at a universe master standard.' When you have attained the universe knight level, I can use the ultimate technique at a universe master standard. When you have become a universe master, that is when I can use my most powerful technique."

"Whether you are undying, a universe knight, or a universe master, this body of mine will maintain the same level of godly body as yours," Ancestor reassured him. "I will also act according to the level of your law comprehension. The more it increases, the more techniques I will get to use."

Luo Feng stood stock-still. The pinnacle technique at a universe master standard?

"Of course," Ancestor said as if reading his thoughts. "Pinnacle technique... The pinnacle technique I will use is definitely the closest to 'ultimate.'"

Luo Feng sank into despair. Ridiculous! Simply ridiculous!

He was merely an undying being, yet he had to battle the Space Beast Ancestor? Although Ancestor would only be using a pinnacle technique close to the ultimate technique at a universe master standard, it was nonetheless akin to an ultimate technique.

"Defeat? How could I, a mere undying being, create an ultimate technique of a universe master?" Luo Feng shook his head. "This must be a joke!"

Undying, to create an ultimate technique of a universe master? It was unheard of! Impossible!

If I were to achieve a breakthrough and become a universe knight, then Ancestor would be using the most powerful ultimate technique of a universe master, thought Luo Feng. Judging by Ancestor's techniques... I'm afraid the most powerful ultimate technique of the universe master level that he will use would be much stronger than that of Primal Chaos City Leader.

Luo Feng could not help sinking deeper into despair. When I have become a universe master, Ancestor will not hold back anymore. He will give it his all. Hopeless.

Upon comparison, being at the undying level would have been more hopeful. As just an undying, he had to create an ultimate technique of a universe master? This must have just been a dream.

Ancestor was still smiling as he continued, "That is why I think you won't be able to succeed, even if you have eons of time. That is why, when your Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest made a gamble with the stipulation of 100,000 centuries, I was full of confidence that I would not lose the bet. Hahaha...! If you want to achieve this, you have two paths to choose from. One, at an undying level, you can create an ultimate technique of a universe master. Two, you can stay in my Beast God Sector long enough to become a universe supreme master."

"There are only two paths," continued Ancestor, "so to become a universe knight or a universe master or anything else, don't think anymore. The moment you lose focus on trying to increase your law comprehension, the amount of time you will require and use up will continue to accumulate! From undying to pinnacle universe knight, this law comprehension alone will take a long time... making it even less possible for you to succeed within 100,000 centuries. You only have two paths. Either of them is somewhat possible. To become a universe supreme master, there is a trace of possibility. To be an undying being that creates an ultimate technique of a universe master, there is also a trace of possibility."

Ancestor never lost his smile while talking to Luo Feng. He added, "Of course, it will only be a trace of possibility. I, for one, think that you will not be able to achieve any of these at all. I think you will be trapped in the Beast God Sector forever."

Luo Feng felt helpless. It was little wonder that Ancestor, who stood high at the pinnacle of the universe, would dare to take up such a gamble. It was no wonder he was so confident.

A trace of possibility? Perhaps. But only on a purely theoretical scale. In reality, the chances might not be more than one out of countless eons.

"Beast God Sector is open to you," said Ancestor. "You can use it for your cultivation."

Ancestor gestured to indicate the surroundings. In the distance, Luo Feng could see that the numerous sculptures and part of the plains were glowing brightly. A domain even further away was glowing so brightly that the rays seemed to shoot up into the sky.

"Sculptures, ground, faraway mountains, and cliffs," said Ancestor. "Some of these have law engravings, and some have secret techniques. There are all kinds of techniques like the godly body amplification technique, soul amplification technique, battle technique, close combat technique, soul attack technique, spiritual

force weapon technique... You can have everything you want under the sun. Power levels range from strong to strongest. We even have as many as dozens of sets of ultimate techniques of universe masters. Learn to your heart's desire."

"Everywhere in this Beast God Sector is open to you," Ancestor reiterated with a smile. "You can research every secret technique, develop your talent, and then... create a miracle. Haha! If you want a challenge, I am ready to oblige anytime. Of course, if you do become a universe supreme master, there is no need for a challenge anymore. You have already succeeded. Enjoy looking around. Enjoy learning. I will be waiting for your challenge... Hahaha...! 100,000 centuries. Interesting, interesting..."

Ancestor laughed again, then vanished into thin air.

Chapter 1064: The Only Possibility

Luo Feng landed after Ancestor left. He landed beside a lake and sat down with his legs crossed. He calmed himself down. After which, he opened his eyes and started to think about the challenge.

"Master Zuo Shan Ke paid a huge price to get this chance for me! However, how can I beat Ancestor in any body? By becoming a universe supreme master? That's too far from me. Creating universe-master-level ultimate techniques?" Luo Feng shook his head. "I have low law comprehension, and it's barely at universe-knight level. I need law comprehension if I want to create techniques. How am I supposed to create them if I don't even have that? Even if I use my beast god conception, it's still only slightly better than my law comprehension."

Luo Feng shook his head. Law comprehension and beast god conception were the two bases of techniques. He needed to complete the law comprehension. As for beast god conception, he had to at least memorize it.

"Unfortunately, I have both low law comprehension and beast god conception. How is it possible for me to create universe-master-level ultimate techniques?"

Luo Feng looked around.

"Master Zuo Shan Ke arranged for me to be here. Does that mean that the Beast God Sector can help me achieve that?"

Luo Feng got up and flew to the gold beast god sculpture beside him. Gold beast god was the manifestation of space law and gold law, and Luo Feng was following his path.

Hu.

Luo Feng landed in front of a towering gold beast god sculpture. It was a giant lizard with a horn on its head. He had four claws, and the one at top left was tearing the ground. His tail was lashing.

There were complex engravings on his scales, and the engravings were different from those on Luo Feng's beast god.

The engravings made the sculpture tranquil and peaceful, as if the gold beast god were taking a walk with his claw clenching on the ground.

"Huh?" Luo Feng looked at the sculpture, perplexed. "I feel like it must be the law, but why are the engravings different?"

Even after studying it for a while, Luo Feng couldn't understand it.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew up in the sky and flew to another gold beast god sculpture. After all, gold beast god was the one he was most familiar with.

Another gold beast god sculpture also felt like the embodiment of law, but that gold beast god looked fierce, as if it were about to attack. And the engravings on the scale were also different.

One gold beast god sculpture after another, each one was different—angry, tranquil, joyful, crazy, indifferent, and roaring... The engravings on the scales were different based on their varying emotional statuses. Some of the beast god sculptures were using their claws to attack while others were using their tails or horns... Each part of their bodies seemed to be able to attack.

After he finished checking the many gold beast god sculptures, Luo Feng started to check the thunder beast gods and light beat gods... These sculptures were much more forceful than the ones left by Xi Luo Duo. Luo Feng even felt that those sculptures were in his small sculpture's class.

"Eight inborn beast gods. Each of them has so many sculptures, and they seem to represent everything about the merge law."

Luo Feng was amazed. After finishing all the sculptures, Luo Feng started to tour the beast god sector. On the plains, in the

ancient trees, on the cliffs, on the peaks of mountains, at the bottom of lakes... There were engraving sculptures everywhere, and he could feel the power coming from the sculptures when he got close to them! Some of them were just basic engravings while some included detailed descriptions of the engravings.

They had been left by many generations of space beasts, strong and weak alike. There were even dozens of sets of universe-master-level ultimate techniques. As for universe-master-level pinnacle techniques and universe-knight-level techniques, these were present in innumerable quantities... Some were about close combat using weapons. Some were about spiritual force weapons. Some were about illusion. Some were about amplification. They dazzled Luo Feng.

"My soul amplification technique is only 32 times," said Luo Feng. "Although the Golden Horned Beast has an amplification type technique, 'Deities of the World.' It is only an elementary technique with the limit of 36 times. Most of the limits in the amplification techniques here are over 80, and some are even over 100."

Luo Feng was satisfied with those techniques. The more techniques he remembered, the less he needed to work. He could certainly hit the perfect limit in the Beast God Sector.

Of course, techniques didn't guarantee success. Countless beings received the inheritance of deified generals, but only a few of them could finish it.

******

Inside the Beast God Sector.

The Beast God Sector was vast. Luo Feng looked in the distance and exclaimed, "The techniques are ingenious! The ultimate techniques of universe masters are indeed unfathomable, and these are the techniques of Primal Chaos City Leader. Unfortunately, I'm somewhat perplexed."

Even with the explanations, Luo Feng's law comprehension was so low that he was still baffled. He didn't understand anything!

"I can't even understand the ultimate techniques of universe masters with detailed descriptions!" he said. "How am I supposed to make them? Master Zuo Shan Ke, you're too confident of me!"

Luo Feng felt helpless.

It was, however, a land full of valuables. As he read the conception of inborn beast gods under different sculptures, many of the questions Luo Feng had had for years were solved. He felt that different engravings had varying levels of power. All of them were the embodiment of laws. And all of them contained secrets.

"I think every sculpture is a set of supreme techniques," Luo Feng murmured. "Besides, there should be connections among the sculptures. I'm just not strong enough to see through them."

Luo Feng didn't realize this until he had finished reading the adequate techniques. He soon discovered that most of the creators of the techniques had descriptions at the back that were inspired by the beast god sculptures. These sculptures were exceptional.

"How can I be inspired? Many of those who created these techniques are universe masters!"

Luo Feng shook his head.

"Master Zuo Shan Ke..." he whispered. "You may lose your pinnacle true treasure."

But suddenly, he had a revelation.

"Wait!"

Luo Feng quickly stood up. "Although Ancestor is incredible, Master Zuo Shan Ke isn't stupid," he murmured. "He knows me much better than Ancestor does. If he was confident enough to make that bet, it means I must be likely to succeed. But how?"

There must have been a way, but he couldn't think of anything.

******

After three days, Luo Feng still hadn't come up with anything.

"For what it's worth, I've got 100,000 eras, which equates to a billion years. I don't need to rush! I'll just practice the Nine Volume Manual..."

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. "Yes. I can practice the Nine Volume Manual and let the Golden Horned Beast reach perfect life gene level! Last time, I got the inherited technique 'I Am the Universe.' Perhaps I can get another one this time. Even if I can't, Golden Horned Beast will be able to perform I Am the Universe. The move consumes such a large godly body. Perhaps other ultimate techniques are not as demanding. Besides, it was bestowed through my mind, and that power is much more powerful than universe masters. I Am the Universe is supposed to be an ultimate technique of universe masters!"

Luo Feng rejoiced. Yes, of course! The inherited technique I Am the Universe!

"Ancestor only asked me to defeat his body, but he didn't forbid me from using inherited techniques." Luo Feng smiled. "Like that Bark Mirror Emperor who is only undying. His inherited technique is at the universe overlord level. I've reached a perfect life gene level, and I Am the Universe is much more impressive."

"Hahaha...! 100,000 eras?" said Luo Feng. "I don't need 100,000 eras! 100 years is all I need!"

Luo Feng looked forward to the result. He could sense that his inherited technique I Am the Universe was powerful enough to meet the criteria.

Heng! Heng!

"My Golden Horned Beast will perform I Am the Universe, and then he can definitely beat the Ancestor body who only performs universe-master-level pinnacle techniques."

Luo Feng gained some confidence. He had read the details of many techniques in the Beast God Sector. Though they were too intricate for him to understand, he felt that I Am the Universe wasn't weaker than any of them...

******

Luo Feng started to devote his time to this new pursuit. The tail, claws, wings, back, and head merged with at least 10 blood river crystals, and the amplification could reach 10 times. As for other parts, they had merged with 100 blood river crystals, and the amplification could reach 100 times.

After practicing, the life gene level of the Golden Horned Beast kept being improved.

7,000... 7,500... 8,000... 8,500... 9,000... 9,500...

After finishing the sixth volume, the life gene level of the Golden Horned Beast reached 9,000 times!

"Almost..." said Luo Feng. "Seventh volume!"

The Golden Horned Beast continued with the seventh volume and gradually improved his life gene. Eventually, after 62 years of being in the Beast God Sector, the Golden Horned Beast had reached the perfect life gene level.

Chapter 1065: Accident

Limpid water on the lake was flowing, and fog permeated above it. Luo Feng sat beside the lake with his legs crossed with a six-foot-tall Golden Horned Beast.

Perfect limit. Remote Ocean reached the level before, but when he became a boundless Remote Ocean... The new Remote Ocean body only has a life gene level of 1,000 times. Finally, the Golden Horned Beast body has reached that level.

Luo Feng smiled and waited for the sharp change. Once the life gene hit the perfect level, the body would experience a sharp change. Last time, the universe origin law arrived and led Luo Feng to a mysterious space, after which Remote Ocean body became 55,000 miles tall.

"What?"

Luo Feng frowned.

One second, two seconds... One minute, two minutes, five minutes...

"No change? Why is there no change at all?"

Luo Feng was dazed. His Golden Horned Beast had reached the perfect gene level, yet nothing had happened. There wasn't any change to his godly body; neither was his mind led to the mysterious place.

Luo Feng stood up.

"Could it be because...?"

His eyes went wide, and his face fell.

Because... he realized. It is another universe here! Instead of the original universe!

******

Luo Feng knew that he was in a different universe, but the merge laws—gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, light, lightning, time and space—were all the same as those in the original universe. The law techniques were also similar. Universe-level, domain-level, and sector lords were the same in the primal universe as in the original universe.

The original universe was the largest universe. Billions of races resided within it. The primal universe and the universe of the Space Beast Alliance, meanwhile, were much smaller. However, the laws and the cultivation of great beings were the same here. Different universes only had differences in time flow and environment.

Luo Feng had assumed that once he reached perfect life gene level again, the Golden Horned Beast would evolve again! And he might enter the mysterious space in the universe again!

"I was wrong," he concluded. "There are significant differences between the universes. There is no change at all in the universe of the Space Beast Alliance after reaching perfect life gene level." Luo Feng shook his head. "What should I do?"

With each passing moment, he grew more and more upset. Although the Golden Horned Beast had reached the perfect life gene level—and quality-wise, he had reached the basic requirement for performing "I Am the Universe"—he still didn't have enough quantity. A godly body that was more than 55,000 miles tall could only perform that ten times! The Golden Horned Beast was only 600 miles... almost 1/100th of 55,000 miles!

If the Golden Horned Beast body tried to perform I Am the Universe, his godly body might be completely consumed before he could even truly attempt it!

"I can't use the inherited technique I Am the Universe to defeat the Ancestor body." Luo Feng frowned. "So what should I do?"

This put Luo Feng in a quandary. His godly body was too small to

perform the inherited technique. His only option was to create one. But how was he supposed to create universe-master-level ultimate techniques with nothing but his law comprehension and beast god conception level? It sounded ridiculous.

What should I do? Luo Feng kept thinking, but no answer came to mind.

He was not even a universe knight. How was he supposed to create universe-master-level ultimate techniques? The idea of becoming a universe supreme master? Ridiculous!

******

Inside the vast Beast God Sector.

At the peak of one of the mountains of a long mountain range sat Ancestor in a white cape. Beside him was an elderly being with transparent horns and wearing a cyan cape.

"Sitting Mountain Guest, it seems that your disciple has run into trouble," Ancestor said with a smile.

"Don't worry," said Sitting Mountain Guest as he looked out into the distance.

Ancestor and Sitting Mountain Guest had put their bodies in the Beast God Sector. After all, it was the universe under Ancestor's control, just as the primal universe was under Primal Chaos City Leader's control.

Primal Chaos City Leader was invincible in the primal universe, and in this universe, a body of Ancestor could be invincible with the help of energy from the universe origin. When someone became a universe supreme master, he was able to make a body randomly. As such, Sitting Mountain Guest wouldn't be trapped in this universe, as he could randomly make a body.

"You're impressive!" Ancestor exclaimed. "Your second disciple's life gene level reached almost 10,000 times with your help, and your third disciple has reached the perfect life gene level. You're

much better at cultivating disciples than me, especially when it comes to improving life gene level."

Sitting Mountain Guest shook his head and smiled. "It's against the universe operation law, and there's a huge price to pay... I'm only able to cultivate two disciples."

Ancestor nodded.

They were unrivaled in the universe; amplification and life gene level meant nothing to them, as they were perfect. Otherwise, they wouldn't be called universe supreme masters.

"Everyone who reaches the perfect life gene level can be bestowed a gift from the universe origin!" Ancestor exclaimed. "After his godly body reaches the perfect level, his mind can be bestowed with an all-powerful inherited technique! Unfortunately for your disciple... this is my universe!"

Ancestor glanced at Sitting Mountain Guest and continued. "My universe is far inferior to the original universe. I can't bestow on him an inherited technique or help his godly body evolve." He sipped at some wine made from dew. "Without an evolved godly body, his godly body is not able to perform the most powerful inherited technique even if he's bestowed one... Besides, he wasn't even bestowed with the inherited technique. I might have actually lost the bet if he were in the original universe. But in my universe, I can control all the factors, and the only thing your disciple can rely on is the Beast God Sector!"

"You sound quite confident," Sitting Mountain Guest said as he sipped the wine. "The wine is good. Could you give me a few bottles later?"

"I made the wine by devoting lots of energy and time by setting numerous special environments." Ancestor looked at Sitting Mountain Guest and smiled. "Regardless, you're going to lose a pinnacle true treasure to me. Some wine is the least I can do."

Sitting Mountain Guest shook his head. "Remember, old beast god... 100,000 eras! It's been less than a century. Don't be too cocky."

"So, you're confident?" said Ancestor continued. "Do you think your disciple can become a universe supreme master within 100,000 eras? Or do you think he can create universe-master-level ultimate techniques as an undying fighter? Or do you think he can create universe-supreme-master-level techniques as a universe knight?"

According to the bet, once Luo Feng became a universe knight, Ancestor body could use the ultimate techniques of universe masters! The ultimate technique Ancestor body would use was definitely one of the best among the ultimate techniques used by universe masters. Only universe-supreme-master-level techniques could defeat that.

"The only thing I can tell you," Sitting Mountain Guest said, "is that my disciple is likely to succeed. Of course, if he fails, that only demonstrates that he's not strong enough."

"Likely? What a joke." Ancestor still refused to believe it.

"100,000 eras equate to only 100,000 years in the original universe," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "Just wait and see. Don't let anyone in during these years. I don't want anyone to disturb him."

"Rest assured, I won't disturb him," Ancestor said.

"Where's the wine?" asked Sitting Mountain Guest.

Ancestor waved his hands, and exquisite wine bottles showed up and floated in the sky.

"This is half the wine I have," Ancestor said.

"I'll leave now," said Sitting Mountain Guest, and he took all the wine, gazed for a moment at Luo Feng who was still contemplating, and disappeared.

"Likely?" Ancestor mumbled, looking down. "Sitting Mountain Guest says his disciple is likely to succeed? It is ridiculous if he thinks his disciple can become a universe supreme master! That means he believes that his disciple can create universe-master ultimate techniques as an undying fighter! Humph! I will have witnessed something truly remarkable if Luo Feng succeeds. If he doesn't, I'll have a pinnacle true treasure."

Ancestor smiled, then disappeared also.

******

Luo Feng sat beside the lake for nine days. He even pondered what his master Sitting Mountain Guest and that Space Beast Ancestor were thinking about. However, he couldn't come up with anything.

Both Ancestor and Sitting Mountain Guest are universe supreme masters. Their power and horizons are at the top of the universe. Ancestor doesn't believe that I can do it. But if Master Sitting Mountain Guest made the bet, he must believe that I'll be able to make it, at least in a billion years.

Luo Feng considered this.

"There's a reason he has me in Beast God Sector," Luo Feng muttered. "I need to explore the Beast God Sector."

Luo Feng understood it. The first place he needed to explore was the Beast God Sector.

Plenty of great beings came to the Beast God Sector, he thought. After all, those techniques were left by the universe masters and universe knights from the Space Beast Alliance. However, those great beings weren't able to create ultimate techniques for universe masters as undying. Ancestor would only have made the bet if someone succeeded.

Luo Feng nodded. He extrapolated from that that the Beast God Sector was far from enough!

Beast God Sector is the first asset I need to rely on. The second is some of my secrets. And, last but not least, time. Otherwise, Master Sitting Mountain Guest wouldn't have specified a timeframe of 100,000 eras.

100,000 eras equated to a billion years! It was a very long time...!

Chapter 1066: Miniature Universe

Luo Feng knew that if he wanted to succeed, he needed to start from the Beast God Sector. He was aware that since Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest had paid a hefty price for him to enter this place, there must be something very beneficial for him in this Beast God Sector. Therefore, Luo Feng started looking around the Beast God Sector again—this time doing so very conscientiously and meticulously.

Firstly, on one of the vast plains, he found some technique sculptures where he acquired two types of amplification techniques.

One was a soul amplification technique known as "Nine Peak Lock." When mastered to perfection, it could bring about a soul amplification of 99.99, which could basically be considered 100 times. The other was a godly body amplification technique called "Golden Beast God." When mastered to perfection, the amplification could reach 100 times.

Initially, Luo Feng thought it would be very difficult for him to master these techniques. He did not expect to be able to master Golden Beast God from beginning to the end without faltering. It only took him three days to master the technique to perfection! Whether it was his Mosha body, original earthling body, Remote Ocean body, or Golden Horned Beast body, all of these could put this godly body amplification technique to good use.

Nine Peak Lock was about mastering the ultimate control of blurring godly power. It had extremely high requirements of the will and consciousness. However, Luo Feng's will and consciousness were already at a universe overlord's standard! As universe overlords were almost perfect in terms of soul amplification, it would be a piece of cake for Luo Feng to master this technique.

Within just one month, he mastered Nine Peak Lock to perfection.

"My blurred godly power, my will, and my consciousness are all of universe overlord standard, so mastering this technique was a breeze," Luo Feng said to himself.

This was how capability played a part in determining the level of difficulty of mastering techniques. Out of thousands of undying emperors, it was unlikely that even one could have mastered Nine Peak Lock to pristine perfection.

Mastering Golden Beast God took Luo Feng less than a month to master. Thereafter, he continued to look around the entire Beast God Sector.

In the Beast God Sector, there were 64 beast god sculptures. There were Eight Natural Beast Gods, each of which had eight sculptures. There were tens of thousands of secret techniques, 36 ultimate techniques of universe masters, 123 pinnacle techniques of universe masters, over 3,000 ultimate techniques of universe knights, and tens of thousands of pinnacle techniques of universe knights. There was also a large volume of informal law engravings.

These informal secret techniques were mostly incomprehensible; only the thickest and thinnest engravings could be somewhat understood. After researching these techniques for over half a year, Luo Feng came to one of the Golden Beast God sculptures. Raising his head, he scrutinized the sculpture.

"These techniques are useless to me," he concluded. "These were created by other great beings. Even if I were to learn them, they would still be better suited to others. In my hands, the powers will be much weaker." Luo Feng gazed at the beast god sculpture. "Many of the techniques I have come across mention that one must be able to comprehend these beast god sculptures to gain understanding. Even universe masters are trying to comprehend these beast god sculptures! In the entirety of the Beast God

Sector... the most precious elements are these 64 beast god sculptures!"

Luo Feng studied on.

******

In the Beast God sector, at the apex of one of its mountains.

Ancestor stood in a casual manner, overlooking the vast forest afar. His eyes came to rest on Luo Feng, who stood before the Golden Beast God sculpture.

"You have actually stood before that golden beast sculpture for more than three years," whispered Ancestor. "Seems like you have come to realize that these beast god sculptures are my sector's most precious possessions. That's right. All the extraordinary geniuses and superior beings that qualified to be part of my Space Beast Alliance realize that these beast god sculptures are the key!"

"There were many who could realize this. However, those who were able to figure out the secret technique—especially to figure out the ultimate secret technique of a universe master level—were extremely few. Also, those who were able to understand the ultimate secret technique of a universe master level were all universe masters."

Ancestor was carefree and at ease. He knew that there were many techniques in the Beast God sector that seemed precious but were actually worth little. The 64 beast god sculptures were the true treasures that were priceless!

******

Luo Feng stood before the eight sculptures of the Golden Beast God. Time spent on each sculpture varied. For the shorter periods, he could spend a year or more gaining understanding; for the longer periods, he could spend up to eight years gaining understanding. As for the Thunder Beast God, Light Beast God, and the other beast god sculptures, he spent a much shorter time

trying to comprehend them, as ultimately, he would not be traversing along the Beast God path.

The 64 beast god sculptures took him a total of 52 years to study.

"The more I look, the more I feel that... these are perfect! The Golden Beast God and the eight sculptures."

Luo Feng felt that, after looking at these eight sculptures of the Golden Beast God, he could feel its anger, happiness, tranquility, rage, insanity... All kinds of situations were made familiar to him. Closing his eyes, he felt as though he was looking at the real Golden Beast God.

"The lack of one sculpture would render everything incomplete," Luo Feng decided with a slight nod.

For any great being, just by looking at the 64 sculptures, there would be a feeling of merging as one with the sculptures! The secret engravings representing the universe path on these 64 sculptures made him feel as though he were becoming one with the sculptures... They could constitute a complete set of super techniques! They evoked a feeling of singularity.

Every great being that has come to the Beast God sector of the Space Beast Alliance could have been able to feel this, mused Luo Feng, but no one can really figure out the ultimate secret technique. Because out of the most powerful 36 types of universe ultimate techniques, some must be acquired through understanding the Golden Beast God, some must be acquired through understanding the Thunder Beast God, and occasionally, one must be able to gain the understanding of two beast gods put together...

Judging from the power these different technique engravings left behind, they all seemed to match each other in strength. Obviously, the level of each technique would be similar. By combining all eight beast god sculptures to create a super-secret technique, this technique should outmatch all the others.

******

After acquiring two amplification techniques and studying the beast god sculptures, Luo Feng started to study himself as the subject.

"I must succeed," he said. "First, I have to depend on the Beast God Sector. Second, I must be different from the rest. Third, I need time. I have studied and now understand the Beast God sector thoroughly. As for me... to be considered truly different from the rest, I need something that even generations of supreme beings of the Space Beast Alliance—apart from Ancestor—would not be able to compare to. That could be the Nine Volume Manual, Star Tower, the talent technique 'I Am the Universe,' or my endless Remote Ocean."

Luo Feng analyzed his options. The Nine Volume Manual was one of a kind in the universe. Star Tower was one of the supreme true treasures of the universe. Other than Ancestor, the chances of other beings in the Space Beast Alliance possessing supreme true treasures were very low. Or at least, there were none that Luo Feng knew of.

The talent technique I Am the Universe had been bestowed by the universe for reaching the perfect life gene level. It could be assumed that many special life forms who were powerful and unique might only have reached a life gene level of thousands of times. Those close to tens of thousands of times were a rare sight. Let alone those who had attained perfection. Space Beasts were not special life forms... Unless they possessed techniques such as the Nine Volume Manual, they would never be able to make it this far.

The endless Remote Ocean represented limitless godly power. What a pity that he was in another universe. There was no way he could absorb godly power from the endless Remote Ocean.

******

In the primal universe, Luo Feng's original earthling body headed

first to Star Tower to study the secret engravings in the sculptures on the countless stars and Sky Pillars... Unfortunately, these were more profound than the ultimate techniques of the universe masters on the Beast God sector. He could not figure them out.

Then he placed the contents of the Nine Volume Manual under scrutiny and studied them with detail. This was a technique solely used for enhancing one's life gene level. In terms of depth, it was comparable to the secret engravings on the Star Tower, which was far more profound than the ultimate techniques of universe masters. Similarly, he could not comprehend the profound knowledge, so he could only train in a methodical manner.

As for putting his talent technique I Am the Universe to use, Luo Feng and his other bodies were unable to use it unless enemies entered his God Country. Only then would the endless Remote Ocean within his God Country enable him to use I Am the Universe!

"Talent technique—I am the Universe!"

Hong! Long! Long!

At that moment, the endless godly power of ocean water went ablaze to produce limitless energy. In the sky above the endless Remote Ocean, a huge oval-shaped sphere with a diameter of tens of billions of miles appeared—it was a miniature universe!

"A universe?" said Luo Feng. "A miniature universe?"

Luo Feng used his consciousness to enter the miniature universe. He was filled with overwhelming excitement. Since the day he first acquired I Am the Universe, this was his first time using it... According to what was imprinted on his consciousness, when this incomparably magical talent technique was activated, the rate at which his godly power was used up would be alarming. It was almost as though once activated, the godly power of a golden horned beast's godly body would be completely consumed. Luckily for him, his endless Remote Ocean was extensive enough.

"A miniature universe."

This vast universe, with a diameter of tens of billions of miles, could contain anything. Within it was only vast nothingness. There was a subtle, chaotic airflow.

This miniature universe was none other than Luo Feng himself!

"How magical," he said in wonder. "Absolute control... Absolute control."

The moment he transformed into this miniature universe, Luo Feng grasped the full understanding of his powers. He could divide out part of his godly body in this universe to fight his enemies... and in his own miniature universe, he could transfer the oppression from the outside into the miniature universe. His power would then be greatly increased while his opponent faced stronger suppression.

This was merely one of the attached abilities. The strongest one was...

"Explosion of Universe!"

Luo Feng could not help marveling. He only needed one thought to activate the "Explosion of Universe," during which his miniature universe would collapse. The magnitude of this power was unbelievable.

"What a transcendental technique!" said Luo Feng. "To think that I possess such a powerful talent technique and can transform into a miniature universe."

Luo Feng could not help but marvel. At the same time, his consciousness had started to study his miniature universe attentively.

On the thin membrane encompassing the huge oval-shaped sphere, boundless energy took the form of numerous law threads interlacing with one another to form an enormous picture of law engravings that was continuously undergoing transformation into

a chaotic airflow. This chaotic airflow then circulated around the enormous picture of secret engravings and coagulated to form the membrane around the miniature universe. The remainder of the airflow would then waft off into the atmosphere and eventually diminish.

The enormous picture of law engravings... This was the basis for how Luo Feng could display his talent technique. But he was completely clueless, as this was the first time he had laid eyes on this picture of law engravings.

The picture of the law engravings transformed into an oval-shaped sphere formed by millions upon millions of law threads interlacing with one another. It was inconceivably complicated, forming the law of revolution of this miniature universe. And the amount of godly power that Luo Feng used would be used to supply this entire miniature universe with energy.

Technically speaking, it was not a real universe. In a real universe, energy was recyclable and should be inexhaustible. But Luo Feng's energy was continuously used up. Obviously, this picture of law engravings was an extremely simplified version of the primal picture of engravings, which was the truest law of revolution of the primal universe. Yet, even so—it was impressive enough to render Luo Feng tongue-tied.

"It's too... Too..."

But Luo Feng couldn't complete his thought. He was completely taken aback by this picture of engravings. Its beauty was astounding. More astounding than any other ultimate techniques; it was even more beautiful than the secret engravings on the numerous beast god sculptures.

Chapter 1067: Hundreds of Millions of Years

Luo Feng was filled with amazement. He thoroughly appreciated the intricate and delicate engraving picture of the miniature universe. Time passed, and the godly power consumed in 90 seconds was equal to that of the Remote Ocean body at the height of more than 55,000 miles. However, Remote Ocean body could withstand it easily.

"This... Is this?"

Luo Feng had made the shocking discovery that the engraving picture could be disintegrated, and small engraving pictures showed up after the disintegration. Each of the small engraving pictures was an engraving picture on the 64 beast god sculptures. After the disintegration, 92 small beast god engraving pictures showed up, and many of them were identical. However, they all came from the engraving pictures of the 64 beast god sculptures.

The 92 beast god engraving pictures were like components, making up a single mechanism after being combined. There were countless threads connecting all the pictures, and the connections were natural and perfect, comprising a miniature universe.

"How could this be?" wondered Luo Feng. "64 engraving pictures combined to form an engraving picture of a miniature universe?"

Luo Feng suddenly saw a new door open! If he didn't know those 64 beast god engraving pictures, the miniature universe engraving picture would be too intricate for him to understand. However, now that he was viewing it as beast god engraving pictures... they were much easier to understand. It was just a combination of 64 engraving pictures.

"Incredible," said Luo Feng.

He was mesmerized. He had not realized, until now, that there was another way to understand the incredible inherited technique.

******

Inside the original universe flew an ordinary spaceship.

"This disciple of mine has a Remote Ocean body that has reached the perfect life gene level even before he became undying," Sitting Mountain Guest whispered in the spaceship. "He must have been bestowed a supreme inherited technique. As for supreme inherited techniques, they hold the top spot among all the techniques in the universe, and all of them are perfect. As for those 64 engraving pictures! They're the perfect embodiment of eight inborn beast gods. The eight beast gods stand for eight merge laws. Universe operation laws can be classified into gold, wood, water, fire, ground, light, wind, lightning, time, and space... However, they can also be classified into eight merge laws."

Sitting Mountain Guest smiled. He had already reached the pinnacle level possible in the universe, and he could see everything clearly.

"All of the highest-level techniques can be disintegrated into 64 engraving pictures. As for those that are inferior, they can't even rival one beast god engraving picture. They do not qualify. Luo Feng is examining those 64 beast god sculptures, and he knows those 64 engraving pictures... Once he performs his supreme inherited technique, he'll realize the connection between the supreme inherited techniques and the 64 engraving pictures. He'll start with the engraving pictures and create techniques using those pictures."

He doesn't even need to understand those engraving pictures, Sitting Mountain Guest thought. All he needs to do is remember those engraving pictures and their structures! And with the engraving picture he got from his own supreme inherited technique... he can totally try that! Once he succeeds, it will be possible for him to create a simplified technique of a supreme inherited technique. And if he can actually succeed, it means he's a high achiever in engraving pictures. Using those 64 engraving

pictures as elements, there were great beings who did that before the Grand Nirvana. If Luo Feng can also accomplish something in that field, and together with his ordinary law training, he'll make many more improvements. Plus, he is able to better see the origin of the universe.

Sitting Mountain Guest was making a huge bet! No one had succeeded on the path of engraving pictures since the original universe came into being.

The main reason for this was that only a few were qualified to see the 64 engraving pictures. Even those who saw them couldn't understand them. However... Before the Grand Nirvana, some great beings had succeeded, which meant that the method was possible. Different methods supported each other, but they all led to the same end, the origin mystery of the universe.

You've come so far after only 100,000 years, Sitting Mountain Guest thought. And you survived the life-or-death inheritance. Now, I'll give you a billion years. Let's see whether you can make some accomplishments on engraving pictures.

Engraving pictures training had always been a secret. After all, the time of the Grand Nirvana was immeasurable, and even before the Grand Nirvana, only a few practiced engraving pictures.

******

Obsessed... Luo Feng was completely obsessed.

He hadn't expected those 64 engraving pictures to form such an incredible technique! He had always thought that "I Am the Universe" was so powerful and intricate that he couldn't possibly understand it. However, he could now! It was the combination of those 64 engraving pictures, and some of them overlapped with each other, leading to 92 engraving pictures.

"Does that mean the combination of those 64 engraving pictures result in significant power?" Luo Feng immediately started to

study it.

******

At the peak of one of the mountains in the Beast God Sector.

Ancestor appeared and looked down.

"Weird... Why does he keep drawing engraving pictures?"

Ancestor watched from a distance and saw one engraving picture after another forming around Luo Feng, who sat in front of a gold beast god sculpture with his legs crossed.

"He's been drawing the engraving pictures for 10,000 years?" said Ancestor, thoroughly confused.

******

Luo Feng found the combination of the engraving pictures to be unpredictable and mysterious after studying all of them. If he made a mistake, the power would tumble. However, Luo Feng was randomly combining different engraving pictures based on the engraving picture of I Am the Universe, and he had created dozens of techniques. Most, however, were weak, and only one of them could rival an undying technique. It came close to the third move of Star Map.

This thrilled Luo Feng. He now understood that the engraving pictures were a new path! And it might be his only chance to defeat Ancestor body within a period of 100,000 eras.

Luo Feng started with a random drawing. There were billions of ways for law threads to be combined for I Am the Universe. He started by randomly copying and simulating without rules, but after 10,000 years of trying, he had successfully created some weak techniques. He also understood the differences between different combinations.

Based on his extensive practice, he extrapolated the possibilities, and from the possibilities, he extrapolated his theories.

In the first 100,000 years, Luo Feng worked by trial and error. He only created two techniques that could rival the third move of Star Map. He did, however, discover some patterns after all those trials.

Luo Feng decided to concentrate on the eight engraving pictures of the Gold Beast God while temporarily giving up the other 56 engraving pictures. Based on his 100,000 years of trial and error, Luo Feng was most accurate when randomly combing the eight engraving pictures of the Gold Beast God.

After a million years, Luo Feng started to understand the mysteries of the engraving pictures of the Gold Beast God. After ten million years, he completely understood the mysteries and power of the combinations of those engraving pictures. Of course, it was only the tip of the iceberg compared to the engraving picture of I Am the Universe... But finally, Luo Feng completely comprehended it.

During those ten million years, Luo Feng accidentally created an ultimate technique for universe knights. Although he didn't understand the theories behind it, he remembered the way to perform it, just as he did with his inherited techniques. He memorized all the law threads and was able to perform it instantly, which was theoretically impossible!

Law threads required users to understand the fundamentals of them in order to be performed—unless they were sculpted in the mind, like inherited techniques. However, Luo Feng didn't need to perform all the law threads. All he needed to do was perform several engraving pictures and combine them!

The implications were profound! Luo Feng found the engraving pictures to be mysterious. It might be a unique and unusual way, but it was a highway to the top!

"Did Master Sitting Mountain Guest know this before?" he wondered. "Is that why he led me into the Beast God Sector? Why haven't I heard of anyone among us humans who has practiced it?

Why have I never heard of this practice method?"

Luo Feng was sometimes baffled by these many questions.

"For what it's worth, it's an incredible practicing method.

Engraving pictures were like components. If the universe was a skyscraper, the components were the individual resources combined to create the whole... And there were many ways to build a skyscraper.

So far, Luo Feng had found 900 million ways to combine the engraving pictures, and he could perfectly manipulate more than 100,000 of them. It was a path that was completely new to him, so he could only explore it all by himself. The more he studied it, the more combinations he knew and manipulated.

Luo Feng forgot about the passage of time; he was immersed in the engraving pictures of the Gold Beast God.

Time flew by. Ten million years, followed by another ten million years. Luo Feng frequently went to watch the beast god pictures of the Gold Beast God and studied them.

******

At the peak of the tallest mountain in the Beast God Sector, Ancestor looked down, frowned.

Luo Feng had been in the Beast God Sector for 180 million years, and Ancestor could tell from the way Luo Feng trained that he was following the path of engraving pictures, a path that led to the top.

I might lose this time... thought Ancestor.

"Sitting Mountain Guest is indeed impressive," he said. "He was aware of this way to practice, and he was certain that his disciple would succeed on that path."

Ancestor also speculated that the disadvantage of that path was that it didn't have a strong foundation. However, if one was lucky enough to have inspirations, he could create terrifically powerful

techniques.

"Hmm..."

Ancestor's face became grave.

Chapter 1068: A Technique Made in Heaven

"No way..." Ancestor was shocked as he looked down at a faraway spot. "How is it possible that he could comprehend the heart of the beast?"

******

Weeds grew all over the plain. There was a towering sculpture of a gigantic lizard positioned in a slight squat as though poised for takeoff. And at the back of the Gold Beast God sculpture, Luo Feng lay on a bed of scales, eyes squinting. He was looking in midair, where countless complicated gold threads of engravings flowed continuously.

His hundreds of millions of years of painstaking cultivation were no different from one another. In fact, Luo Feng had fallen into a unique state. He'd spent hundreds of millions of years studying the eight pictures of engravings of the Gold Beast God, where every picture of engravings represented a different aspect of the Gold Beast God. Eight pictures of engravings... Luo Feng felt as though he was looking at a different face of the Gold Beast God every day, and day after day, month after month, year after year...

The years went by. Luo Feng went on studying these eight pictures of engravings, and for a good many years, he felt as though he had the company of Gold Beast God every waking and sleeping moment of his life.

Currently, Luo Feng had lost himself to the 180 million years spent on studying these pictures of engravings. He forgot who he was. Now... he felt as though he actually was a beast god!

Joy, happiness, anger, rage, insanity... He was roaming the universe! He was fighting his enemies in bloody battles stretching to endless voids. The fighting extended to other galaxies... until finally, he unwillingly breathed his last.

******

Luo Feng lay unmoving, his eyes gradually closing. Only the Gold Beast God was real! All else was fabricated.

His sleep went on for a whole millennium.

During this millennium, even Luo Feng's original earthling body and his Remote Ocean body went into a deep slumber. No matter who tried, no one at all was able to contact Luo Feng! Over the course of 1,000 years, Luo Feng forgot his human memories; he forgot everything. In his deep slumber, he thought of himself as a beast god...

A millennium went by peacefully. Then Luo Feng opened his eyes.

"Is this the so-called 'Transformation of Things'?" asked Luo Feng. "Was it my illusion or was it reality?"

The moment he opened his eyes, he was in a trance—stupefied and unable to differentiate whether he was Luo Feng or a beast god. But quickly, he sobered up. Hundreds of millions of years' worth of human memories came flooding back and overrode the memories that he had collected while he was incarnated as the beast god.

"A beast god? What a magical feeling."

Luo Feng lay on the back of the Gold Beast God sculpture, reminiscing about the feeling of being a beast god, which was still so vivid to him. He felt as though he could go back into that state easily.

A beast god was an entirely different existence from that of humans. It was in a state that was detached, free, and true to its own nature.

******

At the apex of the mountain, Ancestor watched the entire

episode, shaking his head amidst sighs. He found it all so ironic.

"The final bottleneck of the beast god path," he said. "'Heart of Beast God.' The most difficult stage to comprehend and the most difficult to find, yet he has mastered it?"

The beast god path, according to the Ancestral God School, was divided into a total of seven major inheritances. Upon figuring out the entire Beast God path, one would have attained the universe master level and become a pinnacle existence in the universe... Yet it was not that simple for one who wanted to become a universe master. Just as it was with the golden horned beasts' lineage, after countless eras, they only had a total of two universe masters. Similarly, the flaming star beasts' lineage had only one universe master.

All of these clearly reiterated the fact that becoming a universe master was difficult to the point of nearly being impossible! There were many levels to accomplish!

One of the Beast God path's most difficult levels to figure out—because of its ethereal nature—was understanding the Heart of Beast God, upon achieving this level, one could truly become an incarnation of the Beast God! This had left many universe overlords wondering, like Xi Luo Duo and the many universe overlords, if they could only be incarnations of "pseudo beast gods" because they were unable to understand the Heart of Beast God.

Without a Heart of Beast God... there was no way one could truly become an incarnation of a beast god.

For Luo Feng, this was an unintentional reward, as he spent such a long time wholeheartedly studying the eight pictures of secret engravings. Tens of millions of years of dedicated work had led him into a deep slumber where he forgot everything. During his slumber, he dreamed about leading the life of a beast god for a long time.

"This Luo Feng made a resounding name of himself in less than

100,000 years!" said Ancestor. "In my Beast God sector, he has cultivated himself for around 180 million years... He has dedicated himself wholly to studying the secret engravings of 'Golden Space.' Without any guidance, solely based on his own experience, he has attained the highest level. At the tip of his fingers, he could create techniques at the universe knight level... Obviously, he will have become extremely familiar with the Gold Beast God's eight pictures of secret engravings. And these eight pictures are the full representation of Gold Beast God."

Moreover, thought Ancestor. Golden horned beasts are descendants of the Gold Beast God. They can easily understand the Heart of Beast God. For two to merge as one... accomplishing this is expected.

Ancestor quickly understood why it was the process of accumulating richly and breaking forth vastly. Luo Feng had waited patiently, so when he had everything he needed to know in place, he would achieve success.

After all, Luo Feng did spend 180 million years studying these pictures of secret engravings. It only took him thousands of years to attain the pinnacle emperor level—tens of thousands of years to develop his talent of creating three forms of ultimate technique... If he continued to study the laws, given 180 million years, Luo Feng would have cultivated himself to the level of a senior universe knight. All just to defeat Ancestor!

So, Luo Feng had not spent an inkling of effort on law comprehension. He gave his all to studying the pictures of secret engravings. Hence, he attained his achievements in this chosen studies... which far surpassed his achievements in law comprehension. After all, law comprehension required many tens of thousands of years to cultivate. Just studying the pictures of secret engravings, he spent 180 million years. That was simply incomparable!

"This is..."

Ancestor, who had calmed himself previously, suddenly revealed a sharp change in expression. He was unable to believe what he saw as he looked down at the beast god sculpture on the vast plain. Luo Feng was lying down on the sculpture. Even when he had previously comprehended the Heart of the Beast God, he had not shown such arrogance and rudeness.

******

On the back of the beast god sculpture.

After Luo Feng woke from a millennium of deep slumber, he started to study the eight pictures of engravings of the Gold Beast God all over again. With the picture of secret engravings of his miniature universe as the final template, he tried to create a technique of his own. He could still feel the aftermath of his thousand years of slumber, during which the Heart of Beast God possessed an indistinct influence over him.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Countless golden threads floated midair.

"It should be like this," he said. "Yes. Like this."

It must be by pure luck or coincidence, as Luo Feng himself was unclear of the underlying theories he used when he speedily combined all eight pictures of secret engravings. Other than the majority of the law threads being combined based on his strong foundation, there were a few law threads that were combined purely based on his unique instincts, where he was free of inhibitions and followed his heart's desire without a second thought.

It was as though the Gold Beast God was wandering about the universe, following its heart, killing when it wanted to kill, eating when it wanted to eat, sleeping when it wanted to sleep... When it came to the method of combining the law threads he was still unsure of, he combined them with such an attitude—following his

heart. The most important thing was to feel pleased and fulfilled in the moment.

Hong!

Suddenly, a golden ray appeared.

The golden ray sliced through heaven and earth in the blink of an eye. The frozen space was forcefully pried apart to reveal a ripple gully. Even the ground, under the resonating waves of the light ray, was cut apart to give way to a deep valley tens of millions of miles long. In an instant, the whole surface underwent a fundamental change. Then normality returned.

"I... I am left with such little godly power!" said Luo Feng.

He was dumbfounded as he sat on the back of the Gold Beast God sculpture. He gazed at the end of the vast land, at the deep valley, until everything returned to normal.

"What level of technique was that?"

Luo Feng could not believe he was so powerful. A few thousand years on law comprehension was enough for him to attain pinnacle undying level. If these 180 million years were spent devoted completely to studying law comprehension... for him to master the sixth, or even to the seventh stage of the beast god path was certainly achievable. Yet he had spent this long period of time studying only the pictures of secret engravings!

He was certainly successful, and now he could easily create techniques at the universe knight level, or, at times, he might even be able to create ultimate techniques at the universe overlord level. He was that powerful! Yet in terms of magnitude, his power was far less than that of the light ray.

"Could it be the ultimate technique of a universe master?"

Luo Feng still found it unbelievable. If he had not been mastering it, he would not have known. After all the studies on the pictures of secret engravings, he knew that while sometimes, with a stroke

of luck, the pictures of secret engravings could allow one to miraculously create a set of technique... But the more powerful a technique was, the more it was impossible to depend solely on luck. Foundation was more important!

180 million years! Luo Feng was very accomplished in his studies of the pictures of secret engravings and could easily create techniques that were at the universe knight level. But the most powerful technique that he had created so far was merely the universe overlord ultimate technique, which was two levels higher than the ones he normally created. If he wanted to create a technique of a universe master level... he guessed he might need many hundreds of millions of years more.

If the day came when he could readily create techniques of universe overlord level however he pleased, then who knew? He might get lucky and happen to create a technique of the universe master level. The foundation required would be higher!

The most talented painter, with a stroke of inspiration, could paint a superior picture. But without a solid foundation, even with inspiration, one would not be able to produce a sensational piece of work.

Luo Feng had now built a very strong foundation for himself. As an individual in the context of the universe, he could be considered a master—a founder capable of creating techniques! However, if he was expected to create techniques of universe master level... then to him, it was still something unbelievable.

"Is it a technique of the universe master level?"

Sou!

Luo Feng jumped up from where he was and flew to a faraway spot on the mountain. On his shoulder was a golden horned beast.

After flying for a short while, he arrived at the mountain cliff where there were three technique sculptures, all of which had been

left behind by space beast universe masters. These three were all techniques of the universe master level.

"I shall carve the engravings of my creation with the use of my power. I should be able to understand it."

Luo Feng looked at the stone surface. Godly power was gushing out, and all he could see at that very moment was a huge picture of a technique that was complicated beyond comprehension. Even many universe knights would have felt as though they were reading a heavenly book. Even if Luo Feng were to spend 180 million years, he would still be unable to comprehend this.

This picture of technique was simply too deep to be fathomed. It exuded an endless wave of power that corresponded to the magnitude of power coming from the other three ultimate technique sculptures beside it. It was not the least bit weaker.

It represented hundreds of millions of years of hard work! Plus a Heart of Beast God... At any moment, Luo Feng spontaneously created such a technique.

This was a technique he had created with the picture of secret engravings of his miniature universe as a template; it might be considered a simplified version of it. It was simply a near-perfect combination of the eight Beast God pictures of the Gold Beast God that formed the attack-type technique: Ultimate Level Technique of Universe Master!

******

At the apex of the mountain, Ancestor watched.

"Tens of millions of years spent on experiencing, learning and creating," he muttered. "And the Heart of Beast God. If at any point in time, the eight pictures of secret engravings of the Gold Beast God are almost perfectly combined, whether in a manner that makes sense or not... such a technique will emerge."

At that moment, he transmitted a message to Sitting Mountain

Guest who was in the primal universe.

"Sitting Mountain Guest!" he said. "Why are you still not on your way here?"

Chapter 1069: Fight Ancestor

After only a short while, Sitting Mountain Guest showed up at the peak of the mountain.

"Did you call me here for drinks?" Sitting Mountain Guest asked as he strolled toward Ancestor.

Ancestor pointed in the distance, standing beside the cliff. "Look at your disciple."

"Luo Feng?" Sitting Mountain Guest looked in the direction Ancestor pointed and saw Luo Feng sitting beside a cliff. He appeared surprised and joyful after gazing for a while, then started to laugh, "Old Beast God, no one in the universe can rival you on the path of eight gods! However, this disciple of mine created a technique using the eight engraving pictures of gold beast god... Do you admit your defeat?"

"How can you say I'm going to lose before he even fights me?" Ancestor said.

Sitting Mountain Guest shook his head. "Stop quibbling."

Ancestor didn't continue about the upcoming fight. Instead, he exclaimed, "Your disciple is indeed impressive! It's fair to say that he had some luck when creating the technique, but no one in history could practice the engraving pictures so well in only 180 million years without any instructions! Besides, he has comprehended the Heart of Beast God, and that's why it's easier for him to comprehend the eight engraving pictures of Gold Beast God. It's easy for him to create universe-knight level techniques, and if he's willing to devote his time and energy, he'll be able to create the universe-overlord level ones as well."

Even real universe overlords needed to spend an overwhelmingly long time to create universe-overlord level ultimate techniques. To some extent, even those on the engraving path were better at

creating techniques. Luo Feng was at least at the senior-universe-knight level when it came to his accomplishments among those who were on the engraving path.

"The Heart of Beast God?" Sitting Mountain Guest looked pleased. Then he guffawed. "A pleasant surprise! What a pleasant surprise, indeed!"

"He's a Golden Horned Beast, which makes him a descendant of beast gods!" Ancestor exclaimed. "His bloodline inheritance is close to Gold Beast God... And with his research into those eight engraving pictures, he can finally comprehend the Heart of Beast God. He is indeed lucky, but I can't say it's because of luck alone."

"Hahaha...!" Sitting Mountain Guest laughed heartily.

"Look at you." Ancestor shook his head.

No wonder Sitting Mountain Guest was so proud. The accomplishments on engraving path could help law comprehension to a great extent. There wouldn't be many barriers until Luo Feng became a universe overlord... Especially with the Heart of Beast God... It would now be easier for him to proceed along the beast god path! Heart of Beast God was the greatest challenge to turn from a universe overlord into a universe master, and that problem was now solved. Although it was still extremely difficult for him to become a universe master, he at least had a much higher chance.

Sitting Mountain Guest glanced at Ancestor and rejoiced inside.

Little do you know that this disciple of mine obtained inherited techniques before, and he can better study the engraving pictures with the instruction from the engraving picture of his supreme inherited technique. Regardless, it's still impressive of him to create a supreme inherited technique and comprehend the Heart of Beast God in only 180 million years.

Sitting Mountain Guest looked down.

******

In front of the cliff.

The energy from the sculpture of the engraving picture was equivalent to that of the three ultimate techniques of universe masters.

"I did it," said Luo Feng. "It's an ultimate technique of universe masters."

Luo Feng stood in front of the cliff for a long time. He felt like he was in a dream.

"I did it," he repeated, "after 180 million years."

Luo Feng was confident that he could create ultimate techniques of universe overlords. As for ultimate techniques of universe masters... It would involve some luck.

Luo Feng suddenly looked to the sky and transmitted his voice.

"Ancestor," he said. "I challenge you."

Ancestor, wearing in a white cape, quickly flew in from afar. He landed on the ground and smiled at Luo Feng.

"You're going to challenge me?" he said.

"Yes," answered Luo Feng.

Luo Feng knew that even if he lost, he could keep doing research and trying. After all, all he needed to do was to defeat Ancestor within 100,000 eras.

"What weapon should I use?" Luo Feng asked.

"Let's use our bare hands, shall we?" Ancestor raised his left hand. This godly body of his had been transformed from other elements.

"Hands?" said Luo Feng.

He was taken aback. Hands as weapons?

"You've already comprehended the Heart of Beast God," said Ancestor. "Don't you think your hands are weapons?"

Luo Feng was startled. Thousands of years' worth of memories flooded back. For beast gods traveling in the universe, their claws, tails, and horns all contained the beast god conception. Even the spiritual force weapons were the bodies of beast gods... At this moment, Luo Feng felt as though the enormous gap between close combat and spiritual force weapons had disappeared. The techniques he had created could be used both for close combat and as spiritual force weapons.

"Warrior path and spiritual force leader path... They're the same." Luo Feng was bewildered.

"You've comprehended the Heart of Beast God." Ancestor smiled. "If you didn't, you had to focus on either the warrior path or the spiritual force leader path... After all, mixing them together is bad for comprehending the Heart of Beast God. Besides, beast gods are naturally better at using their godly bodies to fight, which is why those on the warrior path are better at comprehending the Heart of Beast God and finally become beast gods."

Luo Feng nodded.

Primal Chaos City Leader had told him this before and insisted that he concentrate on the warrior path! However, for the past 180 million years, he had set aside the warrior path and spiritual force leader path, instead focusing on the engraving picture path. Without realizing it, he had fully comprehended the Heart of Beast God.

"Do you still need weapons?" Ancestor asked.

Luo Feng smiled. "If beast gods can use their claws, then I can use my hands as well."

Ancestor stood still. "Attack," he commanded.

Luo Feng looked from afar and used the Mosha body for the

combat. After all, Ancestor would also use the godly body at the same level.

Hong!

Countless engravings started to flow on Luo Feng's godly body, and he dashed toward Ancestor like a beam of golden light. At this moment, Luo Feng felt the beast god in his body charging his competitor. The attack contained the beast god path and also contained ultimate techniques of universe masters. The attack was fierce and quick—faster than the Shi Wu Wings!

"Break!"

Luo Feng arrived at where Ancestor stood. He grabbed Ancestor as his left hand became a claw, and the engravings on its fingers started to connect with each other.

Peng!

Ancestor waved his hand, and they clashed. Ancestor took a step back.

"Hahaha...!" Luo Feng felt overjoyed. The memories of the beast god merged with him at this moment.

Charge!

Claws!

Legs!

Luo Feng was absorbed in the golden light, and the roaring of beast gods resounded around him.

Fast!

Sharp!

Ancestor was suppressed. Although he tried to resist it, Luo Feng was getting more and more skilled, as if he truly were a beast god.

Peng!

His fingers were sharp like claws.

Pu!

They pierced through Ancestor's chest.

Ancestor looked down, smiled, and nodded. He took a step back, and his godly body recovered.

"You won," he said.

Luo Feng, standing in the golden light, was dazed. Had he actually defeated Ancestor? Ancestor would only perform universe-master level pinnacle techniques, and though he could only maintain his godly body at the same level as Luo Feng's, he was still Ancestor, after all... It was a surreal feeling to have defeated Ancestor!

"Thank you, Ancestor," Luo Feng said respectfully.

Ancestor had focused on defense from the beginning of the combat, which was why Luo Feng had been able to make better and better attacks, and thus, fully understand the way Beast Gods fought.

"No need to thank me," said Ancestor, shaking his head and smiling. "I performed the best defense pinnacle techniques of universe masters, but I still failed to defend against you. I might have won if I had attacked first, but you will still win over me after several challenges. There's no need to waste time."

Luo Feng was full of gratitude. He had benefited so much in the past 180 million years in the Beast God Sector.

The Heart of Beast God was a pleasant surprise, and the engraving picture path was a brand new path for him. Plus, he had created an ultimate technique of the universe master level.

"Hahaha...!" A guffaw resounded around him, followed by a shadow.

Sitting Mountain Guest looked at Luo Feng from afar. After 180 million years, this disciple of his had finally evolved! In the past,

Luo Feng hadn't had much time to practice. He stood among the great beings because of the enormous godly body and Force Armor, but when it came to laws and techniques, he was significantly weaker. Yet his law comprehension and techniques had now reached an incredibly eminent level—even better than many universe overlords.

"I've accumulated enough," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "I believe this disciple of mine will have an easy time becoming a universe overlord. Perhaps the only difficulty he's going to have is becoming a universe master."

Sitting Mountain Guest was satisfied. Flame Emperor had disappointed him, which was why he had devoted all his resources and time to his third disciple. Fortunately, his third disciple hadn't upset him.

The laughter attracted both Luo Feng and Ancestor.

"Master?" Luo Feng was dazed by the shadow flying toward him.

"Sitting Mountain Guest," said Ancestor with a smile. "Don't be smug. Your disciple is indeed impressive... However, don't forget that he has a golden horned beast body, and his soul has completely merged with the godly body. It's almost impossible to tell whether he's a human or a golden horned beast. Who will say no if I insist that he's a golden horned beast?"

"That's between your alliance and the humans," Sitting Mountain Guest said as he landed. "It has nothing to do with me. Whether this disciple of mine belongs to the human race or Space Beast Alliance doesn't concern me at all."

Luo Feng stepped forward and said, "Master."

"Okay..." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled and nodded. He glanced at Ancestor. "Don't forget our bet!"

Chapter 1070: It Was Named ‘Northern Rock’

Luo Feng's face immediately registered a look of anticipation. Previously, he had heard from Ancestor that the get between Ancestor and Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest involved his wager—a set of true treasure series—and Teacher's wager—a piece of a pinnacle true treasure. If Ancestor lost, then he would have to bestow this set of true treasure series to Luo Feng. This was definitely a great opportunity.

For them to use these items as wagers meant the true treasure series and the pinnacle true treasure must have been of comparable value. His Force Armor was one such pinnacle true treasure!

And Blade River Luo, a top-tier domain type true treasure with an extremely strong attacking power, was comparable to Force Armor. It was so massive that its entire birth process... had to be divided into several segments to reach completion. Thus, it was quite a sensation. It was little wonder that Flame Emperor had been so reluctant to give up Force Armor to Luo Feng back then... Such events went to show that true treasures such as Force Armor and Blade River Luo were very precious—so precious, in fact, that great beings like Flame Emperor and Primal Chaos City Leader covet them.

Yet only universe supreme beings such as Ancestor and Sitting Mountain Guest had the magnitude of boldness to use such precious treasures as the stakes in a bet!

"You are one of the top nine powers in the universe; Ancestor of Space Beast Alliance, you can't be that petty!" teased Sitting Mountain Guest. "I am waiting for that true treasure series of yours."

Ancestor cast a look at Sitting Mountain Guest. His expression

revealed his heartache. Even a being as great as Ancestor would feel the sting of this loss. Previously, when he had been so confident that he would win the pinnacle true treasure from Sitting Mountain Guest, he had not expected that he would lose the gamble.

"Fair is fair," Ancestor said. "This true treasure series is one I can still afford to lose. According to our agreement, I shall bestow this true treasure series to Luo Feng."

"Yes." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled and nodded. "That's right. Bestow it to my disciple."

Ancestor turned to look at Luo Feng. "Luo Feng."

"Ancestor." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

He did not consider defeating Ancestor something to be proud of. It was, after all, only to fulfill a gamble. If Ancestor were to display his true power, his ability to ensure that whatever order he gave would be effectively enforced would have rendered Luo Feng powerless with no way to fight back. If one was willing to pay the price, he could even kill a universe master.

"Look." Ancestor pointed in midair, and a black beast figure suddenly appeared.

"Huh?" Luo Feng looked carefully.

It was a wild beast that was black from head to toe. It had four powerful hooves and claws, as well as sharp fangs that pointed to the sky and a single horn on its forehead that gave off a shiny gleam... Its body was covered with layers of armor, as though it were filled with limitless magical power. Luo Feng was completely captivated at first glance. It was truly a stirring beauty.

The black wild beast was around 300 feet tall, and it landed right in front of Luo Feng. It was then that Luo Feng realized, to his astonishment, that this was a dead creature. It was lifeless.

Ancestor walked over and caressed the leg of the gigantic beast.

"This is my true treasure series. I named it 'Beast God Armor.'

Sitting Mountain Guest looked on with great pleasure, then laughed aloud.

Ancestor cast him a glance before turning to look at Luo Feng. "Your teacher is gloating, but it's to be expected. Previously, because of this true treasure series... there was chaotic battling all over. Your teacher was so scheming. He launched a sneak attack and immediately fled the scene. I had to pay quite a sizable price to defeat that adverse universe, and finally, I managed to obtain this true treasure series."

Listening on, Luo Feng felt his excitement rising... It was as though he had personally undergone this battle of universe supreme masters.

"This true treasure series consists of a total of 526 true treasures, of which 521 are ordinary true treasures, four are senior true treasures, and the remaining one is a top-tier true treasure," Ancestor explained. "The sharp fangs and scales on its body, for instance, can be dismantled and used individually! Combining everything to form one body, its power is massive."

Luo Feng was shocked. 526 true treasures to form one true treasure series? It was said that Primal Chaos City Leader's Thousand Treasure River was formed by 1,000 true treasures put together, and this, in Luo Feng's eyes, did not pale in comparison. Moreover, out of these 526 true treasures, one was at the top-tier level.

"Breaking this down, the horn alone is a top-tier true treasure," said Ancestor. "And once combined with the power of a few hundred other true treasures... its power will skyrocket." Ancestor gave a sentimental sigh. "By placing this true treasure series on one's godly body, every part of the godly body becomes a weapon ready to attack. It is definitely the most suitable tool for a great being who wants to cultivate the beast god path and become a

universe master. I named it Beast God Armor and had planned to bestow it to one of the universe masters from my Space Beast Alliance that I found to have great potential." Ancestor looked at Luo Feng. "Now, it's yours."

Luo Feng felt his heart pounding faster.

Beast God Armor!

"Thank you, Ancestor," Luo Feng said, showing his gratitude respectfully.

Ancestor smiled and nodded, and with one wave, the black beast figure flew over to Luo Feng.

A golden horned beast appeared on Luo Feng's shoulder. At this moment, his Golden Horned Beast body had temporarily put away the Force Armor, Shi Wu Wings, the Nine Tiger River, and the other treasures, storing them in the World Ring. It swooped down while exerting its godly power, speedily encircled the black beast figure to brand the beast with its life imprints.

Hong!

The black beast figure was instantly broken up into several hundred true treasures, all black in color, which flew over to Golden Horned Beast at top speed and settled on him. There, the true treasures fully integrated into Golden Horned Beast's body, covering every inch of him.

In an instant, Golden Horned Beast transformed into a gigantic beast that was jet black all over. The scales covering every inch of his godly body were like knife blades. Even his fangs grew tremendously. The five sharp horns originally on his forehead had become six! The middle horn was the longest, with a length of approximately one and a half feet! (At this juncture, Golden Horned Beast still maintained his miniaturized godly body, which was three feet long).

Luo Feng's consciousness was cheering with joy. Wonderful!

Those sharp claws! That tail! That godly body! And those sharp horns! Everywhere—every part of it was a true treasure!

This true treasure series was truly deserving of being considered most compatible with the Beast God Path. Furthermore, Beast God Armor had incredible defensive power. It was essentially an attack-type true treasure, and its defensive power was comparatively weaker. Yet its defensive power would still be on par with ordinary treasures of a top-tier true treasure defense armor.

The instant Luo Feng branded the armor with his life imprints, Beast God Armor transmitted some ancient information, including its actual name. Luo Feng was secretly confused.

Huh? This Beast God Armor was originally named "Northern Rock"? What a strange name.

Many treasures had original names, such as "Silver Dragon Phantom" and "Golden King Armor." However, their new users would normally give them other names, such as "Ancient Boat Galaxy" and "Golden Armor." Beast God Armor's original name had been "Northern Rock."

Regardless of what its original name was, this Beast God Armor is indeed the most suitable one for my Golden Horned Beast body. Excellent!

"Roar!"

Golden Horned Beast got worked up and could not help letting out a roar of excitement. Ancestor nodded with satisfaction.

"Luo Feng, come here!" Sitting Mountain Guest shouted out.

Luo Feng obeyed immediately.

Sitting Mountain Guest took Luo Feng aside and changed the universe law of the surroundings. If Ancestor wanted to listen to their conversation, he could, of course, make use of the universe laws to forcibly suppress this... but Ancestor would not go to that extent. It was obvious that Sitting Mountain Guest had something

to discuss with his disciple in private.

"Teacher?" Luo Feng said as he sat down beside Sitting Mountain Guest.

"Just a short 180 million years to succeed... Well done." Sitting Mountain Guest nodded his approval. "You are stronger than your second brother."

Luo Feng listened submissively.

"Back then, I made you the Star Map, but looking at you today, I'm afraid it will no longer be of much help," Sitting Mountain Guest said. "Although you may only be a pinnacle undying now, you are highly accomplished in the studies of secret engravings! You are already at a strategically advantageous position. If you were to move on to studying the law path... in an extremely short period of time, you will be able to achieve a breakthrough and become a universe knight. Even if making your way past the threshold to be a universe knight may somewhat affect you, 1,000 years should be enough."

Luo Feng nodded. He was also very confident. Studying the pictures of secret engravings had made him feel that studying the law path would be simple. It would be easy to understand! Previously, he had been restricted to only studying the engravings because of the gamble... so Luo Feng had simply refrained from studying the law path.

"When you have become a universe knight, you will be using Star Tower while being new to it, but you will already be able to activate the entire Star Tower," Sitting Mountain Guest said. "By then, with Star Tower... this Star Map will be useless."

Luo Feng nodded and could not help asking, "Teacher, does this mean that I have to undergo another ordeal to obtain the fifth black metal board of the Nine Volume Manual?"

To obtain the third black metal board, Luo Feng had sent himself

to Ice Hell. To obtain the fourth, he had fallen into this Beast God Sector.

"No," said Sitting Mountain Guest. Then he added with a smile, "If your teacher's methods are all so easily fathomed, could I still be called a teacher?"

Luo Feng was taken by surprise.

"In terms of training through ordeals, this Beast God Sector has put you through enough," Sitting Mountain Guest said. "180 million years... you can now create a universe master ultimate technique! Based on your studies on pictures of secret engravings and the law path... we have mutual confirmation. That's enough."

"What about the fifth black metal board?" asked Luo Feng. He could not wait to get his hands on the fifth black metal board right away.

"When the time comes, you will know." Sitting Mountain Guest said.

Luo Feng was left with no other choice.

Sitting Mountain Guest looked at Luo Feng with a satisfied expression. "Continue to work hard! Your power is extremely strong now, but just wait until the day you use Star Tower. No one in this universe will be able to look down on you... As your teacher, I have hopes for you to become even stronger."

"Yes, Teacher," said Luo Feng.

He was expectant, too. Over the course of these 180 million years, he had undergone a total transformation. He was no longer a weakling unarmed with battling techniques who could only depend on setting his godly being ablaze to obtain power when facing his enemies, hoping that his enemies' powers would be consumed before he was finished.

Consuming his opponents to death was only achievable in the Land of Extremis because that was a place where no one could send

out calls for help to other great beings of their races. However, in other places, such as the Original Star, when one met with danger, it was always possible to obtain help from other great beings. After all, every supreme being was important.

Sitting Mountain Guest turned his head, transmitting his voice to Ancestor who stood in the distance. "Space Ancestor. Thank you for all these years. Now that he has met my expectations, I will take him and leave this place."

"There's no hurry. Wait a moment." Ancestor was by their side in a flash.

Sitting Mountain Guest looked at Ancestor. "There is something else?"

"Nothing to do with you." Ancestor looked at Luo Feng. "I have something to tell Luo Feng."

"He is my disciple," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "How is this unrelated to me? Luo Feng, from how I see it, I think you should still focus on staying within humans..." But Sitting Mountain Guest was still mid-sentence when he suddenly started laughing. "Luo Feng," he said, "since Space Ancestor has something to tell you, you should stay and chat with him. I will wait for you here. Then we can head back to the primal universe."

"Yes, Teacher," Luo Feng replied.

Right. It was time to head back to the primal universe!

...

Sitting Mountain Guest walked off into the distance, and Luo Feng followed him. He bowed to show his respect, then addressed him. "Ancestor," he said.

Ancestor looked at Luo Feng and asked directly, "Has the thought of leaving the human race ever crossed your mind?"

Chapter 1071: Back to the Original Universe

Luo Feng had known that Ancestor of the Space Beast Alliance wanted to admit him, but he hadn't expected Ancestor to be so straightforward.

"No," Luo Feng answered without hesitation.

It would have been ridiculous for him to say yes. The human race treated him with great generosity, and besides, after 100,000 years, earthlings had been spread across the entire Ganwu Universe, and they had blended in the human race family. Besides, Luo's family had had people reach all the regions in the universe... How was it possible for him to break away from the human race like that? He needed to think about his parents and his wife.

Ancestor was dazed for a moment but then nodded. "Ah. I almost forgot that you're still fairly new. Your family and friends are still alive."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

"How about this?" Ancestor continued. "Your Golden Horned Beast can join my Space Beast Alliance. He can be known as Golden Mountain Knight. This won't affect anything you have within the human race, just as you can call for help on the original stars as a human and you can also call for help as a space beast. From now on, you'll have two powers to support you!"

"However," said Luo Feng, "I'll also bear responsibilities from both sides."

It was beneficial for Luo Feng to join a new power. However, he would also bear new responsibilities!

He understood why Ancestor wanted him to join the alliance. Once he became a universe knight, his godly body would be close to some universe masters, as he had reached the perfect life gene level! And together with ultimate techniques of universe masters, a

top-tier set of true treasures, and pinnacle true treasures, he would be much stronger. And once he became a universe master, he would rival the top-tier universe masters like Primal Chaos City Leader. Besides, he had Sitting Mountain Guest behind him to help! How could he not draw Luo Feng to his side?

"Yes, the alliance gives you assistance, and meanwhile, you will need to bear some responsibilities." Ancestor looked at Luo Feng. "Great power comes with great responsibility. What you think?"

"No problem. I can bear them." Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

"Wonderful." Ancestor nodded with satisfaction.

It was better for him to have more help on the path of great beings. When he was trapped or in danger, and if the Hong Alliance couldn't help him in time, he would now have the Space Beast Alliance. Besides, Luo Feng had gone to Space God Mountain once, and the members of the Space Beast Alliance were like brothers, contrary to the strict hierarchy in the human race.

Just when Ancestor and Luo Feng reached an agreement, Sitting Mountain Guest walked towards them.

"I didn't hear your conversation," he said, "but it seems that you've successfully admitted him, Space Beast Ancestor."

"Master," Luo Feng greeted Sitting Mountain Guest.

"Luo Feng, did that old man give you some benefits?" asked Sitting Mountain Guest. He was being quite blunt!

Luo Feng was smart enough to say, "Not yet."

Sitting Mountain Guest turned around and glared at Sitting Mountain Guest. "Your alliance will definitely bestow a universe knight with great potential a true treasure if you find one. How come this disciple of mine didn't get one? It's lucky for you space beasts that my disciple has joined your alliance!"

Ancestor was dazed. "I just gave—"

"Don't mention the Beast God Armor," Sitting Mountain Guest scolded. "That was because of the bet you lost. That's not something your alliance gave to Luo Feng."

There was, indeed, a rule within the alliance that a universe knight with great potential would be bestowed with a true treasure if he didn't have one! However, the alliance wouldn't waste true treasures if the individual in question had already had one. They needed to earn them through their contributions to the race.

As for Luo Feng, he had a top-tier set true treasure, so obviously, he didn't lack true treasures.

Ancestor looked at Luo Feng. "Haha! It makes sense. Luo Feng has already stood at the top among the universe overlords. It is indeed lucky for my alliance to have him. Luo Feng, you should know that no matter which power you join, you need to exchange true treasures with your contributions. Even if your great potential deserves true treasures, the one bestowed to you won't be precious."

Luo Feng nodded. It was like Bark Mirror Emperor. He only had an ordinary true treasure armor.

"Your Golden Horned Beast doesn't need true treasures anymore," said Ancestor, "but your original earthling body is better at close combat. I know that you've been using spiritual force weapons... I'll give you a senior true treasure that's a weapon for close combat."

"Thank you, Ancestor," Luo Feng responded.

He would definitely take a free true treasure. It was more than enough to have a senior true treasure weapon for close combat.

"So stingy of you," Sitting Mountain Guest murmured.

"Sitting Mountain Guest, unlike you, I have an entire Space Beast Alliance to take care of," Ancestor said with resignation. "If you think the true treasure I gave him is not good enough, you should

give something better."

"Rest assured, I'll definitely give him a better one." Sitting Mountain Guest glared at Ancestor jokingly.

"What kind of close-combat weapons do you need?" Ancestor asked Luo Feng.

"A sword," said Luo Feng. "I'd like it to look like this." He pointed to the sky, and his godly power concentrated, forming the shape of a ghost sword.

"I don't have one that's exactly like that. How about this one?" Ancestor waved his right hand and transported a true treasure from somewhere else.

The sword was slightly bent. The handle was purple, and there were complex patterns on it. It looked like a two-handed sword in the shape of a saber.

"The blade part is close to the one you want, but the handle is longer," said Ancestor.

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. "Great."

"Take it."

Ancestor smiled, and the ancient blade flew toward Luo Feng. He penetrated it with his godly power, and information flooded his mind.

The sword was called "Cutting Pearl Sword."

"Cutting Pearl..." Luo Feng held the sword and slashed the space.

Si! La!

There were cuttings left in the space it touched, which satisfied Luo Feng. It was like the first time when he used the ghost blade on earth, which was exciting.

"This is the information about our Space Beat Alliance." Ancestor threw a golden book towards Luo Feng. "There are many other

gathering places for our alliance aside from Space God Mountain. Every gathering has a portal to Space God Mountain! You can leave some keepsakes in the gathering places and transport yourself there, and thus, to Space God Mountain any time. Be sure to come back to Space God Mountain sometimes, at least to get keepsakes from Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master so that you can get some help from them when you're in danger. You belong to the bloodline of the golden horned beasts."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

There were different bloodlines in Space Beast Alliance, and the leaders of his bloodline were Golden Horn Master and Xuan Mie Master.

"I'll leave with Luo Feng, then?" Sitting Mountain Guest asked.

"Sure." Ancestor smiled. "I'll send you two back; it'll be faster."

Hong! Long!

Space and time became twisted. Suddenly, Luo Feng and Sitting Mountain Guest disappeared and reappeared elsewhere.

"We've been transported back to the original universe," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "I'll separate us from the universe operation law temporarily." Sitting Mountain Guest looked at Luo Feng and added, "After a while, when the universe operation law senses the change in your life gene level, there'll be a sharp change in your Golden Horned Beast! Your godly body will become significantly stronger and will reach the perfect level like last time. But there won't be inherited techniques this time."

"No inherited techniques?" Luo Feng was confused and disappointed by this.

"That's right." Sitting Mountain Guest nodded. "Bestowal of a supreme inherited technique is a great opportunity for great beings who reach the perfect life gene level. Their minds will be drawn to the center of the universe origin, and they'll receive an

inheritance... Your mind has already been given an inheritance, so you don't get a second chance; nobody does."

Luo Feng understood.

"Besides, it means nothing to you." Sitting Mountain Guest shook his head. "One supreme inherited technique is enough. And you've created an ultimate technique of universe masters! If you need more techniques, just create them."

Luo Feng nodded.

"When you can drive Star Tower, you won't need any supreme inherited techniques!" Sitting Mountain Guest smiled. "When you can drive all the complex engravings in Star Tower, those techniques will mean nothing to you."

Luo Feng nodded. Although he was already a high achiever in techniques, those engraving sculptures in Star Tower still looked quite intricate. No wonder it was a supreme true treasure! If he would be able to use Star Tower in the future, all he needed to do was drive the engravings in Star Tower as Sitting Mountain Guest said.

"This is a token." Sitting Mountain Guest threw Luo Feng a token that looked like a blue stone.

Luo Feng took it.

"It was specially made by me, and it's an ordinary true treasure," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "Just put your mind into it if you need to connect to me. I'll receive it instantly."

"Okay," said Luo Feng.

"Go back to your god country now. It'll take you a lot of energy to become more than 55,000 miles tall from 600 miles, and you need to prepare those energies by yourself."

Luo Feng nodded. He knew that the universe operation law would only evolve his godly body... As for the energy he needed for

evolution, last time, it was world energy that Remote Ocean had absorbed to evolve.

"Go," said Sitting Mountain Guest.

"Yes, Teacher."

Luo Feng could clearly sense his god country and where his original earthling body was. Suddenly, his original earthling body sent an undying slave through god country.

Weng!

Luo Feng left in the green light of god country transportation.

After three teleportations through space ripples, Luo Feng returned to his god country. He could already feel the power from universe operation law.

Hong! Long!

Hou!

Golden Horned Beast, wearing Beast God Armor, roared above the Remote Ocean.

Pi! Li! Pa! La!

His bones, flesh, horns, and muscles started to bulge sharply, and he began to absorb all the godly power in the boundless Remote Ocean.

Chapter 1072: Plight

The Golden Horned Beast stepped on the water of the boundless Remote Ocean. His hoofs were tens of thousands of miles tall, and his body was more than 55,000 miles long. That tail, covered with scales, perfectly matched the main body... The wing, also covered with scales, looked as if it could cover the sky and contained endless godly power.

Each inch of his skin merged with the top-tier set true treasure Beast God Armor! His natural scales perfectly integrated with the scales of the true treasure, and there were five small horns and one large horn on his head! Wearing the Beast God Armor made the Golden Horned Beast look fiercer than ever.

"A perfect godly body that's more than 55,000 miles tall!" Luo Feng was thrilled. "The godly power I have now is much stronger than what I had before."

From now on, he would be able to perform "I Am the Universe" anytime, and he would be considerably more powerful in his own miniature universe.

The Golden Horned Beast howled loudly.

"Everything's ready now. It's time to find Tian Yang Knight." Luo Feng smiled. "I bought the domain type true treasure Nine Tiger River and obtained the fourth black metal because I couldn't deal with Tian Yang Knight, but I didn't expect to gain so much."

The original plan was only to get the fourth black metal and make the Golden Horned Beast perfect so that he was able to perform I Am the Universe. Yet everything was going much better than he had anticipated.

The top-tier set true treasure Beast God Armor, the senior true treasure Cutting Pearl Sword, and a self-created ultimate technique of universe masters... After practicing on the engraving-

picture path for 180 million years, he had become quite confident. He would definitely be able to kill Tian Yang Knight and seize the other wing.

"The problem is, I need to find this Tian Yang Knight first." Luo Feng was wearing Force Armor and carrying the Cutting Pearl Sword with his wing open... He left his god country with his Golden Horned Beast in his world ring and departed for the original stars.

Although ordinary great beings of the human race would make an avatar to connect to the virtual universe when all their bodies were leaving for the original stars, it was unnecessary for Luo Feng to do so... Remote Ocean body was Luo Feng's largest body, and he could connect to the virtual universe using the sensor.

******

Luo Feng walked into the open-air bar in the virtual universe where universe knights from the Hong Alliance shared information.

"Luo Feng."

"Blade River."

The universe knights greeted Luo Feng, but they isolated themselves from the surroundings and started to gossip as soon as he walked away.

"Many universe knights went to ask Luo Feng for true treasures when the original stars just opened," one of them said, "and I heard that even his brother 'Gui Yi Knight' went to him as well. However, he didn't lend anything to anyone because he said he wanted to go, too. Yet he hasn't stepped foot in the original stars yet."

"He won't unless he seeks his own death! He's no fool. He's like a moving treasure chest and carries great fame. He'll definitely attract widespread attention if he goes. But it was lame for him to

refuse to help. If he didn't dare go in, he shouldn't have used it as an excuse! Why didn't he just say he didn't want to lend his true treasures?"

"That's right... Why couldn't he just be straightforward? Why did he lie and tell others that he was going, too?"

There were thousands of universe knights in the open-air bar, and discussions transpired when Luo Feng walked if, but they all kept them as secrets... After all, Luo Feng was able to kill Bark Mirror Emperor as an undying fighter. He would almost certainly become a universe overlord when he became a universe knight... Nobody wanted to mess with Luo Feng.

"Kuang Zhou Knight," shouted Luo Feng.

The built man with three horns on his head turned around and laughed. "Blade River!" He walked toward Luo Feng. "Come here!"

Luo Feng walked to an empty table and sat on the giant table. Great beings in the Hong Alliance were of different sizes, and the chairs were not only exquisite but also gigantic!

Kuang Zhou Knight sat down. Luo Feng ordered a glass of grape wine, and an undying waiter served him the wine instantly. It was the dream of many undying fighters to be servants here, as it was easy for them to meet universe knights who were almost impossible for them to meet otherwise. They might even become friends with some universe knights if they were lucky enough. Besides, they could also overhear some confidential information about the universe.

"Blade River, you wouldn't have come to see me if you didn't want my help," Kuang Zhou Knight said. He put down his glass and laughed. "Tell me, what's the matter?" Their voices were blocked from the others.

"Help me find a universe knight from another race," said Luo Feng.

"Who?" asked Kuang Zhou Knight.

"Tian Yang Knight," said Luo Feng. "I want to know who he is, which original star he's on, and what the coordinates are."

"The universe overlord 'Tian Yang Knight' of the automaton race? The one known for his 'Eight Shuttles'?" Kuang Zhou Knight was surprised. "Why are you looking for him? He's a handful. Although he's not as terrific as those universe overlords of special life forms, he's still very difficult to deal with."

"No need to be concerned about that," said Luo Feng. "Please just do me this favor. Once you get his information, tell me."

"Of course." Kuang Zhou Knight nodded.

"Haha! Thank you so much. Let's drink."

Luo Feng raised his wine glass, but it was the mind of his boundless Remote Ocean that went into the virtual universe, which was why he looked so relaxed. He was talking to Kuang Zhou Knight about what happened on the original stars, and a lot had happened in the past 20,000 years.

As Luo Feng and Kuang Zhou Knight were drinking, they heard a yell of exasperation.

"Ganwu! I'm not pushing you, but I was just revived by a universe master because I got killed on the original stars! You know that I needed to pay a price to be revived... After being resurrected, I've owed our race 1.3 true treasure points! I can't fulfill it even if I devoted all I had to our race. I didn't force you to give me back the valuables you owe me, but now!"

Many universe knights looked to where the fight came from. So did Luo Feng and Kuang Zhou Knight.

"Huh?" Luo Feng frowned.

There were two great beings sitting in a corner. One of them was a universe knight with purple skin and silver hair, who was

accusing in anger. The other was Ganwu Universe Country Master. Ganwu Universe Country Maser looked embarrassed and blocked their conversation from the surroundings, seeking to placate him.

The universe knight destroyed the blocking and yelled, "Why are you blocking us from others? Ganwu, we've been friends for hundreds of millions of years! I know that you've had a hard time yourself, which is why I've never asked for what you owe me back. But look at me now! How can you still delay the payback?"

Ganwu Universe Country Master sat there with his face in his palm. The universe knight lowered his voice gradually.

"What happened?" Luo Feng said with a frown.

"It's because of the resurrection!" exclaimed Kuang Zhou Knight, shaking his head. "It's against the universe operation law to turn back time and revive someone, which is why even universe masters will get hurt if they do it. That universe knight, Mei Hua Knight, died on the original stars and was revived, after which he owed our race 1.3 true treasure points. That's worthy an ordinary true treasure. Ordinary universe knights could only pay them back by devoting an eternity. As for Ganwu Universe Country Master, his situation is even worse than Mei Hua Knight's."

"Worse?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Yes," Kuang Zhou Knight said. "All 1008 universe country masters are ancient universe knights."

Luo Feng nodded. After the 1,008th universe country was found, no more universe countries were founded within the human race, the main reason being that there weren't enough territories. Apparently, those who could become universe country masters were all ancient.

"The longer you live, the less potential you have." Kuang Zhou Knight shook his head and sighed. "Ganwu Universe Country Master died three times, and every time after he died, he was

successfully resurrected. However, it cost him dearly to be revived. One time, he died on one of the original stars and lost all the true treasures he borrowed. As for the other two times, he lost some set treasures."

Luo Feng sighed in his heart. It was true; when you died, you lost your true treasures.

"What's worse is that those who lent him true treasures came after him after he was revived," Kuang Zhou Knight continued. "He can pay the race back slowly without being pressured, but as for that which he owes to other great beings... They are continuously demanded payback. After all, it's not easy for other great beings to have a true treasure. After being resurrected three times, he not only owes six universe knights, but he also owes our race. It's almost impossible for him to turn things around unless his power surges and he becomes a universe overlord. However, that hasn't happened even after billions of years of practice."

"Actually," continued Kuang Zhou Knight, "those universe country masters won't dare to go to dangerous places like original stars even if they have the clone talent. Unless they have power or ambitions, that is. Ganwu Universe Country Master has been staying inside his universe country for a long time to train himself, and he also cultivates generations of juniors, which is another way to earn contribution points. Although it's extremely slow, it's safe. Sometimes, he'll also go to the universe secret regions without much danger. It's unlucky that he has fallen so low. However, he's also fortunate enough to be with us humans, as we have universe masters to resurrect him. If he was part of a weaker race, he would be dead forever."

Luo Feng turned around. Ganwu Universe Country Master was conversing with Mei Hua Knight, and Ganwu was trying to appease Mei Hua Knight.

Chapter 1073: Paying a Visit

A short while later, Mei Hua Knight left. Ganwu Country Master also left straight away. After all, staying on was embarrassing.

Luo Feng watched everything in silence.

Ganwu Country Master. Was he lucky? Or unlucky? Luo Feng was not able to tell for sure, but he could see that Ganwu Country Master was in a difficult position.

"Kuang Zhou Knight, I will leave it to you to look for news of Tian Yang Knight. Thank you for helping out." Luo Feng continued chatting with Kuang Zhou Knight for quite some time before he stood up to leave.

"Haha! I will inform you once I have news. A small matter," Kuang Zhou Knight said.

Then Luo Feng vanished into thin air.

******

On the mountains of Thunder Island in the virtual universe, in the palace of Ganwu Country Master.

He was alone, pacing about the gallery area with furrowed brows, deep in thought. He was indeed frustrated... He had not expected the quiet, peaceful days to be disrupted once again after such a long time! He had good relationships with the six universe knights that he was indebted to, so they did not press him. The peaceful years had led him to forget about the difficult times in the past.

But today... he was really in a spot.

"Humph!" Ganwu Country Master slapped the stone pillar beside him so forcefully that it shook, and some powered bits fell off.

"Ganwu," a voice resonated.

Ganwu Country Master turned and saw a figure descending a distance away. After one look at who it was, he immediately

walked over to extend his welcome with a smile. "Luo Feng."

"It's been a long time since I visited your humble abode." Luo Feng smiled.

"You have not spent much time on cultivation, and yet you have made tremendous progress. Time is definitely of the essence." Ganwu Country Master grinned. "Come, come, come. We shall take a seat over there."

He led Luo Feng to an open sitting area not too far away. Servants were already laying out a spread of delectable food and fine wine. The two sat across one another.

"Young Hai is not getting himself into any sort of trouble lately, is he?" Luo Feng asked.

"No. He is quite talented and also very hardworking," Ganwu Country Master said with a smile. "If not for me forcefully keeping him under my reigns, he would already have become undying."

Luo Feng nodded. His son, Luo Hai, had also cultivated himself for hundreds of thousands of years. Furthermore, he had an abundant supply of resources that would make any undying emperor green with envy. Given Luo Feng's status, even if his son did not hold very high qualifications, he could still rely on the richness of resources to become undying! Besides, Luo Hai was indeed quite talented and had always considered his father, Luo Feng, his role model.

"Staying as a sector lord for a longer time will be good for him, too," Luo Feng said. "It would be best if his law comprehension could reach emperor level before he achieved a breakthrough to becoming undying."

"Yes, that is my plan, too." Ganwu Country Master nodded his agreement.

"Haha! Young Hai is the only one that I am worried about in my family," said Luo Feng. "Luckily, I have you as his master to help

him all this while."

Luo Feng expressed his gratitude. His older son, Luo Ping, and his wife, Xu Xin, were all at their family nest... His father, Luo Hong Guo, and mother, Gong Xin Lan, had indulged in virtual games for a good many years. Although unintentionally, they had unknowingly attained the ninth stage of domain level; if they were to put in a little more effort, they would have become sector lords.

Of course, he could allow such uninhibited use of resources, but such use was limited to his parents, wife, sons, and brother. The other hundreds of millions of clansmen of the Luo family would have to follow the rules. Otherwise, even if there was an abundant supply of resources, it would not be enough to provide for countless clansmen if they consumed what they had at a crazy rate. There had to be some rule system within the clan.

Counting only Luo Feng's closest kin, it would only be his youngest son, Luo Hai, out there wandering. The fact that he considered Luo Feng his role model worried him a bit.

Luckily, Luo Hai had found his way to the Ganwu Dojo, and thereafter, he had been taken under the wing of the dojo's founder, Ganwu Country Master, who accepted him as a special disciple.

Luo Feng looked at Ganwu Country Master and thought about the how indebted he was to him! When he had just made his appearance among the human race with the identity of merely a genius, Ganwu Country Master had taken good care of his family... As he became stronger and stronger, Ganwu Country Master provided him with even more help, and without reservations. He even went to save Luo Hai in person. Now, he was Luo Hai's teacher. From the very beginning, Ganwu Country Master had not asked Luo Feng for any help. On the contrary, he had been helping Luo Feng all this while. How could Luo Feng not take all these things to heart? That was why he had come here.

"Ganwu, I witnessed what happened in the inner-city of Hong

Alliance City," Luo Feng began.

Ganwu Country Master's expression froze momentarily, but the next moment, he shook his head and let out a soft sigh. "Greed. It was greed." He shook his head and sighed again. "The very first time I was annihilated, I reversed time and space to resurrect myself. If, thereafter, I had not been greedy and wanted to recoup my loss, I would not have taken the risk to borrow a true treasure and would not have gone back into the Original Star. That moment of greed. The last annihilation... Because of these, I am indebted to my clan and owe them a true treasure and a series of treasures. That was the greatest loss I ever incurred. Three falls would naturally bring such an outcome."

Ganwu Country Master shook his head. "If you want to go to the Original Star, you must be very careful. One careless mistake, and you will be annihilated. If you are annihilated, the price to pay would be exorbitant. If I was able to divide myself into other bodies... how advantageous that would be."

Luo Feng nodded in agreement. The talent of dividing bodies meant that even if one body was annihilated, the main body could still recover over time at its own pace. There was no need to reverse time and space just to be resurrected. The price to pay was small.

"I need to think of a way to repay my debts!" continued Ganwu Country Master. "Some of my good friends have transferred a portion of their Contributions to me, so I could at least return the true treasure that I owed. Yet being able to pay off that true treasure also meant that I would end up owing a few friends another favor. As for my debt to my clansmen accumulated until today, I can't tell for sure how many eras it will take me to finally repay everything."

"Greed!" he said again. "If it weren't for greed, after the first annihilation, I would not have taken another risk. I would have amassed an amount to completely recoup the loss I incurred from

being annihilated. By then, it would not have been too late to move on to the next adventure." Ganwu Country Master shook his head.

Luo Feng understood him. A clan was no charity. Its existence would help its own clansmen, but to do so, it needed the contributions from great beings of the clan! The privilege to enjoy benefits and the responsibility to contribute were interdependent. If Ganwu Country Master continued to owe his clan repeatedly in such a manner, the debt was bound to multiply. Luckily for him, his clan was not forcing him into a corner.

"How much do you owe?" Luo Feng asked.

"Huh?" Ganwu Country Master was stunned and looked at Luo Feng. He could roughly guess his intentions and was hence unable to suppress his agitated emotions.

Could it be Luo Feng, known to be a mobile treasury, was going to help him?

"I am indebted to six universe knights," he said. "The smallest amount is a few hundred treasure points, and the largest amount is 2,000 treasure points. All six debts put together equal about 1.6 true treasure points. As for my clan, I owe a total of 2.2 true treasure points."

Luo Feng was secretly taken aback. Ouch! No wonder he could not pay off everything. 3.8 true treasure points was enough to exchange for two to three ordinary true treasures. Such an amount could be worth the entire fortune of a universe overlord. Ganwu Country Master had accumulated an alarming debt.

Of course, Luo Feng did not really care. From killing Bark Mirror Emperor, he had obtained a true treasure armor. Then, in the Land of Extremis, when he killed Demon Sword Knight, who had the abilities of a universe overlord, he won himself another two true treasures, of which one was a heavenly sword that was a supreme true treasure.

As of today, Luo Feng owned Tower Pearl, Star Map, Shi Wu Wings, Nine Tiger River, Golden King Armor, the heavenly sword and armor of Demon Sword Knight, top-tier true treasure series Beast God Armor, pinnacle true treasure Force Armor, the senior true treasure battle sword Cutting Pearl... and he would be getting the supreme true treasure Star Tower soon!

The quantity was plenty, and their quality was high. Of course, the top three were God Beast Armor, Force Armor, and Star Tower. Out of the three, Force Armor and Star Tower had both been bestowed to him by Sitting Mountain Guest. The Beast God Armor series had been won from Ancestor. These three all came from universe supreme masters.

Given Luo Feng's techniques, getting hold of true treasures was no difficulty at all. The strong would always be strong! That was the underlying theory behind his success.

"I will lend you 1.6 true treasure points," Luo Feng said. "As for the amount you owe your people, you'll have to figure that out for yourself."

"1.6 true treasure points?" Ganwu Country Master felt every cell of his godly roaring with joy. His emotions ran high. Trillions of years' worth of debt owed to six good friends, all of whom were universe knights... It was so torturous! Especially with Mei Hua Knight constantly berating him. As a universe knight, he was very particular about pride. Yet in the face of all his good friends' denunciation, all he could do was tolerate it.

But from this day on... all of these problems would be things of the past.

"Luo Feng..." Ganwu Country Master began but said no more. He was thankful beyond words.

At that moment, he received a notification package to tell him that he had received a Contribution worth 1.6 true treasure points, and, another package that was rushing him to return the

Contribution to his clan. Of course, Ganwu Country Master was not in a rush to return to his clan yet. After all, his clansmen would not be put through embarrassment.

"I can only help this much; the rest is up to you," Luo Feng said, and he stood up.

"This favor is really... Haha..." Ganwu Country Master could not hold back his laughter. "I'm sorry, I'm forgetting myself here... This stress that has been weighing on me for what feels like an eternity. Today, all of it has been lifted off me. What follows will be to gradually return to my clan."

Luo Feng nodded. Ganwu Country Master had helped his family so much, and this would be a way of repaying his kindness. Helping him with 1.6 true treasure points should suffice. What he owed his own clan would serve as a form of reminder and pressure on Ganwu Country Master.

"I will make a move first."

Luo Feng disappeared the very next moment.

Ganwu Country Master stood unmoving, his eyes lit up, bright then brighter.

"Hahaha...! Hahaha! Hahaha...!" Ganwu Country Master turned up his head and laughed. His joyful laughter resonating throughout the entire palace. Servants hand-picked by Ganwu Country Master looked at one another. They had never heard him laugh so happily before. He was laughing without inhibition.

Ganwu Country Master immediately transferred the Contributions to his six good friends accordingly.

The six universe knights contacted Ganwu one after the other.

"Ganwu, you actually returned the Contributions?"

"Where did you get them from?"

"Ganwu, what I did in the Hong Alliance City earlier on was

unintentional. I just had an anxiety attack. Where did you get the Contributions from? If you are really at wits' end, do not just act recklessly. Taking a little more time is fine. I can still pull through."

Ganwu Country Master was in a very good mood, so he chatted with every one of these six universe knights.

"All my stress, gone in a day." Ganwu Country Master felt relaxed, but at the same time, he sighed to himself. This Luo Feng's progress was unbelievable... within the blink of an eye, he had transferred 1.6 true treasure points over to him.

******

In the starry sky of the universe, amidst the darkness, there was an indistinct space whirlpool.

"The path to Original Star Number 02818?"

Luo Feng stood in the middle of the starry sky with silver wings widely spread. The Force Armor that he donned appeared silver; on his back was his Cutting Pearl Sword.

"Previously, I entered secretly, so no one knew that I, Luo Feng, has entered an original star," he said. "There were a few knights within the Hong Alliance already discussing this... saying that I was purely making excuses when I said that would not lend anyone my true treasures because I wanted to go into the original star. Haha! Of course, I should now enter as my human form. Universe overlords of other races... the mobile treasury in human form is coming!"

Luo Feng took one big step across the starry sky and stepped into that gigantic space whirlpool. There, he was rapidly brought to the original star.

Chapter 1074: A Moving Treasure Vault

Towering mountain ranges stretched across the land, and above the mountains was a great space whirlpool. A silver-winged and silver-armored man walked out of the whirlpool. He stood in the sky and looked around. All was silent.

"Based on the information I have," said Luo Feng, "during the first few hundred of years when the original stars were open, it was more likely for valuables to be born, and the great beings who had suppressed their desire for an eternity were more excited. This led to more killings. However, after that time, almost all the great beings have gone into hiding."

Luo Feng shook his wing and started to fly. He looked down at the ground. Although he had arrived at another original star, there weren't significant differences among the original stars.

After flying for half an hour, he saw a purple object in a lake in a mountain valley below.

"Huh?"

He immediately dove, stood on the lake with his feet, and walked to the target.

"What is this?"

Luo Feng picked it up and examined it. It was a purple cloth that was about 30 square feet in size. Luo Feng penetrated it with a trace of his godly power, and the information contained in it flooded his mind.

The treasure was called "Imitation of Purple Sky." The invisible godly power could immediately enlarge the purple cloth to cover enemies instantly. Although it was only a treasure, it was the first time that Luo Feng had seen a treasure that looked like a cloth. He sensed that it was a top-tier spiritual force weapon.

"Imitation of Purple Sky?" Luo Feng whispered. "The name is

bizarre. Could there be a more powerful valuable named 'Purple Sky'? Why would a valuable born in the original stars is called Imitation of Purple Sky?"

The more Luo Feng thought about it, the more mysterious he found the universe to be. He already stood among the supreme beings in the universe, but there were still many secrets waiting for him to uncover.

"This treasure might be worth thousands of treasure points. I'm really lucky."

Luo Feng smiled. This was what usually happened in the original stars, and many great beings were aware that there were numerous valuables on the original stars. However, there were usually many great beings gathering here as well. No matter how many valuables one obtained, once he was killed, he was doing others a favor. Only those with great power could roam the original stars! Like Luo Feng...

Luo Feng didn't need to be afraid of universe overlords anymore. As for universe masters, they couldn't teleport themselves on the original stars. And if a universe master arrived, Luo Feng would have known about it through the virtual universe and hid himself away. Besides, with Luo Feng's power, universe masters' control over space and time didn't intimidate him.

Luo Feng strolled on the original star as if he were in the garden of his own home. He was waiting for an opportunity, and his Remote Ocean body was connected to the virtual universe and waiting for the update about Tian Yang Knight. Once he got it, Luo Feng would immediately race to where Tian Yang Knight was.

******

29 hours after Luo Feng arrived at the original star, a giant, two-headed being lay in the forest. His skin looked like purple crystals. The armor on his godly body was dimming, and he was lying there, waiting for an opportunity...

He was an energy life form—a great being from the Purple Smelting race. The fact that he was walking alone on the original stars proved that he was a universe overlord! Energy life forms were one of the few races who were naturally immune to soul attacks, and the Purple Smelting race belonged to that category. They preferred to be closer to the ground. Many life forms loved to sit when they practiced, but great beings from the Purple Smelting race loved to lie down.

Flourishing Light Horde Leader lay with one of his heads' eyes closed while the other had them open, fully alert.

"Hmm?" All his eyes suddenly opened, and he spotted a human shape flying across the sky between the leaves of the forest. "It's a human?"

Flourishing Light Horde Leader stood up.

"A silver wing? And that look..." Flourishing Light Horde Leader looked shocked. "Isn't that the legendary talent of the human race, Luo Feng? That true treasure wing... How is it possible? Though that human killed Bark Mirror Emperor, he is, after all, only undying. He is, at most, as powerful as a secondary universe knight, and those who dare to show up on the original stars are at least senior universe knights."

Flourishing Light Horde Leader was thrilled to see Luo Feng. After all, Purple Smelting race was one of the numerous races that belonged to the Northern Territory Alliance, and Bark Mirror Emperor—who had been killed by Luo Feng—was from the Northern Territory Alliance. The great beings from the Northern Territory Alliance surely knew about Luo Feng.

Additionally, the great beings who had inside information had already extrapolated that this peerless genius had at least six true treasures! A soul type true treasure, a spiritual force weapon true treasure, a wing true treasure, and an armor true treasure. Plus, he had at least two true treasures from the Ancestral God School. Six

true treasures were much more than all that many universe overlords had. Especially soul type true treasures, which were ardently desired by universe overlords.

They all perceived Luo Feng to be weak, as he was only undying! He was like a human-shaped, moving vault full of valuables available for the taking! There were even discussions within the Northern Territory Alliance that if Luo Feng entered original stars, it would be like giving true treasures away to those lucky great beings of other races.

However, all the races had assumed that Luo Feng wouldn't be stupid enough to enter the original stars. Based on the information gathered, Luo Feng hadn't gone to the original stars in the past 20,000 years.

"He's here? And I haven't got any news? Am I the first one to find him?" Both of Flourishing Light Horde Leader' heads were raised up and looked at Luo Feng as he flew. "He's a peerless genius in the human race. I didn't think he'd be stupid enough to put himself in danger."

He was both exhilarated and wary. Luo Feng surely had something to save himself. However, after hesitating for three seconds, Flourishing Light Horde Leader reached a conclusion.

"Humph! He's only undying! Even if he has a trump card to save himself, can that kill me? Only universe masters are able to do that! It's impossible for him to hide a universe master in his world ring." Flourishing Light Horde Leader smirked. "I don't need to worry about what he has. He can't threaten my life."

This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity! thought Flourishing Light Horde Leader. A human-shaped moving vault full of valuables! I can get at least six true treasures if I kill him, and I can exchange one of his true treasures for a senior true treasure armor.

The soul type true treasure Luo Feng had was useless to him, as he was a life form from Purple Smelting race, but he could still

exchange it for something he desired!

"It's an opportunity I can't miss! If I do, I'll regret it for billions of years."

The eyes on Flourishing Light Horde Leader glinted fiercely.

Sou!

He started to speed up in silence I the forest. As for Luo Feng, he was flying in the sky at a moderate speed and looking down at the ground, and Flourishing Light Horde Leader caught up with Luo Feng immediately.

******

Luo Feng didn't notice Flourishing Light Horde Leader at the beginning, but Luo Feng saw him when he flew out of the forest.

"Human!"

Flourishing Light Horde Leader surged, and his purple-crystal skin was glowing. Both of his heads turned to face Luo Feng, and his eyes glared at him.

Luo Feng looked down and frowned. "Flourishing Light Horde Leader from the Northern Territory Alliance?" Luo Feng immediately identified him and took out his Cutting Pearl Sword.

"Die!" Flourishing Light Horde Leader shouted.

All six arms of Flourishing Light Horde Leader reached out, glowing with a cold light, and when they approached each other...

Hong! Long! Long!

Their surroundings were trapped in time law domain, which also affected Luo Feng. Flourishing Light Horde Leader took the chance and attacked him.

He puts all his efforts into fighting me—the legendary undying fighter, Luo Feng thought. He used law domain first, after which he is now going to start attacking me. No wonder he's a universe

overlord.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

The sky started to glimmer as if stars were shining, but all the lights looked aggressive. It was as if they all sought to kill Luo Feng directly.

Luo Feng still held his Cutting Pearl Sword still after seeing this.

"Flourishing Light Horde Leader's technique, Flourishing Light World?" Luo Feng nodded. "I'll use you to test the training I've had in the past 180 million years."

Luo Feng, who had already burned his godly power, started to move the sword in his hands. Meanwhile, engravings showed up on the blade. The engravings were delicate, elegant, and mesmerizing. When Luo Feng waved the sword, gold and space merge law were triggered.

"You dared to fight back?" said Flourishing Light Horde Leader. "Even if you have an ordinary true treasure armor, you'll die under this attack!" And then, Flourishing Light Horde Leader was terrified. "What's that?" he gasped.

A gleaming, golden light! Cold! Fierce!

It slashed through all the flourishing lights, and the technique of Flourishing Light Horde Leader was shattered—smashed like an ant. The golden light hit Flourishing Light Horde Leader's armor, and the power was so strong that the ordinary true treasure armor could only weaken half the power from the attack. The rest of the attacking power was all taken by Flourishing Light Horde Leader's body.

"Howl!"

A roaring sound from afar blasted the ears of Flourishing Light Horde Leader.

"I, I, I..." Flourishing Light Horde Leader still floated in the sky.

And then, just like that, his godly body was annihilated and disappeared into thin air. Only his black armor and six lights were left.

Luo Feng stood in the sky and smiled.

Chapter 1075: It's Luo Feng!

Under the control of his godly power, the black armor that was suspended in midair and the six, hovering lights made a turn and flew toward Luo Feng.

"An ordinary true treasure armor," said Luo Feng. "Six ordinary true treasures weapons—should be considered as a series. It has a value that is comparable to a senior true treasure weapon."

Luo Feng stored the true treasures and then summoned a World Ring to him from afar. This World Ring had fallen to the floor immediately after Flourishing Light Horde Leader was annihilated. Upon checking its contents, Luo Feng only found a dozen or more treasures and some other things. Their accumulated value was not even the value of an ordinary true treasure.

After killing Flourishing Light horde leader, Luo Feng gathered the loot from his victory. His human godly body was set ablaze to display his most powerful trump card and was hence greatly consumed. However, there was his Remote Ocean body to supplement whatever was lacking. Thus, he was able to maintain a pinnacle condition.

Sou!

The moment Luo Feng spread his wings, he transformed into a beam of light and took off. His speed was neither too fast nor too slow; he maintained his flying speed near to the speed of light.

His surroundings were quiet. There was no movement, no traces. No one would be able to tell that a universe overlord had just annihilated been at that very spot just moments before.

******

The Northern Territory Alliance had an immensely large territory under its control, and within the starry sky where the Purple Smelting race lived in, there was a life planet that was dark

red all over. The palace of Flourishing Light Horde Leader could be found on that planet.

The palace was not big, but it was considered to be one of the sacred grounds of the Purple Smelting race. The Purple Smelting race had a total of six existing universe overlords. Universe overlords were by far the strongest beings within the race, which was why the entire race was divided into six different territories, each managed and cultivated by these six universe overlords.

From within the palace, several disciples and servants bowed in worship as they watched a faraway figure approaching. It was the body that Flourishing Light Horde Leader had left behind before he made his way to the Original Star.

This body was weak. But it was, after all, Flourishing Light horde leader's consciousness, so it could still provide guidance to disciples and handle certain matters without a hitch.

"I—" Flourishing Light Horde Leader revealed a shocked expression.

Peng!

Suddenly, he was annihilated and dissipated into thin air.

"Huh?"

"Horde leader!"

"Teacher!"

Three disciples and a bunch of personal servants who were waiting in the distance were in great shock. The area surrounding this planet was in a sealed space, so even Flourishing Light Horde Leader could not teleport and leave the planet. So how did his body suddenly disappear?

"Don't worry, there must be some very important matters that needed Teacher's undivided attention, so he has retracted his godly consciousness. Then, of course, the body will disappear."

"Let's take a look at the tokens teacher gave us."

"Let's take a look at the tokens."

The three disciples immediately took out the tokens. The tokens were all parts of a collection of Flourishing Light Horde Leader's belongings. They were all items that had his life imprint. They were valuables that recognized their owners. Once these items were crushed, Flourishing Light Horde Leader would sense the urgency and go to his disciples' rescue.

"The token has become an object without an owner!" A high-pitched voice suddenly shouted from among the disciples.

Two other voices corresponded with the same comment, adding to the bleak and grim atmosphere.

"An object without a master!"

"Mine too! An object without a master!"

The three disciples of the Purple Smelting race looked at one another, eyes filled with fear and uneasiness. They had no doubts about what this situation meant! For an object that recognizes its master, that were only two ways to reverse this recognition. One was for the master to personally remove his life imprint on the object, and the other was for the master to be killed.

Since Flourishing Light Horde Leader was not present, there was no way he could have personally removed his life imprints. Then the answer was undoubtedly... that Flourishing Light Horde Leader had been annihilated!

"Hurry up! We have to quickly notify the other horde leaders."

"Quick! Immediately!"

"Notify the higher-ups!"

Six universe overlords oversaw the entire Purple Smelting race. If one got annihilated, it would be equivalent to the collapse of one of the race's pillars of support. This, to the Purple Smelting race,

was a very scary blow.

A short while later, three universe overlords of the Purple Smelting race who had not entered the Original Star came rushing over. First and foremost, they asked Flourishing Light Horde Leader's disciples questions about what happened. Then they dismissed all the disciples and servants.

In the palace, the three universe overlords who took the form of purple-crystal skinned, two-headed life forms stood in their designated spots. The atmosphere was suffocating.

"Flourishing Light was annihilated!"

"Who could kill Flourishing Light? And to think he did not even have the chance to ask for help! Flourishing Light owns an ordinary true treasure armor, and his attack techniques were strong. To kill him... could it have been a universe master?"

"Even if it wasn't a universe master, it must be one of the most powerful universe overlords."

The three of them fell in silence. Flourishing Light Horde Leader, Jiu Feng Knight, Pei Feng Knight, and Qi Blood Palace Leader were all considered normal universe overlords. There were some other powerful ones. For instance, there were special life-forms of the universe overlord level with life genes level of 8,000 or 9,000 times. Their godly powers were purer those of normal universe overlords by 100 times! When launching attacks, their powers would be 100 times stronger, too!

Furthermore, these powerful universe overlords would be obtaining even stronger true treasures. Their combat powers would certainly be extremely strong. With godly bodies that were massive in size, even if they were to go head-on with universe masters... they would be able to hold out for a long time.

"Going into the Original Star, there is always a risk of being killed. We had better banish that thought... If someone is able to

defeat Flourishing Light, we, the Purple Smelting race, really cannot afford to offend them."

"Hmm." The three universe overlords nodded in unison.

"We have to enlist help from the Northern Territory Alliance to resurrect Flourishing Light."

"Flourishing Light is a universe overlord; his resurrection is only possible at the hands of Main Master of Alliance... But Main Master's temperament is notorious. I'm afraid we have to wait for his mood to brighten up before we can ask him to help resurrect Flourishing Light."

Elementary universe knights, secondary universe knights, senior universe knights... once they were annihilated, it would usually not take too long for them to be resurrected. It there was a delay, it would, at most, be 1,000 to 10,000 years.

But in the case of universe overlords, things were not that simple. In the whole of the Northern Territory Alliance, only Main Master of Alliance had the ability to resurrect a universe overlord! Other universe masters were unable to do so. Even if the Main Master of Alliance was caught up in some other matters for billions of years... no one would dare make a single utterance.

"Heck, let's just submit our application to the Alliance. Then we will wait patiently."

"Agreed. When Flourishing Light comes back, we will know how he was annihilated."

******

The Original Star was closing up on the Land of Origin of the universe.

Cruising the sky of the Original Star... the feeling was wonderful. Luo Feng smiled while on the move, reminiscing about the battle earlier on.

"My first time going all out in a battle, the power is massive." Luo Feng was extremely satisfied with his power. "It is unquestionably an ultimate technique of a universe master. The amount of godly power it consumes is alarming. If I did not have Remote Ocean body consistently supplementing me with energy, I think just that one stance alone would be enough to lose half of my godly body."

Previously, in the Beast God sector, when Luo Feng and Ancestor were engaged in combat... he did not have to burn his godly body to become an undying body. When his body was not set ablaze, no matter how long he had to toil through a battle, he would not be consuming much of his godly power.

However, in the battle of life and death, Luo Feng had to burn his godly body! Like Qi Blood Palace Leader and Demon Sword Knight, when displaying their ultimate skills, they, too, would consume much of their godly bodies. And Luo Feng's ultimate technique of a universe master, "Golden Light," was on a much higher level compared to those of Qi Blood Palace Leader and Demon Sword Knight! Luo Feng's consumption of energy was unintentional, but after the Golden Light absorbed his godly power... it consumed more than half his godly body! Of course, Remote Ocean body was rapidly supplementing him with what was lost.

What a large consumption! The force was insanely strong!

"Too strong!" said Luo Feng. "I could feel his ordinary true treasure armor becoming helplessly weak under my blade. If I were to just increase the strength of my attack by one level, I think I would have destroyed that true treasure."

Luo Feng analyzed the situation himself. 9,800 times of the life genes level, 100 times of godly power amplification... Luo Feng's godly body was not inferior to that of a general universe overlord! Even for the one and only special life forms—such as the World Tree in the Ancestral God Secret Region and the Cold Whale—they might be universe overlords, but their battling powers were comparable to those of universe masters. And their godly powers

were purer than Luo Feng's by just two levels!

But Luo Feng's ultimate technique of a universe master was stronger than those of the World Tree and Cold Whale by two levels! The advantages he had in terms of his secret technique made up for the lack of godly power. The moment Luo Feng displayed his ultimate technique of a universe master, he would be comparable to the powerful special life forms of universe overlords!

"His true treasure armor was simply sub-standard, weakened to only half his power. Of course his godly body would be annihilated. If he had a senior true treasure armor, I guess, I might only have been able to injure him. To kill him, I would have needed a few more strikes."

This exemplified the importance of armor. Even for universe masters, not many could achieve attacks that would bring Force Armor to its limit.

"180 million years of cultivation has indeed brought me great success."

Luo Feng nodded with satisfaction. He was highly accomplished in the studies of pictures of secret engravings, making the mastering of space laws a breeze. Although it had only been a few days since he left the Beast God sector, he already comprehended the final space law, which was none other than the mysterious and complex "Strangulation." Now, all he needed to do was combine three space laws, namely, "Teleportation," "Space Sealing," and "Strangulation," into one. Then he would become a universe master.

However, the final stage posed a small challenge to Luo Feng. Just like how some great beings were highly accomplished in space laws, yet were stuck in the final stage of the gold laws, Luo Feng was highly successful until now. He was slightly affected at his current stage. Just like Sitting Mountain Guest had said, a

breakthrough could happen anytime, regardless of how slow he was. 1,000 years would be more than enough to become a universe master.

"When I become a universe overlord, my godly body will be comparable to powerful special life forms like World Tree and Cold Whale. I will be even stronger in my techniques. By then, I will have to go all-out in becoming a universe master."

Luo Feng was secretly looking forward to this.

"By then, I will be able to make use of Star Tower readily."

Luo Feng smiled, then continued flying. He was waiting... Waiting for the next great being like Flourishing Light horde leader to make a move against him.

"Bring it on. I am the mobile treasury." Luo Feng smirked.

******

In one of the hilly valleys amidst the deserted plains, three senior universe knights from the Thorn Ring Alliance were hiding. They were silently waiting for energy waves. Among them, Ji Qi Knight was appalled when he raised his head to look up at the sky. He immediately transmitted what he found aloud.

"Look, look! That is the human form of Luo Feng!"

"Luo Feng? Are you referring to the human fellow who is always so lucky?"

The other two universe knights looked up with a jerk. The three looked very carefully and tried to make out who the figure was. Silver armor, silver wings, and a black-haired human form...

"It is him! It's the human form of Luo Feng."

"It's him. He has at least six true treasures on him! And that is definitely a soul type true treasure, and even possibly a flying-palace type true treasure."

"He dares to come to the Original Star. This extraordinary genius

really thinks he's invincible? Such arrogance..."

"Arrogance is good. He is a mobile treasury in human form. But this human form of Luo Feng might have a strong backing."

"What backing? Even if there is a universe overlord in the Word Ring protecting him in secret, what can he do?"

The weeds around them kept them hidden from view. As they looked up at the figure flying across the sky, all three felt their hearts burning...

The shortest yet sturdiest four-hoofed being transmitted his thoughts as the other two universe knights immediately lent him their undivided attention.

"We have to succeed. Our powers put together will be far stronger than his. Once he escapes, he will take off at a speed near light speed. Then we will not be able to catch up anymore. I have a plan, and I will make it a point to prevent him from escaping."

Chapter 1076: Prey

The four-hoofed being started to transmit his voice, and the two universe knights listened to it carefully. The four-hoofed being finished the entire plan in less than one second, though they had been staring at Luo Feng, who was flying in the sky in silence... He was their prey, and it would be easy to get his true treasures!

"Get out!" The four-hoofed being gave an order, but he was shocked after that.

Hong! Hong!

Two beings flew toward Luo Feng from two different directions. The four-hoofed being and Ji Qi Knight could see clearly that one of the beings who dashed at Luo Feng was had a godly body that was more than 300 feet long with dozens of claws. His knees were covered with hair, and the green eye he had on his face was glinting with fierceness and greediness.

As for the other, he looked like a human, but he was of bug race. He was lanky with blade-shaped hands.

"They're in the lead!" Ji Qi Knight opened his eyes wide.

"They're from the Northern Territory Alliance! Our plan..." another knight said anxiously.

The four-hoofed being roared, "Forget the plan! Let's attack him!"

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Threes beams of light shot to the sky and flew toward Luo Feng. Both of the universe knights from the Northern Territory Alliance were nervous as well. The strange beast knight transmitted his growling voice: "It's the bastards from the Thorn Ring Alliance! We were the ones who found Luo Feng first! Don't let them take him!"

"Luo Feng is ours," shouted the lanky knight, clenching his teeth

and looking fierce.

******

Luo Feng was the calmest one. He flew leisurely in the sky and saw universe knights of other races flying toward him. He immediately identified them.

"Ke Bi Knight and Ba Xiu Knight from the Northern Territory Alliance. Ba Xiu Knight has an enormous godly body, much larger than the body of Flourishing Light Horde Leader who I killed before. Flourishing Light Horde Leader is around 30 feet tall, but he's over 300 feet tall... But I bet he doesn't have a true treasure armor. I can kill him with one move."

Universe overlords' godly bodies were not much better at defense than senior universe knights... Usually, universe overlords relied on their true treasure armor! Ordinary true treasure armors were enough when it came to attacks from ordinary overlords. However, in the case of the World Tree, the Cold Whale, and Purple Rain Knight, ordinary true treasure armors wouldn't help much. Only senior true treasure armors or their better could protect one from being killed after one move.

Of course, if one's godly body was over 600 miles long, like that of Golden Horned Beast body, he could survive longer even if he only had an ordinary true treasure armor. But if one didn't have an adequately sized godly body or senior true treasure armor, they would be walking toward their own demise if they were dealing with top-tier universe overlords like World Tree, Cold Whale, Purple Rain Knight, or Luo Feng. Of course, no one alive on the original stars knew of Luo Feng's real power. The only one who knew about it was already dead. They still thought of him as a human-shaped moving treasure vault.

"Another three?" Luo Feng glanced around. "Ji Qi Knight, Zhu Ka Knight, and Xun Ya Knight from Thorn Ring Alliance. Are they all senior universe knights. Well, they're not a threat to me."

Hong!

Luo Feng waved his wing and sped up, starting to flee.

******

"He's running away!"

"Don't let him run away!"

"Quick! That direction!"

Ke Bi Knight and Ba Xiu Knight from the Northern Territory Alliance grew anxious. Though they were not afraid of the three great beings from the Thorn Ring Alliance, they only had two beings while the Northern Territory Alliance had three. Besides, their power was at the same level. Luo Feng might be seized by the great beings from the Thorn Ring Alliance.

"Chase him!"

"Hurry up!"

"Let's separate and encircle him."

The three knights from the Thorn Ring Alliance went three different ways and tried to outflank Luo Feng. Their speed surged.

Weng! Weng!

Both time law domain and space law domain arrived, and they started to stop Luo Feng.

"Want to run away? Hahaha... Luo Feng! You're coming to the original stars for your death." Ke Bi Knight grinned hideously, and a circle showed up around his hand. He threw it out, and the circle started to bulge. It dashed toward Luo Feng at lightspeed under the control of godly power.

The three universe knights from the Thorn Ring Alliance also grew anxious, but they couldn't do anything, as the universe knight from Northern Territory Alliance had a spiritual force weapon.

"Don't worry, that Luo Feng has a spiritual force weapon true treasure," Ji Qi Knight said. They were relatively farther from Luo Feng, as they had taken off later.

"That's right! Luo Feng has a spiritual force true treasure weapon."

******

"Want to catch me?" Luo Feng roared.

Hua!

Luo Feng held his right first, and stars showed up in the sky. All the 1,000 stars had tightly carved engravings on them, and they formed a gigantic beast god under the godly power! The beast god roared and raced toward that circle.

The beast god's tail slashed at the circle. The circle bounced away, and it tried to charge Luo Feng again under Ke Bi Knight's control... It wanted to dodge Beast God, who splashed it away again.

Ke Bi Knight clenched his teeth. "No wonder it's a spiritual force weapon true treasure. It's so powerful."

"Hahaha! You can't run away!" Ba Xiu Knight made a rumbling voice and started to stop Luo Feng.

Luo Feng turned around. The three universe knights from the Thorn Ring Alliance also started to approach Luo Feng from three different directions.

******

Five universe knights were encircling Luo Feng in the sky, and Luo Feng was like prey trying to flee. He manipulated his spiritual force weapon to resist his enemies.

Hong! Hong!

The power from the clash between two spiritual force weapons spread.

"Energy ripple?"

"Fight?"

"It must be a set treasure or a true treasure! Quick, go there!"

The ripple attracted the great beings in distance, and Luo Feng was still trying to run away like a frightened bird.

"Quick! Stop him!"

Ba Xiu Knight transmitted his voice. "Beings from Thorn Ring Alliance... We've already attracted attention! Although the knights from other races are still far away from us, the longer we spend here, the more likely those other races will arrive here following the energy ripples. We won't be able to get anything if everyone's here. How about we cooperate with each other?"

"Damn it."

The three universe knights from Thorn Ring Alliance were all nervous, but Luo Feng was too swift. He was able to turn his direction and change his speed at will! And with that spiritual force true treasure weapon, the five failed to encircle him. Another reason for the delay was that the beings from the Thorn Ring Alliance and the Northern Territory Alliance were not cooperating.

The four-hoofed knight transmitted his voice. "Okay, let's cooperate. Let's kill Luo Feng together, and as for his true treasures, we'll see how powerful we are."

"Okay," Ba Xiu Knight agreed.

They wouldn't divide the true treasures equally. After all, they were from different alliances. It would be a joke if they believed in equal distribution.

The five universe knights officially formed an alliance. They started to block Luo Feng from different directions by encircling him. He now had less and less space to change direction! Besides,

Ke Bi Knight and Ji Qi Knight had spiritual force weapons, which put Luo Feng in a worse situation.

Hong!

Suddenly, golden, tumbling waves showed up in the sky. They covered an area with a diameter of 19 million miles, enveloping those universe knights.

"It's a domain!"

"It's a domain type valuable... We can't catch him anymore!" Ji Qi Knight shouted with haste.

"The resistance from the domain is not strong. It might only be a domain type treasure, not even a top-tier treasure."

"Quick, catch him!"

All five universe knights were stunned by the endless waves, and Luo Feng took the chance to escape their encirclement. However, they quickly found out that the waves didn't have strong resistance, and it wasn't even a top-tier domain type treasure! If it were a domain type top-tier treasure, it would have been more valuable than an ordinary true treasure...

"The resistance is not strong."

"Catch him!"

All five universe knights returned to outflanking Luo Feng. Although the resistance was not strong, it made it much easier for Luo Feng to dodge and stall for him.

"Hahaha... Look! It's the human, Luo Feng."

"It's Luo Feng."

"Quick!"

Three teams flew from different directions. It was difficult for them to see clearly what was going on in the waves, yet Luo Feng was the one who moved the fiercest and most quickly... Although

everything in the waves appeared blurry to them, they could tell which shadow was Luo Feng through the true treasure wing and the beast god formed by spiritual force weapons.

"The human Luo Feng came here as well."

"Look, it's the Thorn Ring Alliance! Hahaha...! And Ba Xiu Knight from the Northern Territory Alliance! No wonder they're trying to encircle him. It's the human, Luo Feng!"

"Quick! Luo Feng has at least six true treasures! And one of them is a soul type true treasure."

"Go!"

There were now a total of eight universe knights in three teams. They rushed into the golden waves.

******

In the waves from Nine Tiger River, Luo Feng was peaceful inside even though he appeared to be in a panic.

Another eight, he thought. From the Demon Alliance, the Nine Territories Alliance, and the Bug Race Alliance. Oh? There's a universe overlord among them. Luo Feng nodded. 12 senior universe knights and one universe overlord. Time to reel them in!

Luo Feng finally manifested all his power.

Hong!

He burned his godly power infused in the Nine Tiger River. Gold law domain arrived at the same time, merging with the Nine Tiger River.

Hong! Long! Long!

The resistance within the golden waves became much fiercer and denser, as if it had transformed from harmless stream to strong glue! The resistance surged threefold, making it incredibly difficult for the 12 senior universe knights to fly.

Chapter 1077: It's a Trap!

Nine Tiger River was vast and mighty as it hovered in the area, occupying an area that was tens of millions of miles wide. With Luo Feng's godly power giving it the ultimate boost—especially now that Luo Feng was so highly accomplished in his techniques—merely the secret engraving sculpture of this Nine Tiger River posed no difficulty. He could easily decode the engravings to boost it to its limits.

Its mighty power had ridiculously strong pressure, combined with Luo Feng's life gene level that was increased by 9,800 times and his godly power, which had been amplified 100 times. If Nine Tiger River were to undergo a complete boost with such conditions...

If the Nine Great Beasts within the Nine Tiger River were to join forces, they could easily annihilate a secondary universe knight. Even if they were to attack as separate entities, one was more than enough to seriously injure a secondary universe knight.

Falling into Nine Tiger River, even a senior universe knight would find it arduous to fly or move about!

"True treasure!"

"It's a domain type true treasure!"

"That human form Luo Feng hid his true powers earlier on. He concealed the power of this domain type true treasure."

Ji Qi Knight used voice transmission to communicate with Zhu Ka Knight who was nearby. The four-hoofed Zhu Ka Knight tried his best to make his way to Ji Qi Knight but found his speed of flight absurdly slow. He used voice transmission out of anxiety, saying, "Why did that human form Luo Feng hide the power of his domain type true treasure? If he released its power earlier on, he would have been able to escape from us easily. Yet, he didn't! What

is his motive?"

Ji Qi Knight and the four-hoofed being were flustered. The sudden surge in power of Nine Tiger River made them feel uneasy. They sensed something amiss!

"It's a trap!"

"Yes, it must be a trap! We have to leave this domain quickly! Within this domain, the speed we are flying at is laughably slow. If a strong enemy appears, we will be defeated!"

"Hurry!"

"Hurry up!"

They were not confident, but taking risks on a place like the Original Star kept the knights of other races vigilant. Every single one had been blinded by their greed into a frenzy as soon as they saw Luo Feng; out of 13 knights of other races, there were some who were still reluctant to give up or still sought his treasures by seeking his human form. However, for most of them, now that they realized something was amiss, the immediate decision was to leave right away!

******

In the middle of Nine Tiger River, Luo Feng stood in silence with his wings outspread. He had a bird's eye view of the entire Nine Tiger River and knew every move the 13 knights of other races made.

"Starting to panic?" said Luo Feng. "Maintaining great vigilance. What a pity. You are too late."

Luo Feng grasped the handle of his Cutting Pearl Sword from behind and lightly drew it out. The cold blade met with no obstructions within the waters of the Nine Tiger River. He was in total control because... this was Luo Feng's territory.

Hong!

By his side, a golden horned beast that was black all over was also hovering in midair.

"Golden Horned Beast body shall stay on the outside to attack while I kill from the inside... Let no one escape." Luo Feng gave his orders silently. "God Beast, transform!"

Hua! Hua!

Luo Feng and Golden Horned Beast transformed at the same time. Golden Horned Beast's hooves and claws grew bigger and bulkier. Its head also changed. Other than its pair of wings, it looked just like a Golden Beast God. Luo Feng's human form was also changing. His godly body grew slightly taller. Scales began to appear on his skin, and his eyes glowed with a faint tinge of gold. Although his godly power amplification had reached the limit of 100 times, under the transformation to a Beast God form... he was even more at ease as he carried out a slaughter... with the "heart of Beast God."

"Kill! Let's begin!"

Luo Feng made his move and swooped directly at the strongest one of the group trapped in Nine Tiger River a universe overlord known as "Para-chopper Knight."

Para-chopper Knight was the calmest of the group trapped in Nine Tiger River. He was from the Bug Clan Alliance, but he was not originally from the bug clan. He did, however, enjoy a most respectable status because he wielded great power! He was skilled in close combat and was very powerful. Plus, his soul was naturally strong in defense. The only weakness he had was that his godly body was small; his height was a mere two and a half feet. That was why he was very particular about defending his godly body. The most valuable thing on him was none other than a suit of senior true treasure armor!

Once he sensed the great surge of power of Nine Tiger River, Para-chopper Knight understood what was going on instantly. "We

have been tricked! It's a trap! Human form Luo Feng was the bait, purposely used to attract our attention to get us to move nearer. His world ring must have universe overlords or equivalent life forms hiding away... The situation is unfavorable to us here! We have got to leave right away!"

Para-chopper Knight held onto a gigantic sword. He sliced through every obstruction in his way and flew off. His speed was the fastest!

"Huh?"

Para-chopper Knight frowned. He sensed that the other races were near. Although he had unsettling feelings, he was not afraid. He did not sense that there were universe masters hidden in Luo Feng's world ring. And if there were no universe masters, common universe overlords did not pose a great threat to him.

"Within the human race, the most fearsome universe overlord, 'Heaven Erosion Palace Leader,' has since been spending his time hidden deep within the human race secret region. He rarely makes appearances. There is no news about Star Prison Devil Master's intentions to enter the Original Star. So other than two or three of the most powerful ones, universe overlords from the human race are nothing to fear."

Para-chopper Knight had just finished analyzing the situation when a golden light appeared before him. Its beauty was so enticing that it was soul-awakening... This golden light came from the blade that sliced through the water surface of Nine Tiger River.

Seemingly slowly and with an unrivalled gracefulness, the blade found its way to Para-chopper Knight. With widening eyes, Para-chopper Knight grew shocked and increasingly furious. He waved his huge sword with all his might, using his strongest skill—Arbitration of Fate!

Peng!

His huge sword was cast into the air, where it tumbled about in the golden river water. Icy cold, razor sharp pain erupted as the golden blade hacked right through Para-chopper Knight's godly body.

"This... What swordsmanship is this?" he gasped, paralyzed with fear. "This is... This is more fearsome than any other universe overlord I have met in a long time!"

The swordsmanship was so beautiful that it was earth-shattering... It could certainly bring the limit of the path to a whole new level! A new limit of the law!

Peng!

The power of this one strike reached the limit of a senior true treasure armor straight away. Where the true treasure armor was supposed to weaken the impact of attacks to 1/10,000th of their power... this one strike was weakened merely to 1/1,000th!

In an instant, 62 percent of Para-chopper Knight's godly body was consumed. Barely scraping through this strike, Para-chopper was scared out of his wits.

"Even with my senior true treasure, more than half of my godly body was consumed," he said. "Not good!"

He had no doubt that the next strike would take his life for sure. This poignant golden light from that blade would once again appear before him!

"Quick, escape!" Para-chopper knight transmitted a shrill voice with his godly power!

Peng!

But under the glowing blade's next strike, Para-chopper Knight's petite godly body was annihilated in an instant, leaving behind an exquisite true treasure armor that emitted a faint purple light suspended in midair. As for the world ring and huge sword, they had been cast into the distance a moment before.

******

Two strikes to kill him, thought Luo Feng. Seems like with my ultimate technique of a universe master, those universe overlords with senior true treasure armors will still be able to put up a tough fight... And this time, it was just a small godly body. If his godly body had been as big as the Golden Horned Beast's, no matter how many thousands or tens of thousands of strikes I make, I'm afraid I still wouldn't have been able to kill him.

Luo Feng was quick to realize his weak points. His swordsmanship was already very strong, but it barely surpassed the limit of a senior true treasure armor. Senior true treasure armors would still able to provide his enemies with an extremely strong defense.

"Oh? Starting to panic?" said Luo Feng, looking around. "Let's continue then."

Luo Feng held his Cutting Pearl Sword, his pair of wings spread wide open to form an arc shape as he charged toward another senior universe knight, his next kill.

Yes, panic! Out of the 13 knights of other races trapped in Nine Tiger River, when the most powerful of them, Para-chopper Knight, knew he was never going to make it past the second strike, his shrill transmission made the rest of the knights crazy with worry.

"Hurry up and escape!"

"It's a trap!"

"Even Para-chopper Knight cannot ward off his strikes! Quick, quickly escape!"

"Ah!"

"It's a great beast... Ah!"

Piercing shrieks were transmitted throughout Nine Tiger River

with godly power as the medium.

Hong!

The aftermath of the fight came in rumbling waves. Compared to Luo Feng's cold, decisive, clean-cut swordsmanship, the Golden Horned Beast was wild with fury—simply unstoppable!

"Roar!"

In sync with the looming roars, the hideous black beast god, the armored Golden Horned Beast, lowered his head and charged forward at high speed. With one single collision, the longest horn on his head rammed hard into Ji Qi Knight's body. Ji Qi's eyes widened in fear, then—bam! His godly body was annihilated. With only a single top-tier treasure armor on him, there was simply no way he could put up any resistance against such an attack from Golden Horned Beast.

"It's a trap!"

"That human form of Luo Feng is only bait! There is a strong universe overlord who is much stronger than Para-chopper Knight! He is after our lives, hurry...!"

"Hateful humans!"

Bitter and forlorn, sad and shrill, reluctant and begrudging, all sorts of roars rang out. Yet, with his Cutting Pearl Sword in hand, Luo Feng, who had been beast-deified, was cold-blooded as he roamed the sky above the golden river. His Cutting Pearl Sword cut through the universe knights one at a time. Under the poignant golden light of his blade, senior universe knights were annihilated one by one. Most of them were from other races that did not even have any ordinary true treasure armors; they did not have a shred of hope of warding off Luo Feng's advances.

Luo Feng attacked from the inside out, but Golden Horned Beast worked in the opposite direction, attacking from the outside in. There was no way any of the universe knights of other races could

escape. It was clear that these senior universe knights were moving at a snail's pace in Nine Tiger River, and the only one who was able to fly at a high speed—Para-chopper Knight—had been the first to be exterminated. As for the remaining ones, all hope was lost.

The number of knights of other races trapped in Nine Tiger River was consistently dropping. Eight, six, three, two, one...

******

Outside the mighty Nine Tiger River, the battle had attracted the attention of knights of various races who were slightly further away. As many as six teams of universe knights were already observing the situation within Nine Tiger River from a distance. Among these six teams of knights, there was a total of 15 knights and one universe overlord.

"It's a trap!"

"He's just the bait!"

"Quickly escape!"

Shrill voices were transmitted via godly power. A multitude of voices were transmitted all over, and the six teams of 15 knights of other races watching from a distance could not help but shudder.

They watched on from afar. Their view was obscured by the massive river waters, so they could not clearly see what was going on. Yet, they could sense the happenings within Nine Tiger River. In the beginning, there had been a very strong sources of energy, followed by piercing screams and begrudging roars shouting, "Luo Feng is bait! It's a trap! Universe overlord!"

But a fleeting moment later, silence prevailed.

All was dead silence.

At this point, the six teams of knights of other races, all hovering in midair while watching the entire episode from afar, felt a hair-raising horror. They knew... every one of the knights trapped in

there had lost their lives.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

A lone figure appeared in the middle of the golden, flowing river. He carried his battle sword on his back with a pair of wings outspread, and he sported a head of black hair. He was scanning the six teams of knights from thousands of miles away. At that moment, none of the knights dared make a sound.

Chapter 1078: Top-Tier Universe Overlord

A gigantic wolf with silver hair was floating in the sky.

"How brave you are, Luo Feng," it said. "You dared to use your own body as bait to attract universe knights to attack you. Then you let a universe overlord out to trigger the domain type true treasure to trap the knights of other races and slaughter them."

He had a godly body of around six miles, and he was staring at Luo Feng who stood in the golden waves.

"Thank you for your compliment, Bi Fa Knight," Luo Feng said, nodding good-naturedly.

Bi Fa Knight would be more difficult to deal with than Para-chopper Knight, whom he just killed. First of all, Bi Fa Knight was actually from the demon race, and he had more true treasures. Besides, Bi Fa Knight had a much larger godly body... It would take more time to kill him.

"Humph!" Bi Fa Knight growled in anger. "Which universe overlord was it? It must not be an ordinary universe overlord if he can kill Para-chopper Knight that easily. Which one? Heaven Erosion Palace Leader? World Tree? Star Prison Devil Master? Any one of you has a great reputation! I respect all of you, but shame on you for using this Luo Feng as bait to attract and slaughter us!"

As Bi Fa Knight's voice resounded through space, Luo Feng couldn't help smiling. Heaven Erosion Palace Leader, World Tree, and Star Prison Devil Master... Interesting guesses.

There were quite a few universe overlords within the human race, but most of them were at the ordinary level like Bi Fa Knight and Qi Blood Palace Leader, as humans were only ordinary life forms. World Tree, Star Prison Devil Master, and Heaven Erosion Palace Leader had unique experience and clone techniques, which was why they stood at the top among the universe overlords!

Under normal circumstances, the number of top-tier universe overlords was equal to that of universe masters within each alliance. There were more than ten universe masters within the human race, but there were only three top-tier universe overlords, and it was because humans were only ordinary life forms.

As for the Ancestral God School, which gathered a large number of special life forms, it had more top-tier universe overlords. Also, the Northern Territory Alliance had numerous races and quite a few top-tier universe overlords.

The universe knights of other races were secretly discussing things among themselves, felt that the entire situation was unfair.

"This is outrageous."

"Such a demeaning thing to do. The human race is a pinnacle race, and it's shameless of any of them to do such a thing. Those knights would have avoided universe overlords if they saw him, but nobody expected them to play such a move—using Luo Feng as bait!"

Though the universe knights of other races were furious, they all remained in the distance, as they could leave instantly.

"World Tree? Star Prison Devil Master?" The silver Bi Fa Knight was still shouting. "Heaven Erosion Palace Leader?" He seemed to be trying to force the mysterious being show himself.

"Bi Fa Knight, none of them is here," Luo Feng said with a smile, stepping on the golden waves. "I'm the only one here."

"Humph! Only you?" The silver wolf grinned.

The other 15 knights assembled all shook their heads. They had all heard the shrill scream of a strange beast, and it clearly came from a top-tier universe overlord who could fight in the shape of a beast.

"Which universe overlord is it? Show yourself!" the silver wolf shouted again.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

The golden waves disappeared.

Luo Feng broke into laughter. "Bi Fa Knight, I've already told you. Only me."

"You dare to do something shameless like this even after gaining your reputation!" said Bi Fa Knight. "Such a deceitful human."

"Bi Fa Knight, do you want to die?" Luo Feng shouted.

Sou!

He dashed at Bi Fa Knight like a beam of silver light, and Bi Fa Knight quickly sped up and flew away. He knew that he needed to stay away from that human Luo Feng. Otherwise, he would be trapped in the domain if Luo Feng let out that domain type true treasure. He was as powerful as Para-chopper Knight.

"Go! Go!"

Other universe knights followed Bi Fa Knight and flew away.

Luo Feng stopped and looked at the universe knights of the other races running away in fright, and he chuckled. "I wanted to have an actual conversation with you guys. Since you're not interested, I have to leave now."

Sou!

He flew away and stopped chasing those knights.

"Humph!" Bi Fa Knight growled. "He dared to be so rampant and arrogant. He's nothing if he doesn't have that top-tier universe overlord with him! And he would've been ripped into pieces if he acted alone."

******

It was shocking that 13 universe knights of other races had been killed by Luo Feng. After all, under normal circumstances, only one or two universe knights would be killed if a single ordinary

true treasure was born. And only senior true treasures or even top-tier true treasures could lead to such a massive quantity of deaths.

Inside the towering palace of the Thorn Ring Alliance, Ji Qi Knight stood at the bottom of the palace with veneration. He was one of the universe knights who had been killed.

"Universe master."

"Ji Qi," said an indifferent voice. "You said that 13 universe knights were killed?"

"Yes," answered Ji Qi Knight. "Among the 13 universe knights who got killed, there was a being from our alliance, the Bug race alliance, the Northern Territory Alliance, the Demon Alliance, and the Nine Territories Alliance. And one of them was a universe overlord from the Bug race Alliance. I am the only one who has a clone technique, which is why I reported what I happened instantly. As for other alliances, they may not have gotten the news yet."

"Who did it?" the indifferent voice asked. "Star Prison Devil Master? Heaven Erosion Palace Leader? World Tree?"

"It's a black, strange beast, and he's terrifically powerful," answered Ji Qi Knight. "He must be a great being following the path of gold beast god. Besides, that strange beast is a high achiever on the path of gold beast god, and his power is close to that of a beast god. I was killed instantly."

"Beast god path? Is it Star Prison Devil Master? But he doesn't follow the path of gold beast god." The voice sounded confused.

"I'm certain that it was a black, strange beast," Ji Qi Knight continued. "His attacking technique is mysterious and far superior to mine."

"You think that black, strange beast could really kill Para-chopper Knight?"

"Yes, he can." Ji Qi Knight nodded. "I won't have been that

helpless even if Para-chopper tried to kill me himself! However, I wasn't even able to defend myself against that black, strange beast. I was killed after only one attack. I felt that the strange beast didn't even utilize all his power. He could surely kill Para-chopper Knight if he wants."

"Weird. When did the human race have a strange-beast knight?" The voice sounded baffled.

A being walked down. It was a female universe master wearing purple armor with hundreds of horns on her head. She looked seductive yet apathetic, which intimidated Ji Qi Knight. It was Piercing Heart Master from the Thorn Ring Alliance, who was in charge of many issues within the Thorn Ring Alliance. Her level of authority within the Thorn Ring Alliance was equivalent to Primal Chaos City Leader of the Hong Alliance.

"Strange," Piercing Heart Master whispered. "Is it Luo Feng who's on the path of gold beast god? That doesn't make sense either, as Luo Feng's still weak. Even if he becomes a universe knight, he still has low law comprehension, and he should be at the fourth or fifth level of the beast god path! He can't even create the ultimate techniques of universe overlords with such low law comprehension."

Ji Qi Knight nodded. "It's definitely not Luo Feng! Whether he has become a universe knight or not, he doesn't have such law comprehension."

"That's right. There's no news from Redbud Island telling us that he received a beast god inheritance." Piercing Heart Master frowned. "Could it be that Primal Chaos City Leader arranged a supreme being to protect his disciple?"

"There are hidden supreme beings within the human race?" Ji Qi Knight murmured.

Piercing Heart Master glanced at him. "No. There are only three top-tier universe overlords within the human race, but there are

more in the Hong Alliance."

Ji Qi Knight now understood. Though the Hong Alliance was an alliance centered around the human race, many great beings from other races were also members.

Ji Qi Knight couldn't help asking, "Universe master, are you going to deal with them? A top-tier universe overlord used such a demeaning move to trap us. Top-tier universe overlords are almost as powerful as universe masters, and he was basically slaughtering us."

"How?" Piercing Heart Master chuckled. "You claim it was he who slaughtered you? On the contrary, you encircled him because of greed and were slaughtered as a result. If a universe master or a top-tier universe overlord goes to the original stars and slaughters groups of great beings deliberately, it would lead to public outrage. However, nobody can say anything if you provoke them in the first place.

******

The news of the slaughter spread like wildfire, but none of the powers treated it seriously. To them, it was just a group of knights who had foolishly gotten themselves killed because of their greed.

Besides, no other powers knew who this top-tier universe overlord was, aside from the Thorn Ring Alliance. After all... The task of reviving senior universe masters would be distributed to a universe master.

******

Inside the Hong Alliance Palace.

Six palace leaders sat on the thrones, talking and laughing.

"Interesting..."

"Interesting, indeed. They wanted to kill Luo Feng, yet they all got killed."

"Primal Chaos City Leader, you must have arranged this. Without your arrangement, what top-tier universe overlord would be willing to stay in Luo Feng's world ring? Tell us, which universe overlord Is it? We haven't figured that out yet."

Primal Chaos City Leader was smiling, but he was also baffled. He didn't know either!

Has Luo Feng become friends with a top-tier universe overlord...? Primal Chaos City Leader wondered.

Chapter 1079: Reputation Gained

In the sky of another original star floated churning golden rivers, and nine strange beasts were swimming and roaring in the water. Three universe knights from the Northern Territory Alliance transmitted their voices using their godly power.

"It's a domain type true treasure!"

"Such strong resistance! I can't imagine that Luo Feng would have such a true treasure! No wonder he's a super-talent from a pinnacle race; he has a domain type true treasure even if he's this weak."

"It seems that we won't be able to kill that human Luo Feng this time. Let's go."

"Let's go."

The three universe knights tried to break the resistance from the water and fly out, but they could only fly slowly. All of them started to curse Luo Feng, as he was only undying. He was powerful enough to kill Bark Mirror Emperor, but they all thought he was only as powerful as a secondary universe knight. However, he had a domain type true treasure! And together with the soul type true treasure that was confirmed, he had much better true treasures than many universe overlords.

"He wouldn't have gotten away if it weren't for his domain type true treasure."

"Lucky him."

Suddenly, a blurry, black beast showed up in the churning golden water, and the fierceness in his dark, golden eyes immediately terrified the nearest universe knight. He transmitted his voice hurriedly, "Careful!"

Hou!

The black, strange beast hit the universe knight's chest like a beam of golden light, followed by an ancient, low growl.

Hong! Long!

The top-tier treasure armor on that universe knight was instantly shattered, and his godly body was annihilated. The black, strange beast started to charge the second universe knight. He barreled over him like a steamroller.

"It's a trap! A trap!" The only universe knight who still survived opened his eyes wide and started to roar with his godly power. "That human Luo Feng is bait! He's bait!"

Hua!

The blade slashed him across the back. The third universe knight attempted to resist the strange beast and felt his godly body quiver. After which, he felt nothing.

"It's too late for you to realize your mistake," said a voice.

The silver-armored, silver-winged form of Luo Feng stepped forward, holding Cutting Pearl Sword. He took a glance at the true treasure shatters, weapons, and world rings, and he seized all of them. He put his Cutting Pearl Sword back into his scabbard, and the Golden Horned Beast went back to his world ring.

"They don't have the most updated news," Luo Feng whispered. "Other powers in the universe don't have the virtual universe for real-time information sharing. Especially powers like the Northern Territory Alliance and the Nine Territories Alliance that have many races... Especially that Northern Territory Alliance... It has so many races. A third of the universe knights I killed came from it."

Luo Feng had only realized how many members were there in the Northern Territory Alliance after adventuring the original stars. More than 1,000 candidates came from the Hong Alliance on Redbud Island, but there were hundreds of thousands of them who

were from Northern Territory Alliance!

"Some universe knights already know they need to avoid me. But some haven't heard the news."

Luo Feng took back the golden waves and flew into the distance like a beam of silver light. Nothing was left in the sky where Luo Feng had fought the universe knights. He took everything.

******

In the open-air bar of the Hong Alliance.

Luo Feng came here two or three times a week by using Remote Ocean body to connect to the virtual universe. He had been waiting for news of Tian Yang Knight. However, those 10,081 original stars were too large, and Tian Yang Knight was a universe overlord who always acted alone. He might hide somewhere for hundreds or even thousands of years. It would take time—and luck—to find him.

"Luo Feng."

"Blade River."

Many universe knights greeted him warmly, and even universe overlords who rarely showed up were polite to Luo Feng. After all, he had a terrific record during his year spent on the Original Star, and the great beings in Hong Alliance all knew about it.

Quite a few universe knights and universe overlords had died because of him. Although they all believed that it was actually a top-tier universe overlord who had conducted the killings, it still showed Luo Feng's status; a top-tier universe overlord was willing to stay in Luo Feng's world ring! It would be a pleasure to all the great beings to be friends of a top-tier universe overlord.

Even universe masters valued top-tier universe overlords because they were almost as powerful as universe masters and could be resurrected. As for universe masters, they would stay dead forever if they fell! That made top-tier universe masters special.

"Luo Feng," said a familiar voice.

Luo Feng turned his head and saw two great beings sitting in the corner. There were no other great beings beside them.

"Gui Yi Knight? Undying Knight?" Luo Feng was startled. He now understood why there were no other great beings around them, as they each had an extraordinary status. Gui Yi Knight was a disciple highly valued by Primal Chaos City Leader, and Undying Knight was a disciple of Gigantic Axe Founder.

Luo Feng walked toward them, grinning. Gui Yi Knight had a bald head and wore a fiery cape and was barefoot. It made one feel tranquil just to look at him, but Luo Feng, who had been through practice for 180 million years, had already significantly improved his willpower and could rival some universe masters. He wasn't affected by it at all.

Undying Knight had met Luo Feng only once before, and it had been through the virtual universe. Undying Knight wore peculiar armor with tens of thousands of vines on it, and his face was covered by some of the vines. There was wickedness in his green eyes. Luo Feng had been defeated the first time they because he was still weak.

Both Undying Knight and Gui Yi Knight were universe overlords. Previously, Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor had thought of them as untouchable, but Luo Feng could now see their power clearly. Gui Yi Knight was an ordinary universe overlord with greater true treasures, and he was proficient in illusion and close combat. As for Undying Knight, he had a great reputation. His fighting power was also at the level of an ordinary universe overlord, but he had incredible surviving skills; no one had managed to kill him yet, which was why he had the title of "Undying."

"Brother," Luo Feng walked toward him and smiled. "Undying Knight."

Gui Yi Knight smiled. "Sit."

"You've grown so quickly," Undying Knight said. He had a squeaky and bizarre voice, but Luo Feng was prepared for it, as he had spoken with him before. "You were still weak when I first met you and far from becoming undying. A single look from me could affect you. However, you are already able to shake that off. You're indeed exceptional. I heard that dozens of universe knights were killed because of you. Incredible."

"Luo Feng," said Gui Yi Knight, "both Undying Knight and I are wondering how many universe knights and universe overlords died because of your friend."

"Not that many." Luo Feng smiled. "82 universe knights and five universe overlords."

Both Gui Yi Knight and Undying Knight looked stunned, as they were just as powerful as the universe overlords who had been killed. Of course, they had solid backgrounds and better true treasures, which gave them better surviving skills. Regardless, they still found it unbelievable.

"At the start, those universe knights from other races tried to gang up on me because of their greed," said Luo Feng, "but they were the ones who got killed in the end. In the first 15 days, many others got killed, too. However, as more and more learn about it, and have started to avoid me. It's been three months, and I've only met one unlucky guy."

The news was spreading more and more quickly, becoming increasingly widespread. Some universe knights of great fame were falling, which bolstered Luo Feng's reputation. Even some universe overlords of other races would now avoid Luo Feng.

"Who's your friend?" Gui Yi Knight asked with a smile. "Can you tell us?"

Luo Feng smiled. "He's Luo Feng."

"Stop joking around." Gui Yi Knight smiled widely. "If you can't

tell us, just don't."

Luo Feng was secretly amazing. It seemed nobody believed that it was him who had done all the killings! After all, in the eyes of those great beings, even if he became a universe knight and could complete law comprehension quickly, it would still normally take someone hundreds of millions of years to advance from the fourth-level beast god inheritance to the seven-level. It had only been 20,000 years. He should have been at a low level in techniques—at least, from those great beings' perspective. He had a powerful godly body, but he was far inferior to top-tier universe overlords like World Tree, Purple Rain Knight, and Heavenly Erosion Palace Leader.

"If you really want to know his name... he is Golden Mountain Knight," answered Luo Feng.

"Golden Mountain Knight?" said Gui Yi Knight.

Gui Yi Knight and Undying Knight exchanged eye contact. Both were clearly confused. They hadn't heard of that name.

"Are you joking?" Undying Knight asked.

"Of course not. You'll know soon." Luo Feng smiled.

"Is he from another race?" Gui Yi Knight asked.

Luo Feng nodded. "Kind of."

At the same time, Luo Feng noticed a being who kept looking at him. It was Kuang Zhou Knight.

"Brother, Undying Knight, I'm going to meet my friend." Luo Feng stood up and walked towards Kuang Zhou Knight.

When they met, Kuang Zhou Knight immediately isolated them from the surroundings and said, "Blade River, I've found Tian Yang Knight."

Tian Yang Knight...

Luo Feng was thrilled. His eyes gleamed.

Chapter 1080: The Runaway Tian Yang Knight

Luo Feng tried his best to control his emotions as he asked immediately, "Where?"

Kuang Zhou Knight told him every single detail he knew, including which original star Tian Yang Knight was on and its coordinates.

"Thank you," Luo Feng said. He was exceedingly grateful.

"A small matter," Kuang Zhou Knight said, then asked out of curiosity, "Why are you so concerned about Tian Yang Knight? Is there bad blood between you two? He is a universe overlord..."

"A favor for a friend," Luo Feng replied with a single sentence.

"Oh," Kuang Zhou Knight said and nodded, content with this reason.

******

In the sky of the Original Star, Luo Feng, who had transformed into a beam of light, flew forward. Without warning, he drew an arc with his wings in the air and changed his course to another direction.

I have waited for so many years, he thought. I sought the fourth black metal board to increase my power just for this very day!

With his silver armor and wings, Luo Feng waited with eyes filled with anticipation. The strong beckoning of the Shi Wu Wings was unforgettable. He believed that once Shi Wu Wings and Black Wings were combined, there would be qualitative changes.

Everyone knew that the strength of a true treasure was what determined the ease of finding it. In the course of just under a year, Luo Feng had killed 82 senior universe knights and five universe overlords. However, from the 82 senior universe knights, he only

managed to obtain a total of six ordinary true treasures; from the five universe overlords, he only managed to obtain 18 ordinary true treasures and four senior true treasures (ordinary true treasure series could be considered equivalent to senior true treasures). Even if he were to add in the several treasures in their world rings, the total value, upon calculation, would only be 60 to 70 true treasure points.

This was still insufficient to exchange for a top-tier true treasure! And universe masters were all eyeing the top-tier true treasures greedily.

Under normal circumstances, only universe masters would be armed with top-tier true treasure weapons! As for pinnacle true treasures like Force Armor, these might as well be once-in-a-lifetime opportunities, where even someone like True Yan Emperor would have difficulty obtaining them.

I have killed five universe overlords, although they were killed because they attacked me out of greed. But now that the news is widespread, it will be impossible to shun universe overlords, who are always well-informed. I am considered quite wealthy among all the universe overlords, but a top-tier true treasure... I am still a little far from it. Once I have the other pair of wings, however... And once they are combined...

Luo Feng's anticipation surged. A single acquisition would far surpass close to a year's worth of killing.

Sou!

Luo Feng sped toward the path of a whirlpool leading to Original Star Number 02881.

******

In Original Star Number 02881.

"I think a universe knight from the Hong Alliance has just discovered my location," said a voice.

A bald man with eight arms—a great being from the automaton clan—suddenly emerged from nestled within the bed of weeds. Tian Yang Knight's godly body was armed with unique technological weapons. For instance, his head was able to turn 360 degrees, providing a high degree of alertness.

"For now, my whereabouts cannot be divulged," he said. "Just in case, I had better leave here as soon as possible."

Tian Yang Knight's eyes revealed a cold glimmer, and with a great shrug of his black wings, he sped up and soared into the sky.

******

As darkness fell, Golden Horned Beast hovered high in the night sky, surveying the surroundings.

"This is it. Based on the tip-off Kuang Zhou Knight provided, it should be this area."

Golden Horned Luo Feng scanned the land below. His original earthling body had become so famous that even universe overlords would make a detour if they ran into him, so in order to ensure that Tian Yang Knight would not catch wind of his arrival and have the chance to escape, Luo Feng had rushed over in his Golden Horned Beast body. Also, his Golden Horned Beast body did not make use of Shi Wu Wings. This way... Tian Yang Knight would have no means of knowing that he had arrived.

"Not here...! He's not here?"

Golden Horned Luo Feng was slightly confused. He had carefully perused the deserted plains filled with weeds. The weeds were very tall. If he did not look carefully, he might not be able to find a great being hiding there.

Hong! Long!

A vast sea of golden waves spread out in an instant, enveloping everything it touched, permeating every inch of the bed of weeds. Within a fleeting moment, the golden waves had engulfed

everything in the vast domain within a radius of 19 million miles. Within the area demarcated by the domain type true treasure, not a single great being would be capable of escaping.

"No one?" Golden Horned Luo Feng found it increasingly suspicious. "Rushing over here took me some time, but it was, at most, just over two days. These universe knights who hide in the Original Stars, keeping watch for the right opportunities, normally stay for at least half a year to a year. How can they all be gone?"

Golden Horned Luo Feng looked around the vastness between heaven and earth. There was no way he could determine where Tian Yang Knight was. However, the Shi Wu Wings, which were hidden in his world ring seemed to be provoked and ready to make their move. Obviously, they must have sensed the location of their counterpart... the Black Wings!

"Heck!" Golden Horned Luo Feng growled softly.

The vast sea of golden waves disappeared in an instant. At the same time, the true treasure Shi Wu Wings came out of the world ring and attached to the scale armor on his wings. Beast God Armor also accommodated Shi Wu Wings to allow the assimilation of both. Beast God Armor may have been a set, but its original functionality did not involve wings.

With the assimilation of the scale armor true treasure into scale armor wings, however, the defense level achieved was equally impressive. When it came to speed of flight, the scale armor wings still paled in comparison to Shi Wu Wings. Now that the two were combined, the effect achieved was naturally second to none.

Weng! Weng! Weng!

A strong summon was transmitted from a certain direction, and his Shi Wu Wings shook as though ready to take flight.

"Over there!"

Golden Horned Luo Feng looked far to his left. This strong

summoning sensation felt the same as it had back then. It was obviously coming from the Black Wings that belonged to Tian Yang Knight.

"This time, I am not letting you escape."

Golden Horned Luo Feng quickly spread his wings as his speed skyrocketed. He accelerated without stopping and continued in this manner till he reached a speed near to light speed. Then he flew off in a linear direction.

******

In a swamp a few billions of miles away from Luo Feng, Tian Yang Knight had become a turbid color as he lay in the water, creating the illusion that he was drowning. Without using godly power or domain to search, just by using the naked eye alone, one would not be able to discover any trace of him.

Weng! Weng! Weng!

Tian Yang Knight's glowing wings shook, unable to calm down.

"Huh?"

Hua!

A golden-armored head emerged from the swamp, a pair of eyes stared coldly into the distance.

"That's it..." he whispered. "It's that Golden Horned Beast. The moment you stepped on this original star, I could sense you. But I did not expect you to approach me here."

Tian Yang Knight's eyes were filled with coldness. Of course, he could not forget that battle that had occurred almost 20,000 years ago. The Golden Horned Beast had a true treasure pair of wings that was extremely important to him. At that time, the Golden Horned Beast was clearly much weaker than him in terms of power, but it had a powerful true treasure armor and a massive godly body, which placed Tian Yang Knight at a disadvantage.

"Annoying fellow. Is he here to annoy me again?" Tian Yang Knight gritted his teeth. "Obviously his power does not match up to mine. Yet he has a senior true treasure armor and a huge godly body. Fighting against him... Even when my godly body has been totally used up, he will not have consumed much of his. Annoying. If you did not have such a big godly body, I would definitely fight you."

Again, Tian Yang Knight clenched his teeth in anger.

Hong!

He immediately transformed into light and flew off in another direction.

******

Golden Horned Beast could vaguely sense the location where the sound transmission had come from, but as he was approaching it, the position started to move. It was continuously on the move.

"Is he escaping?" Luo Feng was shocked. "Why is he escaping?"

In their previous battle, Tian Yang Knight initially had the upper hand. Luo Feng managed to claim the final victory thanks to his massive godly body, which provided him with a slight advantage. Overall, however, Tian Yang Knight was still the one in control of the situation. It did not make sense to Luo Feng that he was running just because he sensed that Luo Feng was near.

"If you are going to flee, then I'm going to give chase. I shall see how long you can remain on the run."

Luo Feng continued to give chase at top speed.

******

The bald great being with eight arms of the automaton clan and the Golden Horned Beast, one after the other, flew across the Original Star several billion miles apart. Yet no matter how fast or how far Tian Yang Knight flew, Golden Horned Beast was able to

sense his location with such accuracy that there was no way he could escape.

"Damn!" growled Tian Yang Knight. "Why is he so persistent? Does he think that by chasing me, he will be able to get me to fight against him? Apart from universe masters, even top-tiered universe overlords may not be able to kill me. Damn—if not for the current situation, I would definitely teach you a good lesson."

Tian Yang Knight was fuming from being hunted down, but he forced himself to hold back the rage that was consuming him from within.

"I shall move on to another original star," Tian Yang Knight decided.

He saw a faraway space whirlpool and made his way over. He went through the space whirlpool and arrived at another original star.

******

Almost half an hour passed, and Golden Horned Beast made his way to the whirlpool where Tian Yang Knight had disappeared.

"According to what I have sensed, he disappeared here." Golden Horned Beast saw the space whirlpool and analyzed the situation. "Even if he had self-destructed, that pair of wings was indestructible, so I should still be able to sense it if it was around. Obviously, he has entered another original star."

Hong!

Golden Horned Beast went through the space whirlpool and arrived at another original star.

******

Upon entering the other original star, Tian Yang Knight continued flying for another six million miles or so before he stopped to hide.

"That annoying Golden Horned Beast knows he can't catch up with me. He can't do anything to me at all. Most likely, he will not give up the chase."

A short while later, the familiar, strong summoning feeling was transmitted to him again. The Black Wings on his back shook again.

"Damn!" Tian Yang Knight's immense anger was incomparable. "Golden Horned Beast!" he shouted with unbridled hatred.

If that was not a crucial moment; he could still go all-out to escape from Luo Feng or even summon other great beings from the automaton clan to take down this Golden Horned Beast.

"Good, good, good," he muttered. "I shall wait for you. I'll soon show you... the difference between you and I."

Tian Yang Knight's anger had reached its limit as he stood in the heartland of the forest, waiting in silence.

******

Luo Feng was baffled.

"What? He's not escaping anymore? How strange. Not my business, I guess. Anyway, it's good for me that he is no longer on the run."

Luo Feng was brimming with confidence. Unless a universe master made a personal appearance, there was no one Luo Feng feared.

Hong!

Golden Horned Beast flew quickly in the same direction. A short while later, he made it to the sky above the forest where he immediately swooped down to the spot where he could clearly sense the other pair of wings.

The bald being of the automaton race stood atop the canopy of a tree. His Black Wings were in a slight fanning motion as he stared

coldly at Luo Feng.

"Annoying Golden Horned Beast!" he growled.

"Tian Yang Knight," Golden Horned Beast said, approaching at top speed and not slowing down for an instant.

"Damn it!" Tian Yang Knight let out a furious roar.

All the suppressed anger that had accumulated after being chased after for such a long period erupted.

Hong! Long! Long!

Everything between heaven and earth suddenly fell into a vast blackness. Golden Horned Beast, who was initially flying at an extremely fast rate of speed, suddenly felt as though it had fallen into a muddy swamp. It immediately reduced his speed.

Golden Horned Luo Feng was taken aback.

"It's a domain type true treasure!"

Tian Yang Knight... Since when did he possess a domain type true treasure?

Chapter 1081: Why is it Dark?

On Original Star Number 02881, a being covered with black mist showed up in the sky when the Golden Horned Beast chased Tian Yang Knight into the space whirlpool.

"I saw it correctly. Tian Yang Knight flew into this space whirlpool."

The being in the black mist nodded. Tian Yang Knight resorted to flying speedily in the sky because of the Golden Horned Beast, and the light coming from Tian Yang Knight was quite eye-catching. This universe knight of another race had been attracted by it. He immediately sent the information to Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress using the body he had on the outside.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was a supreme being in the Thorn Ring Alliance, and he was one of the top-tier universe overlords. He was a supreme being who could rival the most powerful World Tree. The reason why he was called the lord of a fortress was that he had a senior flying-palace type true treasure which could protect him from universe masters. Sky Wolf Palace was only a senior flying-palace type true treasure, and it was only slightly better than the fortress.

"An ordinary true treasure? Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was indeed generous; he gave me such an incredible valuable just for me to track someone down."

The being in the black mist started to laugh darkly, then flew into the space whirlpool.

"Huh?"

The being from black mist showed up in the sky after going through the space whirlpool and saw a black light in the distance. Though he was tens of millions of miles from it, the domain was so large that he could see clearly what was going on even from afar.

This startled him.

"The power is so extraordinary. It must be a domain type true treasure!"

The being from the black mist stayed away from the domain.

Hong! Long! Long!

Suddenly, churning golden rivers collided with the black light. It was as if there were two oceans crashing against each other. The black light kept backing down, as the golden river was just as powerful as it. Two domains dashed against each other...

"Another domain type true treasure?" The being from the black mist was shocked. "Only a few universe overlords have domain type true treasures! And I see two of them who have it! It seems there are two universe overlords fighting! Is one of them Tian Yang Knight?"

******

The Golden Horned Beast and Tian Yang Knight gazed at each other in the vast forest 60 million miles away from the space whirlpool. Endless black light and golden rivers covered the forest, and the branches, flowers, and grass were destroyed under the shock waves.

"Humph!" Tian Yang Knight grew furious and shouted, "Golden Horned Beast, do you have to fight me?"

"Tian Yang Knight, you should know that you're not escaping this fight," the Golden Horned Beast said, glaring at him from afar.

"Escape? What makes you think I am escaping? Do you really think your power can rival mine? Humph! I didn't want to fight you in the first place, but I'm not afraid of you. I just didn't want to, which is why I used my domain type true treasure to intimidate you. But I didn't expect you to have a domain type true treasure also." Tian Yang Knight sneered. "It seems you got lucky in the past 20,000 years."

The Golden Horned Beast watched from a distance.

Tian Yang Knight added indifferently, "It seems that I have to fight you."

"Yes," the Golden Horned Beast said in a low voice.

"Then fight me. Let's finish this as soon as possible."

Tian Yang Knight was enraged. He didn't think that the Golden Horned Beast could rival him! He had fought a top-tier universe overlord before! He didn't need to be afraid of anyone!

"Come—"

The Golden Horned Beast growled. His armor was dark, and the longest horn, surrounded by five other horns, was sharp as a blade.

Heng! Heng!

There was a black shuttle in each of Tian Yang Knight's hands, and he gazed at the Golden Horned Beast coldly.

Hong!

Hong!

They acted at the same time, dashing at each other, and so did the churning domains. Rolling rocks were formed in front of the black light while nine strange beasts showed up in front of the golden river. They both tried to suppress one another's oppositions.

"Damn Golden Horned Beast!" Tian Yang Knight transmitted the voice to Luo Feng. "Don't you understand that you can't overpower me? And neither can I, you fool!"

The eight black shuttles became mesmerizing lights. But the sharp and pervading golden light dissipated all eight shuttles.

Peng!

The longest horn on the Golden Horned Beast hit Tian Yang Knight.

Hong! Long! Long!

Tian Yang Knight was stupefied. This was the most terrific attack he had ever endured. Even the attack from the sidekick of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress hadn't been as powerful as this one.

Little did he know that although the Golden Horned Beast's godly body was almost as powerful as the original earthling body of Luo Feng, one of them was 10,081 times, and the other was 9,800 times. And their godly power was almost equally delicate! And both of the attacking techniques they used were the ultimate techniques of universe masters, "Golden Light." The only difference was that the original earthling body used the senior true treasure weapon Pearl Cutting Blade!

The Golden Horned Beast, on the other hand, used the top-tier true treasure armor Beast God Armor, which was as worthy as a pinnacle true treasure, which made it much stronger!

Tian Yang Knight bounced back, shocked to discover that 22 percent of his godly body was gone!

"How? How is it possible?" Tian Yang Knight found it impossible to believe.

******

Luo Feng was surprised as well.

He has a senior true treasure armor!

Tian Yang Knight had a moderately small godly body, about 24 feet tall. If he were wearing an ordinary true treasure armor, the Beast God would have killed Tian Yang Knight. Luo Feng could easily feel the resistance from the true treasure armor.

If it was Para-chopper Knight, thought Luo Feng, even if he had a senior true treasure armor, he would have been killed by the Golden Horned Beast, as his godly body was so small.

******

"A senior true treasure armor?" the Golden Horned Beast growled. "Did you prepare it for the original stars?"

Tian Yang Knight was both angry and shocked. He glared at the Golden Horned Beast in front of him. Indeed, the information shared in the universe said that he had an ordinary true treasure armor, but that was outdated. He had exchanged something for a senior true treasure in his race for the opening of the Original Star.

Last time, the Golden Horned Beast couldn't feel the difference between an ordinary true treasure armor and a senior true treasure armor, as he had been weaker last time. But this time... the Golden Horned Beast could clearly feel it.

"How?" Tian Yang Knight demanded, glaring at the Golden Horned Beast. "How is it possible? You were much weaker than me before!"

"Stop asking. Die!" And the Golden Horned Beast charged again.

"Want to kill me?" Tian Yang Knight roared. "Don't count on it!"

Run!

Tian Yang Knight controlled the black light to resist the Golden Horned Beast while he shook his wing and tried to flee. The Golden Horned Beast slashed the black light and flew after him.

Hou!

Intricate golden engravings started to flow on the Golden Horned Beast's body, and he used his own body as a weapon, emanating with golden light. Immediately, his speed surged and dashed at Tian Yang Knight.

"What?" Tian Yang Knight was shocked. He changed his direction, as maneuverability was what he was best at it.

"I'm good at that, too," said the Golden Horned Beast as he raced toward him

They kept changing directions, redirecting their course dozens of

times in less than a single second. Golden Horned Beast body quickly found out that his ability to change directions was inferior to Tian Yang Knight.

That's right, thought Luo Feng. His Black Wings and my Shi Wu Wings have the same source. I've been practicing on the path of engraving pictures for 180 million years. Though I cracked the way to manifest Nine Tiger River immediately after I came out, I still couldn't find out the way to perform the third form of the Shi Wu Wings, as that's much more complicated.

Luo Feng understood it as it was likely that the Black Wing also had a third form that his opponent was using. No wonder he couldn't catch Tian Yang Knight.

******

"You can't catch me. Give up!" Tian Yang Knight transmitted his voice.

He was, however, anxious. The Golden Horned Beast sped up like a beam of golden light, which made him incredibly fast. He had already asked for help from his race, but it would take time for great beings of the automaton race to arrive. Besides, he had fought the Golden Horned Beast before, and he knew that he definitely had the power of a top-tier universe overlord. That meant even if a universe master of automaton race arrived, his control over space and time wouldn't be able to deal with such a great being... The universe master had to fight the Golden Horned Beast.

"Give up?" asked Tian Yang Knight.

The Golden Horned Beat growled, "I didn't want to use my supreme move in the first place, but you're really good at running!"

"Supreme move?"

Tian Yang Knight became terrified. That terrific golden light was already unbelievably powerful, yet it wasn't his supreme move? He

couldn't imagine how the Golden Horned Beast, who had been significantly weaker than him before, could be so powerful now.

Hong! Long! Long!

The Golden Horned Beast's eyes looked tranquil, and burning godly power burst out. He was more than 55,000 miles long, and the fight hadn't even consumed 1/60,000,000th of his godly power. However, after using the move "I Am the Universe," the godly power flooded out. Everything was enveloped!

******

The being shrouded in black mist 60 million miles away, who had been following them, suddenly felt everything turning dark. Endless, chaos winds started to blow.

The being in the black mist looked around, dazed. "What's going on? Why is it dark?"

Chapter 1082: The Wings Were a True Treasure

The miniature universe was vast and mighty, too, with a diameter of 19 million miles. Chaotic airflow spread and filled the entire miniature universe. It was a picture of chaos.

Golden Horned Beast was stationed in the middle of the miniature universe, and its godly body supplied the energy required by the miniature universe to revolve.

Something strange is going on, thought Luo Feng. There is another presence here. A knight of another other race... it's Evil Fog Knight from the Thorn Ring Alliance. He is extremely skilled in illusions. He seems to be still looking around at his surroundings, unaware of the situation he is in.

The moment Golden Horned Beast successfully brought out the miniature universe, it sensed that there was an additional knight of another race present within the boundaries of the miniature universe. Unquestionably, this unlucky fellow who was about to become a victim.

Luo Feng had shrunk the miniature universe on purpose. The miniature universe was able to reach a diameter as big as 600 million miles but could also shrink to a diameter as small as six million miles! If its diameter shrank, its universe membrane would gradually thicken; if its diameter expanded, the membrane would gradually thin down. This was the fundamental theory of why Luo Feng maintained the same amount of godly power supply to the miniature universe. If he increased the amount of godly power supply, the universe membrane would naturally become thicker, and its power would grow stronger.

With a smaller diameter of merely 19 million miles, a being of another race could still enter.

"Seems to me he must have seen it all," Luo Feng said to himself.

Indeed, Evil Fog Knight had been observing for a long time from a long distance away. He had witnessed the fight between Golden Horned Beast and Tian Yang Knight at the border of their respective domain type true treasures, and he clearly saw that it was the Golden Horned Beast who was hunting down Tian Yang Knight by watching the two enter the space whirlpool one after the other. Based on this information, Luo Feng easily came up with some quick inferences.

You can consider yourself to be unlucky.

Luo Feng's thought flashed through his mind in a split second—maybe not even 1/10,000th of a second—and the next moment, Golden Horned Beast rushed at Tian Yang Knight.

"This... What place is this?" said Tian Yang Knight. He looked at his surroundings with fear. There was an endless chaotic airflow all around him. "Is it Universe Ocean? No, I was on the Original Star. How would I suddenly fall into this place? Could this be a domain type true treasure? He already owns a domain type true treasure, so how could he be using another domain type true treasure?"

Hong!

Waves of the golden river came surging from afar. From the front of the golden river, a stampede of nine great beasts was seen rushing to the fore, and behind them was the Golden Horned Beast.

"Have to block it!" said Tian Yang Knight.

His eyes were filled with crazed panic. He wanted to block the vast darkness, but it useless. It was like a giant truck rolling over a small car. With the universe laws empowering the entire miniature universe, the power of the golden river soared by one level in an instant. And Tian Yang Knight's domain type true

treasure was, in turn, suppressed by the universe laws of the miniature universe. Thus, its power was lowered by one level.

This come-and-go cycle brought about a vast difference between the two domain type true treasures, which were actually not so different from each other at the start.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Like cracking icebergs, the vast blackness was easily shattered. It was unable to protect Tian Yang Knight at all.

"What?" Tian Yang Knight was shocked. "I must escape!"

Tian Yang Knight turned and attempted to make a speedy escape. However, the moment the mighty golden waves collided with the darkness, Tian Yang Knight was shrouded by the golden waves. After Nine Tiger River increased its power by one level, flying within its domain would be extremely difficult even for someone like Tian Yang Knight. At that moment, Golden Horned Beast managed to close the distance and appeared before Tian Yang Knight.

"Golden Horned Beast!" Tian Yang Knight roared with rage as he waved the light shuttles his eight arms were holding.

"It's useless," Golden Horned Beast growled.

Golden rays lit up once again. Under these sharp and unsympathetic golden rays, the eight black light shuttles that looked so beautiful were cast away like paper. Tian Yang Knight's godly body seemed so helpless in the face of the long, sharp horns of Golden Horned Beast.

Following the fearsome impact of the collision between both knight and beast, the entire space shook with tremors. With eyes still filled with unwillingness to resign to his fate, Tian Yang Knight's godly body was annihilated, and he wordlessly vanished into thin air.

Pity, Luo Feng reflected silently. The moment I use the ultimate

technique of a universe master, I will not be able to reduce his power accurately. If I could grasp a better control of accuracy, I might have been able to put Tian Yang Knight into a deep slumber.

The stronger the great being, the more difficult it was to put it into a deep slumber. Normally, when the godly bodies of undying emperors were consumed to slightly more than 10 percent remaining, they would need to go into a deep slumber. However, the willpower of universe overlords was incomparably strong; their godly powers were much purer, so even if they were left with only 5 percent or even 3 percent of their godly bodies, they might still be able to maintain a clear consciousness for a split second to self-destruct their remaining godly bodies... Most would avoid fighting a universe overlord until only 1 percent of its godly body was left before it could be put to a deep slumber.

But this was much too difficult in a battle of life and death. It was tough to use all the ultimate techniques to put up a good fight, yet without the confidence to fight an opponent till its godly body was left with exactly 1 percent—especially when the opponent was a great being with a horribly fearsome consciousness... A universe master, even when his godly body was down to 1 percent, was able to maintain a moment of consciousness. Such universe masters would rather self-destruct than risk subjecting themselves to a lifetime of slavery.

The more powerful a being was, the more difficult it would be to enslave it. The only way to have a strong slave was to enslave it during its weak periods. Then, when the being grew in power, they would naturally find themselves with stronger slaves.

Hong!

Under the impact of the collision, Tian Yang Knight's black armor, silver wings, weapons, world ring, and some other valuable items scattered in all directions...

All come here, commanded Luo Feng.

With a single thought, everything within the control of the miniature universe that had once belonged to the annihilated Tian Yang Knight was speedily manipulated and flew right up to Golden Horned Beast. Upon infusing his godly power... the items quickly started to recognize their new master, one after the other. This led Luo Feng to realize that Tian Yang Knight certainly did not have the talent of dividing bodies.

"Keep!" Luo Feng stored every item in his World Ring right away.

Then he turned and looked off into the distance. About six million miles away a black, misty figure stood surveying its surroundings with due diligence.

"Meet your doom," Luo Feng said under his breath.

Hong! Long! Long!

A great volume of chaotic airflow rolled over the black, misty figure in a frenzied manner. The airflow seemed to separate into two parts. One part revolved in a clockwise direction while the other revolved counterclockwise—just like a gigantic grinder. And right in the middle, was the black, misty figure.

"Universe grinder, roll and crush!" Luo Feng commanded in a cold demeanor.

The miniature universe was the most powerful talent technique, more powerful than Golden Light, which he had created by one whole level. It consisted of many different tactics. For example, there were normal ones like the "Suppression by Universe Laws" and "Rolling and Crushing by Universe Grinder." Plus, there were also ultimate tactics that were the most powerful ones, like "Explosion of Universe."

The ordinary tactics were not considered powerful. For instance, using the tactic Rolling and Crushing by Universe Grinder would not have been enough to kill Tian Yang Knight. However, to a senior universe knight who did not have a single ordinary true

treasure armor to speak of, using the Universe Grinder with a power level that was one notch higher than that of Nine Tiger River—let alone the power of a miniature universe—would be more than enough to grind him to death.

******

Evil Fog Knight was surveying his surroundings carefully when suddenly, he felt an upheaval between heaven and earth, and the two great airflows seemed to enshroud him. Like a grinder moving in opposite directions, the airflow closed in around him, rolling and crushing his body in a frenzied manner.

"Ah! Ah! Ah!" Evil Fog Knight screamed in pain. The rolling and crushing consumed his godly body quickly—from 90 percent to 70 percent and then to 50 percent... The loss was happening at an alarming rate.

"Let me go! I bear no enmity!" Evil Fog Knight was so fearful that he shouted repeatedly. "Let me go!"

But there was no stopping it in this vast, chaotic world. Evil Fog Knight was in despair, and could only bear hatred in his heart. He had not expected to meet his end by obeying Fan Nuo Fortress Master's command.

"Ah! Ah! Ah!" Evil Fog Knight roared. "Damn it!"

With only 30 percent of his godly body left, Evil Fog Knight roared his reluctance but decided to choose self-destruction.

Hong! Long! Long!

The impact spread in all directions. Evil Fog Knight was annihilated!

"Not even a single true treasure!" said Luo Feng. "Why even bother putting up a struggle?"

Hong! Long!

The miniature universe was put away and disappeared in the

blink of the eye. Peace returned between heaven and earth. Hovering in midair, only the Golden Horned Beast remained. All valuables left behind by Tian Yang Knight and Evil Fog Knight after they were annihilated had been claimed.

"I had not expected to lose almost 10 percent of my godly body in such a short fight," Luo Feng mused to himself.

Opening his miniature universe and charging at Tian Yang Knight had taken nearly three seconds. Killing Tian Yang Knight and taking away his treasures had not taken him more than two seconds. Using the Universe Grinder to roll and crush Evil Fog Knight, however, had taken close to three seconds. Collecting all the treasures also used up almost a second. All in all, it had taken close to nine seconds.

"Go!" Golden Horned Beast spread its wings, shot up into the sky at high speed, and departed.

******

Luo Feng spent almost a day's worth of traveling before he finally made it out the original star, and shortly after, he made it back to his god country.

In his god country, the vast place was expanding gradually and continuously. Similarly, the limitless Remote Ocean was also growing bigger every minute.

"In nearly 20,000 years, my Remote Ocean has grown quite a bit." Donning his suit of silver armor, Luo Feng looked down at everything with a smile. "True treasures!" He commanded with a wave.

The next moment, many true treasures started emerging in midair, one after the other. Many of these hanging in midair were loot he had gained from his victories on the original stars in the past year. The majority were merely ordinary true treasures, and the number of senior true treasures were extremely few. However,

killing Tian Yang Knight had been quite rewarding. Other than what he really sought—the pair of wings that was a true treasure—the others that he collected included an ordinary true treasure series (the eight shuttles), a senior true treasure armor, and an ordinary domain type true treasure. Tian Yang Knight certainly did live up to his identity as a knight of the automaton clan.

"This pair of wings is the most important true treasure I have gained," Luo Feng whispered as he held the pair of wings.

Originally, he had thought that the true treasure was a pair of black wings. However, following the death of Tian Yang Knight, the wings returned to their original color, which was silver—the exact same color as his Shi Wu Wings.

The true treasure pair of wings shook gently as Luo Feng held it, as though it was trying to break free from his grasp and fly away.

"Roar!" Golden Horned Beast was approaching from afar. At the same time, a beautiful pair of silver wings detached itself from him.

"Go."

Luo Feng let go of the wings.

Instantly, the true treasure pair of wings flew away and approached the Shi Wu Wings, which were also drawing close at high speed. The moment the two pairs of silver wings, equally beautiful, touched...

Ka! Ka! Ka!

The feathers on the wings, which were sharp as blades, started bouncing at high speed. The bottom sections of both pairs of wings sported silver rays of light that were flashing quickly. The two pairs of wings, both true treasures, were under a continuous integration process.

Qualitative changes started to emerge. A gargantuan burst of power was released and spread through the surroundings. The

burst of power given out at that moment was the real deal!

This combination was the moment when this mysterious true treasure made an appearance in its truest form.

"So strong... Such awesome power!" marveled Luo Feng, suspended in midair.

He felt dumbfounded by it, yet at the same time, he was increasingly anticipating the result. His emotions were running high.

Chapter 1083: Change in the Wing

The two true treasure wings started to merge with each other like two incredibly delicate instruments, and the engravings on the true treasures formed a larger and more mysterious engraving. The energy permeated... It felt like a long time to watch the scene, but it actually only took less than a minute.

Then everything went back to normal.

The giant Silver Wing was still open in the stillness, and it was mesmerizing. Unlike the other seemingly plain true treasures Luo Feng had, it was as if it were actively showcasing its beauty.

"Four wings?" Luo Feng looked at the Silver-Winged true treasure. The two sets of wings had connected to produce four wings. "Come, Shi Wu Wing, let me feel your power."

He still called it "Shi Wu," but the Silver Wing flew toward Luo Feng and merged with him. Luo Feng immediately opened the Silver Wing, which continued emanating endless power. The wing opened, resulting in changes in the space and time around it.

"Space and time?" said Luo Feng. "The engravings on the true treasure wing I got from Tian Yang Knight were of time law, and my original Shi Wu Wings had engravings of time law. Combined, they can affect the space and time around them."

Luo Feng felt the wings on his back trembling. He kept infusing the wings with his godly power so that he could carefully study the engraving on it. Though he had never studied time law before, he was still studying into the time-law engravings on the Wing. After only half an hour of studying, he grasped the elementary power of the new Wing.

Hu!

Hu!

All four wings on Luo Feng's back started to move swiftly.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Above the boundless Remote Ocean appeared tens of millions of images of Luo Feng.

"Hahaha... Incredible!" Luo Feng whispered. "This move can lead to disorder in space and time! I'll name the first form of my New Shi Wu Wings 'Disorder in Space and Time'!"

Before the merge, the second form of Shi Wu Wing could lead to space disturbance, and the second form of Light Wing could lead to time disturbance. As for the first form of the new Wings, "Disorder in Space and Time," it was a combination of space disturbance and time disturbance... It completely twisted the space and time, which made this move unpredictable and mysterious. And it was only the first form of the new Wings.

"There's a second form." Luo Feng went back to study.

******

After three days of study, Luo Feng gave up. After all, he didn't have a solid foundation in time law, which meant he wasn't able to derive the second form even if he could drive the first form with his accomplishments in engravings and familiarity with his Shi Wu Wings.

He speculated that the second form of the new Wings must be the combination of the third form of Shi Wu Wings and that of Light Wings.

"Also, I don't think the new Wing is complete." Luo Feng frowned "Though the engravings on the new Wings are extremely complicated, some parts are still missing."

Luo Feng had very broad horizons. After all, he had created ultimate techniques of universe masters, and he often studied the engravings of the miniature universe! Though he still hadn't completed that, he could tell that there were engravings missing in the new Wing.

"Does that mean there's a third wing?" Luo Feng was shocked.

That was right! These two wings were definitely only parts of the complete Wing, and based on his knowledge of engravings, there should be a third part!

"The power from the combination of the first two wings could rival that of a top-tier true treasure." Luo Feng was thrilled. "If I can acquire the third wing, the power will definitely surge!"

Don't think about it, he thought. Teacher Primal Chaos City Leader had the Shi Wu Wings for a long time, and even he didn't know that the original Shi Wu Wing was only part of a whole. I was just lucky enough to meet Tian Yang Knight and knew that two wings attracted each other.

Luo Feng knew that Primal Chaos City Leader couldn't bear any responsibility, as it was impossible to tell the missing part only based on the original Shi Wu Wings or the original Light Wings. Shi Wu Wings had pure space engravings while Light Wings had pure time engravings. Both sets of engravings were perfect, and hence it was impossible to tell what was missing.

However, after they were combined, a "pivot" part was missing between time and space! And the lack of that pivot rendered the wing less powerful than its ideal status.

******

Luo Feng wasn't even able the derive the third form of Shi Wu Wing, and he realized that it would take him a long time to understand the second form of his "New Shi Wu Wings."

"The wings are much stronger, regardless. As for the third wing, I'll have to see if I'm lucky enough to find it."

Luo Feng triggered his mind. The true treasures floating in the distance started to be automatically classified

"Remote Ocean body!"

A godly body 5,500 miles tall showed up beside Luo Feng.

"Take the senior true treasure armor! Domain type true treasure... And a senior true treasure blade."

Luo Feng immediately armed the Remote ocean body with the senior true treasure armor and the domain type true treasure from Tian Yang Knight. As for the senior true treasure blade, it came from one of the five universe overlords Luo Feng had killed.

Take some precious material, treasures, and some other objects, and go back to the earth, Luo Feng thought.

Sou!

Remote Ocean body shrunk to six feet tall, carrying black armor and a purple blade, exchanged eye contact with Luo Feng, and then teleported himself out of the god country.

"It's useless to leave all those true treasures in my god country," said Luo Feng. "Um... Teacher True Yan must be craving some true treasures. I'll choose a suitable one for him later."

Luo Feng smiled and put the Golden Horned Beast body and Mosha body away.

******

In the space outside Earth.

Remote Ocean body, dressed in black armor and carrying a purple blade, was standing in the atmosphere. His godly power started to envelop the earth. From now on, he would be tasked with guarding the Earth and the Luo Feng's family.

Luo Feng made that decision because he found out that Remote Ocean body was useless around him. The godly power of Remote Ocean body was one-tenth as delicate as that of the Golden Horned Beast, and it was only 1,000th as large as the Golden Horned Beast... The original earthling body could draw energies from the Golden Horned Beast when his godly body was consumed, and the

Golden Horned Beast body could recover in no time.

As for self-destruction, the power from blowing up the Remote Ocean body couldn't even compare to that of the ultimate technique of universe masters, Golden Light. Which meant Remote Ocean body couldn't help at all.

However, Remote Ocean body had strong combat power innately, plus a senior true treasure armor, a blade, a domain type true treasure, and the ultimate technique of universe masters, Golden Light! His power was only slightly weaker than that of the original earthling body and could easily outpower an ordinary universe overlord.

He was adequate to guard the earth. Luo Feng had left his family's keepsakes so that he could sense it when his families were in danger if his family members crushed the keepsakes. Still, it would be better for him to guard the earth himself.

While Remote Ocean body went to Earth and started to stand guard, Luo Feng went back the original stars...

******

Inside the Thorn Ring Alliance, in front of a towering palace, a universe master was performing "Turning Back Time." A shadow stood in the black mist, and the space and time around him were being reversed... However, he kept standing still while bearing all the backlash of universe operation law.

After a long while, everything went back to normal. The universe overlord nodded into the distance and went back to his palace.

"Thank you, universe master." A giant man bowed.

"I—I'm alive again?" Evil Fog Knight stood there, dazed and overjoyed.

"Evil Fog Knight," the giant man growled, and Evil Fog immediately flew to the giant man and gave a salutation. "Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress."

"I told you to follow Tian Yang Knight, and I meant to get there as soon as possible, but I didn't expect you to be killed," the giant man said. "I asked 'Hu Master' to turn back time to resurrect you. As for the price, I'll bear it."

Evil Fog Knight relieved. It was costly to turn back time and resurrect someone.

"What happened? How did you die?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress questioned.

"This is what happened," said Evil Fog Knight. "I saw Tian Yang Knight and a Golden Horned Beast fly into the space whirlpool, and I reported it to you. After that, you asked me to follow them... I went into the space whirlpool and saw them fighting each other, and both of them had domain type true treasures!"

"Indeed, that Tian Yang Knight has a domain type true treasure." Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress snorted. "He got it by luck."

"They were fighting," Evil Fog Knight continued. "I thought Tian Yang Knight was caught up in the fight too, so I hid elsewhere to watch, as I didn't dare get pulled into the domain. It was a brutal fight, and their domain type true treasures were at the same level... One belonged to Tian Yang Knight and the other to the Golden Horned Beast."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress listened carefully.

"Tian Yang Knight was obviously the weaker one, and he soon attempted to run away," said Evil Fog Knight.

"Run away? The weaker one?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was startled. "Did you recognize which knight the Golden Horned Beast is?"

"No. I have never seen him." Evil Fog Knight shook his head.

"Oh?"

"I tried to follow them, but then..." Evil Fog Knight looked

shocked. "Suddenly, it turned dark, and I was trapped in darkness. I was surrounded by dark air."

"Dark surroundings? And dark air?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress looked puzzled. "Was it chaos airflow?"

Chapter 1084: Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress and Luo Feng

"What chaotic airflow?" Evil Fog Knight was confused.

The Thorn Ring Alliance did not have its own universe, so Evil Fog Knight would not know what chaotic airflow was.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress cast a look at Evil Fog Knight and told him, "That is the initial energy of the universe. It is the maternal source of all the energies we know of!"

"Maternal source of all the energies?" Evil Fog was appalled.

"There's no need for you to probe further," Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress continued in a low voice, with furrowed brows. "How did you meet with a chaotic airflow when you were on the original star? Tell me everything without leaving out a single detail."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was a top-tier universe overlord who enjoyed an extremely high status. He was knowledgeable and knew many secrets of the vast universe. Of course, he knew that a chaotic airflow should not have appeared on an original star.

"It was like this." Evil Fog Knight hurried to explain. "I was watching the fight between that Golden Horned Beast and Tian Yang Knight from afar when suddenly, darkness fell. It was as though we had all fallen into another world. All around us, there was a dark airflow. I instantly knew that I must have fallen into a dangerous tactic deployed by my enemy, so I quickly pleaded for mercy, hoping that the great being would let me go. However, it was pointless... Then—the dark airflow split into two parts. It was like a gigantic grinder with me in the middle. I was in the grinder, surrounded by the dark airflow. My godly body was consumed rapidly, and I was left with no other choice but to self-destruct."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress listened intently and nodded slightly. He could not help feeling scared. If it was really chaotic airflow,

that meant there was a special true treasure being used. Based on what Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress knew... some special true treasures that were extremely powerful, or the extremely powerful techniques that could only be created by the most terrifying beings, universe masters, were able to be transformed into chaotic airflows.

That was a fight that only involved a golden horned beast and Tian Yang Knight, thought Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. There was no universe master involved. If there was a universe master, killing Evil Fog Knight would have been even easier. There would have been no need to make use of that powerful technique at all. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress considered this, trying to figure out the situation. There is only one possibility... A special piece of a true treasure was used.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was very knowledgeable, but he was unaware of anyone with a perfect life gene level would be able to obtain the most powerful talent technique. That was considered a top-level secret within the universe, so he would not have been able to guess that it was a talent technique involved!

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress stared at Evil Fog Knight as he pondered. "The domain type true treasure that the Golden Horned Beast used. What form of domain did it take on?"

There were many kinds of domain type true treasures in the universe; every one of them took the form of a different domain, each with their unique characteristics. Given the domain type true treasure, one could easily deduce more information on the background of the Golden Horned Beast. But Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was still clueless.

"Domain?" Evil Fog Knight suddenly recalled and said, "Golden River, a vast golden river. Yes, and a few great beasts! I remember seeing the great beasts continuously colliding into the gigantic rolling rocks of Tian Yang Knight's domain when the two true treasure domains charged at one another. As for how many beasts

there were exactly, it was too far for me to see clearly."

"Golden River? Great beasts?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress raised his brow, and his eyes lit up. "The human, Luo Feng!"

"Luo Feng?" Evil Fog Knight was baffled.

"You may take your leave," Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress ordered.

Evil Fog Knight was slightly taken aback, and in his heart, he was not content taking things as they were.

"Eh?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress looked at him coldly.

Evil Fog Knight could only grit his teeth to contain his displeasure as he transformed into light and departed. In his heart, he lamented the situation. Annoying Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress! I was obeying your orders when I followed Tian Yang Knight, which was the reason I was annihilated! Although I could reverse time and space to be resurrected, all my treasures were gone. Not a single one left. This was really a great loss. Just my luck.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress looked unfeelingly at the retreating figure of Evil Fog Knight. "Humph... I have already paid the price for your resurrection by reversing time and space, and you still want to take advantages? Hmm." Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress started to fall into deep thought while standing in mid-air.

Human form... Luo Feng? That domain type treasure must be the Nine Tiger River of the human race! And Nine Tiger River is in the hands of Luo Feng.

Nine Tiger River used to be a true treasure possessed by non-human races, but after a series of fights, the treasure had been taken over by different hands until finally, it landed up with the human race.

Luo Feng's reputation had recently been on the rise. Because of him, a fair number of universe great beings had been annihilated.

Of course, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress knew all this, as he had

received a tip-off way back when Luo Feng obtained Nine Tiger River! As for Evil Fog Knight, because he was in the Original Star and was nothing more than an ordinary knight, he naturally only knew that a fair number of knights from the other races had been annihilated because for being consumed by greed and wanting to kill Luo Feng. He was clueless in terms of other detailed information like Nine Tiger River. Such information was out of his reach.

Earlier on, Evil Fog Knight mentioned that when Golden Horned Beast and Tian Yang Knight fought, Nine Tiger River suddenly appeared, thought Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. It seems like... Luo Feng's assistant is none other than that Golden Horned Beast!

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress nodded to reinforce his deduction. Being able to achieve this degree of battle successes, succeeding in killing so many knights of other races, and even universe overlords, no wonder Tian Yang Knight needed to escape from him. And lastly, the true treasure that gave rise to the chaotic airflow must be the doing of Golden Horned Beast. If it was Tian Yang Knight's true treasure, then Tian Yang Knight would not have had to escape when he met me years ago. Evil Fog Knight was pursued even though he was far away, and Tian Yang Knight was annihilated. So... the treasure must be in the hands of the Golden Horned Beast.

"Luo Feng? Golden Horned Beast?"

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress made his decision after a moment of thoughts.

"I shall go meet this human Luo Feng personally."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress instantly transformed into light and vanished into space at super speed.

******

On the Original Star.

With his silver armor and wings, Luo Feng carried his Cutting Pearl Sword across his back as he flew high in the air. When knights of other races saw him approaching from afar, they would immediately steer clear of his path and go into hiding.

"It's Luo Feng."

"Hurry! Move out of his way!"

"This Luo Feng's wings used to be a pair. When did it increase to four?"

"Who knows? Maybe he has changed the form of his true treasure. Or maybe he has changed to another true treasure."

Luo Feng was just like the other top-tier universe overlords, with a presence that would cause knights of other races—and even universe overlords—to retreat. Of course, on planets where universe masters arrived, it would be Luo Feng's turn to hide. Even if he really wanted to enter a planet that had a universe master, he would ensure that he stayed far away from where the universe master was, maintaining a distance of at least 600 million miles.

"Is this how being a great being feels?" Luo Feng whispered, standing at the apex of a towering mountain and taking in a bird's eye view of the vast land. "In this original star that is said to be fraught with danger, I am always on my toes. So long as I steer clear of the location where a universe master lands, no others would dare come provoke me."

The original star was dangerous, yet this statement was based on comparative terms. To universe knights, it was extremely dangerous!

To universe overlords, the extent of danger was much smaller. Otherwise, Gui Yi Knight would not have been so confident that he would be able to borrow Luo Feng's soul type true treasure way back then. Normally, if one was able to avoid running into top-tier universe overlords and universe masters, there should not be

much danger to be worried about.

Top-tier universe overlords were even safer—so long as they did not take the initiative to provoke the universe masters! For instance, during the opening of a treasure, a top-tier universe overlord and a universe master might both enter to fight for its ownership... Under such a circumstance, there would naturally be the possibility of someone getting killed. Otherwise, by avoiding any path a universe master trod on, one could definitely stay safe.

"Huh?" Luo Feng suddenly turned his head in a certain direction. "In the original star, knights of other races would avoid me when they saw me in the distance, but this one here dares to approach within a mere six million miles away from me?"

From afar, a cyan light flew straight toward Luo Feng.

"That is...?" Luo Feng looked intently and tried to distinguish the identity of the approaching party. It was a giant with a body that was full of green vitality. And judging by its unique characteristics, looks, and aura... "Thorn Ring Alliance's Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress!"

Luo Feng recognized his approaching company in an instant. Then he smirked to himself. No wonder there was no fear. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was a top-tier universe overlord.

"Human Luo Feng!" a booming voice sounded.

"Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress," Luo Feng said, looking over from where he stood at the apex of the mountain.

A while later, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress descended to a spot near Luo Feng. With a smile, he glanced at him and said, "I've long heard of your name, human Luo Feng. This is our very first time meeting each other."

"I'm afraid the reason for this meeting is, most likely, that I ventured into the original star, hence arousing your attention," Luo Feng said humbly. He laughed and continued, "To become

such a prominent figure—even to the extent of leading knights of other races to avoid me when they see me. All of these were not because of my true abilities. Unlike you, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. All others are in awe because you are truly powerful enough."

Since all the other races had come to conclude that Luo Feng had an assistant, then so be it. Anyway, no one would believe him if he said otherwise.

"You are pretty capable, too," said Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. "You hold high hopes of attaining at least the level of a universe overlord soon." Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress looked at Luo Feng, then asked, "Now that I have met you, there is actually a favor I would like to ask of you."

"A favor?" Luo Feng repeated. "Please go on."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress wanted a favor from him?

"I need to make a true treasure, and I have been looking for many materials." Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress glanced at Luo Feng, then continued. "But I am missing a few important precious metals. The other universe knights make detours whenever they see me, so there is no way I can speak to them at all."

Luo Feng laughed. That was true, even if he had wanted to speak to the other races, they would have avoided his path the moment they saw him tens of millions of miles away.

"I am not sure what metals you have, but Luo Feng, if there are any that I need, I am willing to pay you handsomely in exchange for them." Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress smiled.

"Metals?" Luo Feng asked out of curiosity. "Aren't there any in the Thorn Ring Alliance?"

"Sadly, there really aren't any," Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress said with a resigned look. "There are so many types of precious metals in the universe, and what I need... we used to have, but now, everything has been exchanged or claimed by others."

Luo Feng nodded. "I do have some materials, but I am not sure if there are any that you want," Luo Feng informed him.

Previously, after killing Tian Yang Knight, Luo Feng returned to his god country where he kept all the true treasures and treasures that he could not fathom. After all, materials that he could not understand would obviously be very highly priced. Luo Feng only brought with him the ones that he could recognize and understand, and he was clear of the prices of the treasures that he carried at his side.

"There's a chance you may have some." Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress laughed out loud. "How about letting me take a look?"

"Sure."

With a wave of his hand, a large quantity of metals floated before Luo Feng. Almost 100 types of metals were closely packed in the space before them. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress started scrutinizing and identifying the metals with eyes brightly lit. However, a short while later, the glimmer of excitement in his eyes dimmed as he shook his head with a smile. "There really aren't any I need."

"Whatever metal that Thorn Ring Alliance lacks, I doubt I will have any," Luo Feng said, smiling but not revealing much.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress looked a little hesitant.

"Please feel free to speak your mind," Luo Feng said with a smile.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress went on to say, "Actually, I did not want to ask this. It's just that this metal is really important to me. The other races in the universe are all aware that Luo Feng has a top-tier universe overlord as his assistant. I trust that he, too, holds on to many precious metals. I am just thinking... could I have a look at what he carries? If he has what I need, I am willing to trade treasure for treasure. Your friend will not be put at a disadvantage."

Chapter 1085: Blossoming Snow Vine

"My assistant?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Everyone in the universe wants to know who your helper is," Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress said. He smiled as he gazed at Luo Feng.

"Wait a moment, I'll ask him now," Luo Feng continued.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress nodded and waited for Luo Feng's response silently... It would be wonderful if he could get a valuable without fighting! After all, the "assistant" had killed Tian Yang Knight as well as several other universe overlords. Even Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress wasn't willing to start a fight.

Luo Feng pretended to be connecting with his helper, but the Golden Horned Beast was only one of his bodies. How was it possible that he had any other metals?

"Ah," Luo Feng said, looking at Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress with regret. "Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress, my friend said he doesn't have any metals."

"Doesn't have any?" Land of Fan Nuo Fortress said. "Or is not willing to share them?"

"My friend said he doesn't have it." Luo Feng was still looking at Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. "I can't do anything about it."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress nodded and sighed. "What a shame."

The second he finished, a monstrous force suddenly permeated outward. Meanwhile, endless green light started to shine. A gigantic vine several miles wide immediately enveloped the sky and land.

The space was filled with endless vines that surrounded Luo Feng completely.

An extremely low voice came out of the vines. "What a shame. I didn't want to fight you in the first place."

Luo Feng frowned and roared. "Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress...!"

Based on the information collected, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress had incredible power, and he had three bodies in total. His other two bodies were also powerful. The strongest one was the "Blossoming Snow Vine" body, which was supposedly the original body of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. It was an incredibly special life form in the universe; there were only five in total. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress had one of them, and he had joined Thorn Ring Alliance. As for the other four Blossoming Snow Vines, they joined other powers.

Blossoming Snow Vine had a life gene level of around 1,000 times, but it was extremely large —over 600,000 cubic miles! And it had an inherited technique, "Transplantation"!

With the inherited technique Transplantation, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress had two bodies. Though they weren't as large as Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress, but they had similar life gene levels. That meant Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was as powerful as three top-tier universe overlords, which gave him an extremely high status in the Thorn Ring Alliance.

"Ask your friend to give me all the metal, Luo Feng!" the deep voice resounded. "Give me the metal. Otherwise, I'll kill you! Even if that Golden Horned Beast can protect himself, he won't be able to protect you."

"Golden Horned Beast?" Luo Feng stood in the sky and smiled. He gazed at the white vines and the green light flowing around them. "You are well-informed."

"Are you going to give it to me or not?" boomed the low voice. It echoed all around Luo Feng: "To me or not...? To me or not...? To me or not...?"

"I'll ask my friend to answer you."

Luo Feng turned around, and a lovely Golden Horned Beast showed up beside him.

"Golden Horned Beast!" the voice said from the vines. "Give me all your metal, and I'll leave. Otherwise... this human Luo Feng will die! Answer me! Are you going to give me the metal or not?"

The Golden Horned Beast raised his head and growled, "Are you trying to threaten me? Don't even think about it!"

"Hahaha...!" Luo Feng started to guffaw.

The endless, vine-covered world turned silent. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress hadn't expected the Golden Horned Beast to refuse him. Was the Golden Horned Beast really so confident that he could protect Luo Feng? He was also startled by Luo Feng's laughter.

"Then die—!" began Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress.

But before he could finish, the Golden Horned Beast and Luo Feng both protested, "You're the one to die!"

Hong! Long! Long!

Endless golden waves flooded out and started permeating and penetrating through the cracks among the vines. They looked like river waters, but they were a special energy domain transformed from the Nine Tiger River under burning godly power. It covered an area with a radius of 19 million miles. However, the Blossoming Snow Vine body was able to resist it easily.

"Larger! Larger! Larger!" The Golden Horned Beast growled.

Hua!

The Golden Horned Beast instantly became larger, and the white vines with green light flowing around them started to wind around the Golden Horned Beast. However, he was wearing the top-tier set true treasure Beast God Armor, and he had weapons everywhere in his body. His claws kept slashing, and countless golden engravings started to flow.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Numerous white vines bounced away. They weren't able to stop

him from growing larger.

"He is neglecting the earthling Luo Feng!" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress said, startled. Meanwhile, numerous vines dashed towards Luo Feng like green lights.

Silver-armored and silver-winged Luo Feng gazed at him with a smile. "Break," Luo Feng murmured.

The four wings on his back became dozens of feet long, and countless engravings were flowing on the wings. Aside from the ultimate technique of universe masters, Luo Feng had also created an ultimate technique of universe overlords he had named "Haze." He was already familiar with using his wings like blades, and now, he was using all four of them! Besides, the attack power of his new Shi Wu Wings was at the same level as Cutting Pearl Sword.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Four glowing, golden arcs ward off those vines. Luo Feng stood in the space and waved his wing, easily resisting all the attacks. After only a few seconds, all the vines vanished.

Of course, it wasn't only thanks to the original earthling body, but also the Golden Horned Beast!

"Larger! Larger! Larger!"

It was covering the sky and land! This was his Golden Horned Beast! At over 600,000 miles long, it stood in the sky, black and ferocious. After finishing the third level of "Deities of the World," he could shrink his body to a large extent.

For an ordinary Golden Horned Beast, 60 miles was their limit, but the normal godly body of Golden Horned Luo Feng was 5,500 miles long! Even though it was only enlarged 36 times, it was still within the limit, and it wouldn't affect Luo Feng's combat power.

The Golden Horned easily ripped Blossoming Snow Vine apart.

******

The Golden Horned Beast 600,000 miles long and Blossoming Snow Vine with a diameter of 600,000 miles glared at each other.

Luo Feng's original earthling body stood on the Golden Horned Beast, and countless vines spread from the dark turquoise fortress. Apparently, the core of Blossoming Snow Vine was hiding in the fortress, and numerous vines were all bursting out of the fortress. A shadow was also standing among the vines. It was Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress.

"It seems that the other races are all wrong about you," said Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. "You're already as powerful as a universe overlord... Have you become a universe knight?"

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was standing above the Blossoming Snow Vine. Luo Feng was standing the Golden Horned Beast.

"Think whatever you want," Luo Feng whispered.

"Give me the metal! Then I'll let you leave!" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress yelled.

He felt intimidated already and couldn't help glancing at the enormous Golden Horned Beast. It looked so savage! It was the spitting image of the Gold Beast God. They even felt the same. Besides, the technique the Golden Horned Beast had just performed made him more alert. Though the technique Luo Feng performed with his wings was incredible, it couldn't even compare to that of the Golden Horned Beast.

"You look confident, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress," said Luo Feng. He stared at Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. "Are you feeling confident? I suggest that you leave first."

Indeed, Luo Feng didn't want to fight Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. Especially at 600,000 miles long with a flying fortress.

"The attacks from the vines of Blossoming Snow Vine are ordinary—it's not my supreme technique!" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress yelled. "My Blossoming Snow Wing is able to ensnare your

Golden Horned Beast, and I can easily kill you."

"You're joking." Luo Feng teased him.

This infuriated Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress and the giant Blossoming Snow Vine. Following a bellow with rage, a magnificent green world enveloped the area within thousands of square miles and hit the golden river from Nine Tiger River. It was apparently a domain type true treasure.

"Fight!"

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress and Blossoming Snow Vine charged Luo Feng

Hong!

The vines entwined each other, becoming eight gigantic vines thousands of miles thick. They slashed at the Golden Horned Beast like eight green whips.

Hou!

The Golden Horned Beast charged while Luo Feng stood in the sky.

"Luo Feng, you're seeking your own death!" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress shouted as he flew toward him.

Luo Feng took the Cutting Pearl Sword from his back and glared at Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress.

He!

A huge, godly slash showed up in the hands of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress, and there an infinity of ancient engravings on it. Under his burning godly power, it slashed toward Luo Feng.

Hu!

A blurry golden light started to shine. It came from Luo Feng's universe-overlord ultimate technique, Haze. Luo Feng had created two techniques, one of them was Golden Light, and the other one

was Haze. Both could exhibit the transformation of Luo Feng. He really looked forward to the result when he created a pinnacle technique the first time, and he had pondered the name of the technique for a long time. However, he didn't care about the names much anymore.

They hit each other.

Luo Feng bounced away, but the vines kept charging him. Luo Feng tried to use Cutting Pearl Blade and his Shi Wu Wings to defend himself, but the vines were too strong and quick, and they all hit Luo Feng's Force Armor. Luckily, Luo Feng could still withstand it with his Force Armor...

"No...!" said Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress.

Although he was suppressing Luo Feng, he realized that the Blossoming Snow Vine couldn't hold it anymore. All the vines went back to the dark turquoise fortress and started to flee.

Chapter 1086: Resurrection

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress glared at the black Golden Horned Beast in the distance. Blossoming Snow Vine was his original body, but when they were fighting, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress found that he was completely suppressed. Though he had a senior true treasure armor and a gigantic godly body, Blossoming Snow Vine still couldn't stop that black Golden Horned Beast.

Xiu!

The dark turquoise fortress flew toward Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress while he flew toward the fortress as well. He stopped caring about the human Luo Feng as he knew that if the Golden Horned Beast got close to him, he would be in deep trouble.

"Want to flee?" Luo Feng shook his wings, and the space and time were in complete disorder. Shadows of Luo Feng showed up around Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress.

"What?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was terrified, and he immediately cursed the one who had given him the information. He had heard that Luo Feng was following the Beast God Path, but the Luo Feng in front of him already had exceptional control over the space and time. Even if Luo Feng was using his true treasure, he needed adequately thorough comprehension. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress didn't know about the engraving-picture path.

"Go away!" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress growled and lashed at Luo Feng.

A cold and sharp golden light shone! It was irresistible!

Peng!

The lash was bent, and Cutting-Pearl Blade hit the head of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. The armor withstood the attack, but Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress fell because of it.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress looked up at Luo Feng, terrified.

"Impossible!"

How was it possible that Luo Feng could be this powerful? That blade technique! The blade technique Luo Feng had just used was the same as the one the Golden Horned Beast used... Was it possible that the peerless genius Luo Feng's soul was already transferred to the Golden Horned Beast? That was why the human Luo Feng was able to wield the incredible technique the Golden Horned Beast used.

Of course, realized Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. Luo Feng had extraordinary potential, and many supreme beings craved to enslave him—to make him a body for themselves. However, the human race must have given him strict protection. How did the Golden Horned Beast take his soul? This is incredible.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress tried to flee.

Hua!

Luo Feng moved his wings, and his acceleration reached a new level through the top-tier true treasure Shi Wu Wings. Several shadows immediately blocked Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress.

"You can't run away," said Luo Feng, and he attacked with his blade again.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress tried to use his whip to resist it, but he bounced away again. He wasn't able to escape Luo Feng in a short time, and he had to trigger the flying fortress to save him! Although the fortress was flying toward him, the Golden Horned Beast was flying at him as well. However, the fortress was apparently faster than the Golden Horned Beast.

"Scram, human!"

Giant vines spread from the fortress.

"Humph!" Luo Feng snorted, and the wings on his back immediately grew larger. They became almost 60 miles wide. "Break!"

The wings were like blades, and Luo Feng was like the handle. The blades slashed through the vines like a knife through butter.

"Damn it!" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress shouted, growing anxious. He growled.

Hong! Long!

All the vines went back to the flying fortress, and at the same time, the fortress hit the giant set of Shi Wu Wings on Luo Feng's back. Luo Feng trembled.

The moment the fortress hit Shi Wu Wing, countless vines spread out from the fortress. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress touched a vine, and his godly whip, true treasure armor, and other valuables all went into the godly body of Blossoming Snow Vine. As for his original body, it was annihilated. All the vines went back to the palace, and it started to fly away.

Hou!

The Golden Horned Beast ran through the space. The longest horn on his head hit the flying fortress, which bounced away. The flying fortress then sped up and tried to flee like a beam of light.

******

Above the ocean on an original star flew a flying fortress, and a giant man walked out of the fortress. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress still felt terrified.

"What a powerful Golden Horned Beast! He robbed the human Luo Feng's soul! And he's so mighty! Although they used the same technique, that Golden Horned Beast is apparently more skilled! It must have an incredible attack type true treasure!"

The more he thought about it, the more shocked he became.

"That Golden Horned Beast is a handful."

******

Luo Feng was also recalling that fight.

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress has a life gene level of 1,000 times, which is inferior to that of the World Tree, he thought. Besides, the inherited technique "Control over Space and Time" the World Tree has is more helpful for fighting, while the inherited technique Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress has is two more bodies.

He concluded that Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was slightly weaker than the World Tree.

Luo Feng's godly power was weaker than that of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress, yet his technique was much more powerful! He must have been at the same level as the World Tree, which was why he could suppress Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress!

However, I could only suppress him, not defeat him. I'm only slightly more powerful than him, and his weapon weakened my attack to a large extent. I only injured him a little bit when it hit his godly body.

Luo Feng understood that because the Golden Horned Beast had a top-tier set true treasure Beast God Armor, even Blossoming Snow Vine—which was over 600,000 miles long—could only run.

That was all he could do, even though he had a flying fortress as well. His fortress was like a turtle shell, strong enough to withstand an attack from a universe master. Even his technique "I Am the Universe" might not have been able to injure the godly body hidden inside the flying fortress.

The more powerful it gets, the more difficult it is to kill, Luo Feng thought. However, it's so weird this time. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress wants my metal? And he's willing to fight me for it? The metal might be as valuable as a true treasure.

******

The Northern Territory Alliance.

Inside the towering palaces surrounded by black fire lived numerous undying servants and universe knights. The palaces in

the Northern Territory Alliance all had undying servants and universe knights, and all were looking at the main palace in the center with humble veneration. At the periphery of the palace was endless light. That was where Star River Master lived.

Star River Master was a revered being in the universe and was equally as renowned as Primal Chaos City Leader! The powers in the universe respected Star River Master even more than Primal Chaos City Leader!

Inside the main palace, a shadow that looked like a black hole sat on the throne. All the light that touched it was swallowed by the shadow.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

The space and time in the palace were being reversed. The scenes kept turning back. Group after group of universe knights came here to see Star River Master, and some other great beings also met Star River Master here. Even supreme universe masters had come here before.

"Stop!"

Suddenly, two universe knights who had come here were frozen in place, in the middle of giving salutations. Time kept being reversed, and the scene kept changing, but the two shadows remained frozen.

"Stop! Stop! Stop!"

One shadow after another was fixed. They were universe knights of all kinds. Soon, 39 universe knights stood there still like sculptures.

"Time, go back."

The time that was being reversed went back. The backlash from operation law was transferred to the emptiness of the black hole on the throne. It shivered and tried to recover. It was clearly a burden for him to resurrect 39 senior universe knights.

After a while, everything went back normal. All 39 universe knights regained consciousness. They looked at each other in shock, and their memories flooded back to them.

"Thank you, Star River Master," they said. All of them saluted.

A voice came from Star River Master. "22 or 23 of you died because of that human Luo Feng. Answer me! Who is his helper?"

"It's a black Golden Horned Beast."

"A strange beast that looks like a Golden Horned Beast but has six horns, and one of them is extremely long."

"A black, strange beast."

They all answered one by one. However, a squeaky voice spoke up and said, "Were all of you killed by the black, strange beast? Am I the only one who got killed by the human Luo Feng?"

"Killed by Luo Feng?" someone called out. "Do you even know of his power? Are you kidding me?"

"What a joke," another knight said. But soon, three more universe knights spoke up.

"I was killed by Luo Feng too," someone said.

"Me too."

"I thought I had an illusion, but I was killed by Luo Feng too."

The palace went silent. It was possible that one senior universe knight was mistaken, but all were terrified when four senior universe knights said the same thing.

****

Inside the Primal Chaos City.

Luo Feng walked into the Primal Chaos City Leader's palace, and all the guards greeted him respectfully.

"Master."

"Master."

Luo Feng nodded and walked to the side palace where the beings of the race contributed their true treasures. That Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress interested Luo Feng. So did the Evil Fog Knight, who had been killed by his technique "I Am the Universe."

Both Evil Fog Knight and Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress come from Thorn Ring Alliance, thought Luo Feng. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress knows of my Golden Horned Beast, and he wants my metal.

Luo Feng speculated that there might be some unknown valuables in his metal, which was why he had temporarily left the original stars and came back to his god country, bringing with him the metal he couldn't identify. He had brought it to Primal Chaos City to identify it.

"What is it?" Luo Feng was confused. He arrived at the side palace.

Hong! Long! Long!

The bronze door opened, and Luo Feng walked in.

Chapter 1087: The Disambiguation Temple

The quiet and ancient temple hall was very spacious. Only the stone plate in the middle was conspicuous. This was the location where one could place items, and the virtual universe system would conduct an examination and arrive at a verdict regarding their value. This was the only place that Luo Feng could think of to easily identify a piece of an unnamed valuable.

"Previously, based on what my access rights allowed," Luo Feng said to himself, "I made use of the virtual universe network to make comparisons with the metals that I couldn't identify. Now, I could confirm almost every unknown metal. Although some of them are rare, it was better than seeing Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress beat his brains out trying to figure out the metals. Now, I'm down to the last three types."

Purely through his own investigative work on the network, he was now left with only three types of metal that could not be identified. Based on his conjecture, there were valuables to be found from within.

Luo Feng flipped his hand, and a green crystal stone the size of a sesame seed appeared in the middle of his palm. He gently placed it on the stone plate.

Weng!

Green threads started rising from the middle of the stone plate in a winding path to envelop the green crystal stone. Then the stone plate started to process the stone meticulously. A short while later, a voice rang out an analysis.

"Metal. 'Wood in research crystals.' One piece. If given to race as a contribution, one can receive 18 treasure points. Luo Feng, are you willing to contribute this treasure to your race?"

"Oh? It is truly a treasure." Luo Feng's expression revealed a trace

of surprise. "No wonder I couldn't find any information on this metal with my access rights on the network. Just this little stone that is the size of a sesame seed is worth 18 treasure points. It seems the universe overlords and knights that I have killed did indeed have quite a fair number of valuables hidden among their possessions. However, only 18 treasure points... That's not even worth one fight against Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress."

Luo Feng shook his head and dismissed this piece of treasure. With one hand outstretched, the crystal stone that was the size of a sesame seed flew back to rest on his palm and was immediately stored back in his world ring.

Then, with another flip, another piece of metal appeared in his palm. This black metal was around the size of a human head, and its surface was divided into a total of 360 facets. The facet was smooth and shiny beyond comparison, to the extent that they were as reflective as mirrors. This was another one of the three great metals Luo Feng failed to identify.

"Go."

The black metal floated off his palm and made its way over to the stone plate. Countless green threads rose up in a winding path again to envelop this piece of black metal stone...

"Huh?" Luo Feng frowned. "Why is this taking such a long time?"

It had never taken this long before, even when he brought his true treasure to be examined.

Eventually, the gentle voice sounded again. This time, it resonated throughout the entire hall, creating an echo. "'Disambiguation Mirror Stone.' An item belonging to the Disambiguation Temple. If contributed to the race, one could earn 20 true treasure points. Luo Feng, are you willing to contribute this treasure to your race?"

Luo Feng's eyes lit up! 20 true treasure points? That was even

more expensive than Nine Tiger River!

"This is it!"

Luo Feng looked at the Disambiguation Mirror Stone with amazement. At the same time, he summoned it back to his palm very quickly by stretching out his hand. With sparkling eyes, he stared at the Disambiguation Mirror Stone.

"No wonder... No wonder Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was willing to go to any means to obtain it. He initiated a fair trade of metals on purpose. Such a bully. He must be taking advantage of the fact that I was unaware of the wonders of this Disambiguation Mirror Stone."

Luo Feng felt adrenaline coursing through his veins. Although it had been close to 20,000 years since he had first entered an original star, during this period, Luo Feng's consciousness occasionally entered the virtual universe, so the major events on the original stars were nothing novel to him. Undoubtedly, he knew them all.

For close to 20,000 years, on the 10,081 original stars, if there was one such event that was most shockingly soul-stirring, it was none other than the tumult in the Disambiguation Temple.

This occurrence had driven the races of the universe into a frenzy. In the first 600 years after the paths to the original stars appeared, various universe laws befell Original Star Number 02892. All of a sudden, various laws and origins had appeared on this original star at the same time. There were elements like gold, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder and lightning, light, time, and space. The combined power was overwhelming. At one point in time, it felt as though the entire planet had fallen into shackles, and every single one of the universe knights and universe overlords had difficulty moving. At the same time, a temple started to emerge gradually from beneath ground...

The entire process took close to a full 100 years, and during this

time, various major powers of the universe sent forth their super beings to this temple. At one point, this temple was surrounded by many universe masters, and only universe overlords with top-tier universe overlord capabilities would dare to venture near it.

After a period of 100 years later, the Disambiguation Temple fully emerged. Before it was erected a black stone tablet. The stone tablet had ancient engravings that were easily deciphered. Any great being would understand the moment they laid eyes on them. The content was very simple. It read:

The birth of Disambiguation Temple. A stone tablet appears; the moment the stone tablet disintegrates, on the 10,081 original stars, during a certain time and place, a single or many Disambiguation Mirror Stones will appear at random! There are a total of 36 Disambiguation Mirror Stones... and they all resemble ordinary stones. During birth, their dynamics are comparable to that of senior true treasures. When all 36 have fully emerged, the Disambiguation Temple will open. Those possessing Disambiguation Mirror Stones may enter. Any great beings without the stones will be considered as trespassing and will be annihilated without exception...

One year later, the stone tablet disintegrated. That was when various rumors started circulating; there were sayings like the Disambiguation Mirror Stones had been born on a certain original star. The rumors gave rise to many disputes. However, no one knew the exact time and place where the stones could be. This required a touch of luck. Even if a great being had strong powers, it would still be a challenging feat to obtain a Disambiguation Mirror Stone!

News of the stone tablet was disseminated early... Of course, Luo Feng knew of it.

"So, this is the Disambiguation Mirror Stone. I have been so oblivious to the treasure I have." Luo Feng looked at the piece of black crystal stone. "During the birth of the Disambiguation

Mirror Stones, there was an aura so overwhelming that it was like the birth of a senior true treasure, which was why it would have been best to find this Disambiguation Mirror Stone during its birth. Then, the unique characteristics of this stone could be observed and acquired."

The birth of a stone possessed a power that was comparable to a senior true treasure. Every great being would be able to guess that this was not an ordinary stone. However—just like how Luo Feng killed other strong beings, then simply gathered and collected all the valuables that they once possessed—even if one possessed these Disambiguation Mirror Stones, they might not be able to identify them correctly.

"The befalling of various laws and origins of the universe..." said Luo Feng. "The Disambiguation Temple seems to be the greatest treasure during the opening of the Original Stars this time around."

The Original Stars usually took a limitless period of waiting before they opened once. When they did open, they would only remain open for 1,000 eras. During this period of 1,000 eras, top-tier domain type true treasures, top-tier soul type true treasures, top-tier flying palace type true treasures, and pinnacle weapon type true treasures showed up quite frequently. The only concern was that these would all come with imperfections and would be scattered all over the place.

During the 1,000 eras that the Original Stars remained open, there was bound to be one true treasure that was most fearsome of all—one that would dominate all other true treasures. Usually, the predominant one would be a pinnacle domain type true treasure, a pinnacle flying palace type true treasure, or a pinnacle soul type true treasure. And they would normally also possess other functions too.

Force Armor, for instance, also had the power of soul defense; Beast God Armor had powers of attack and defense; supreme true

treasure Star Tower was a fusion of soul defense, flying palace, suppression, attack, and many other functions.

Every time the Original Stars open, the most powerful true treasure that appeared, would usually be a combination of numerous abilities. For instance, the main function of a pinnacle soul type true treasure would be soul defense, but it would also have the function of partial godly body defense, or even the function of creating illusions.

In short, a pinnacle soul type true treasure would only be second to a supreme true treasure! And supreme true treasures were especially uncommon!

Even the nine greatest supreme beings in the universe did not own any supreme true treasures to reign dominance over the others. So pinnacle true treasures of the various types like domains, soul, flying palaces were more than enough to send various races in the universe into a frenzy.

"It will be an eternity before the Original Stars open again," Luo Feng said to himself. "Every pinnacle soul type true treasure or true treasures of the same level would be known as a predominant clan true treasure! Once a strong and powerful universe master possessed such a true treasure and used it with other true treasures, the possibility of being annihilated would be nearly zero. Even if the opponent possessed a supreme true treasure... escape would always be possible when defeat was not."

No wonder Tian Yang Knight hid this stone all this time, thought Luo Feng. He would not have dared to reveal this. Once word had spread that he owned it, this Disambiguation Mirror Stone would naturally have fallen into the hands of the universe masters in the automaton clan for their own uses. He was fortunate enough to obtain one senior true treasure. And if he went into the temple... only 36 great beings in the entire universe could enter the Disambiguation Temple through the many different doors, so there was no way he could fail to survive. Should a great being

make it out alive, then the trip in would be extremely rewarding. Even if one failed—resurrection would always be the next course of action.

Luo Feng clearly understood what had gone through the minds of Tian Yang Knight and Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. Tian Yang Knight hid the news. And Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress had been unwilling to reveal the news that Tian Yang Knight had a Disambiguation Mirror Stone. If word spread, Tian Yang Knight would have had to pay his respects and surrender the stone to his race.

Tian Yang Knight would keep mum about the secret he held against Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress held a high status—having three great bodies, with each one comparable to that of a top-tier universe overlord. His status could almost match up to a universe master, so even if word spread and the Thorn Ring Alliance found out that he had a Disambiguation Mirror Stone, no one would be able to forcefully take it from him.

If he was backed into a corner, a special life-form such as Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress could always choose to leave the Thorn Ring Alliance and join other alliances.

Both had their own plans. Tian Yang Knight was not afraid of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress hunting him down. He was confident he would stay alive. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was also confident that he would be able to get his hands on the Disambiguation Mirror Stone, and hence, the situation maintained the status quo...

But no one expected Luo Feng's intervention!

Tian Yang Knight was skilled in escaping with his domain type true treasure combined with his senior true treasure armor, Flowing Light Wings. Even Luo Feng had been unable to give chase and eventually had to depend on his "I Am the Universe" technique to achieve the kill at last, which was how this Disambiguation Mirror Stone had fallen into the hands of Luo Feng.

"With this Disambiguation Mirror Stone, I also qualify to enter

the Disambiguation Temple," Luo Feng said, his emotions running high. "This kind of opportunity only comes once in the passage of many countless eras. Within 1,000 years, I will be able to become a universe overlord! Once I attain the level of universe overlord, my godly body will grow even bigger and stronger. My power will increase... I will be equipped with more resources to pursue other valuables."

Luo Feng nodded as he finished his analysis of the situation. Then he put the third piece of metal to test. It was a small metal piece worth 31 treasure points. Although Luo Feng was quite surprised to learn of the value, he dismissed it with a laugh. Thereafter, Luo Feng made his way out of Primal Chaos City and left the primal universe. He returned to the original universe.

******

Within the territory of the Thorn Ring Alliance.

For a life planet to gain unparalleled prosperity, the prevalence of technology must never be underestimated, even if the planet did not depend on that technology. The majority of life planets in the universe—especially those with life forms that were inherently weak—relied more on the use of technology to create an ideally comfortable living environment. Towering skyscrapers, speeding cars, aerial parking berths... All these would be common sights.

At the top of a skyscraper, Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress had transformed into a godly body that was around nine feet tall. Sitting in his armchair, he overlooked the city. As he was a special life-form, he preferred the way these ordinary and weaker life forms lived.

"Luo Feng. Golden Horned Beast..." he muttered. "This Disambiguation Mirror Stone must have fallen into his possession. Failing in my mission this time around must have roused his suspicions. He has probably made use of human race's information system to identify the Disambiguation Mirror Stone by now..."

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress frowned as he fell into deep thoughts.

Chapter 1088: Decision

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was sitting in the penthouse hall of a skyscraper. Suddenly, the doorbell rang.

"Come in," Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress said.

Hua!

The door opened automatically, and a man with four hoofs, two hands, and numerous antennae on his face walked in.

"Boss, these are the financial statements for this year," the man said and handed in the documents respectfully.

Characters of other races lined the documents. Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress took the documents and skimmed through them. It was a corporation he had established when disguising himself as an ordinary life form on this planet. Though it may have sounded ridiculous for a mighty, top-tier universe overlord to do such a thing, he enjoyed being close to most ordinary beings of the universe. Sometimes, he might gain new inspiration in laws when feeling the competition among the ordinary.

"Leave me first," ordered Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. "I'll hold a meeting later."

"Yes, sir."

The ordinary life forms working for this corporation would never have guessed how terrific their boss was. Even the so-called great beings—a great being at the universe level—was a joke to Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. He had secretly manipulated several power struggles on the planet, and it was like the blink of an eye to him. He could annihilate the double stars in the sky with a thought if he so desired...

The Golden Horned Beast had transferred Luo Feng's soul to himself, thought Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress. Undying fighters' souls can't be robbed. Does that mean Luo Feng's soul was transferred

when he was a sector lord? Luo Feng gained such fame on Redbud Island, but is it possible that his soul was already transferred to the Golden Horned Beast? No wonder Luo Feng could be revived right after he died. He must be a new body of that Golden Horned Beast.

Soul transfer meant entering the original soul into a new body. The Golden Horned Beast had his original body and three other bodies, and the mind of a body had to leave and abandon the original body to occupy a new body. However, soul transfer could only be done on beings beneath the level of undying...

"Hmm?" Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress stood up abruptly. "Something's wrong."

Luo Feng was able to kill a pinnacle emperor when he was only a sector lord, thought Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress, and he killed Bark Mirror Emperor as an undying fighter. His body is as powerful as those unique life forms. Regardless, a sector-lord level body is not able to withhold the soul of a universe knight, even if his body has a life gene level of thousands of times! Was the Golden Horned Beast only undying when he did soul transfer on Luo Feng?

"That's right," he muttered. "This is the only explanation! That is how he succeeded! And that is why I can't recognize him even with such fame! But how did he perform such a powerful technique? Even inherited techniques of unique life forms aren't that strong."

It was impossible for Luo Feng to get the Golden Horned Beast's soul! It had only been a short while since Luo Feng started training, and he wasn't able to create techniques that terrific.

It was also impossible for the Golden Horned Beast to get Luo Feng's soul! Luo Feng, when he was only a sector-lord, wasn't able to withhold the soul of a universe knight, and the Golden Horned Beast must have still been undying before... It was also impossible for the Golden Horned Beast to have created techniques at that level.

But they used the same technique! Which means they had the

same mind! Soul transfer must've happened! How? What happened?

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress couldn't figure it out after pondering the secret for a long while. He was amazed at how mysterious the universe was, and there were many inexplicable matters in the universe.

******

Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress was living on that ordinary planet while Luo Feng went back to his god country and continued the comprehension. He wanted to make a breakthrough and became a universe knight.

At the same time, in the palace surrounded by endless chaos airflow, at the apex of Thunder Island of the virtual universe, Primal Chaos City Leader sat at the edge of the cliff with his legs crossed and his eyes closed. Suddenly, a light shone beside him, and a picture with detailed descriptions showed up on the screen.

"Huh? It was sent by the virtual universe. What's the information?" Primal Chaos City Leader looked at the screen, confused. The moment he saw the screen, he grew surprised. "Luo Feng got the disambiguation mirror stone?"

"Chaos!" A sound rang in the space.

"Huge Axe," Primal Chaos City Leader responded respectfully. Only two beings in the human race could talk to him without application, and Huge Axe Creator was one of them.

"Chaos, did you know that Luo Feng used the virtual universe system to appraise the disambiguation mirror stone?" boomed the voice. "The other universe masters know it, too. I decided to hold a meeting to decide who that stone belongs to. Do you agree?"

"Yes." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded.

Primal Chaos City Leader knew that Disambiguation Stone had to do with the most important true treasure since the original stars

opened! Universe masters didn't care about ordinary true treasures at all. However, as for the pinnacle true treasures that were able to be born in The Disambiguation Temple, all the powers in the universe craved them.

It was already generous of Huge Axe Creator to hold a meeting instead of asking for it from Luo Feng directly. After all, the virtual universe system belonged to the human race! And the most senior beings in the human race were Huge Axe Creator, Primal Chaos City Leader, Void Gold Master, Spread Mountain Master, Long Yan Master, and those who were their equals. After Luo Feng appraised the disambiguation mirror stone, the virtual universe transferred the message to the seniors.

******

In a dimension in the virtual universe where there was dimming starlight in the dark, a godly palace floated in the sky.

There was a long stone bench in front of the godly palace with stone chairs on both sides. At one end of the bench was located only one stone chair, and a wild man sat in it. Suddenly, more beings showed up on the chairs on both sides of the bench. They were universe masters of the human race. Everyone arrived in no time.

"Everyone's here," the wild man said, looking sideways, but all the universe masters looked at him respectfully... Huge Axe Creator was a universe supreme master!

"Luo Feng obtained the disambiguation mirror stone," he went on, "and it's related to a valuable that can possibly be a pinnacle true treasure. It's vital to our race, but it was obtained by Luo Feng through his own power, which means we can't ask for it directly. How are we supposed to get it?"

Huge Axe Creator gave the first prerequisite: that they couldn't ask for it directly.

"The disambiguation mirror stone..." said a cold voice. "It's related to the Disambiguation Temple! Luo Feng is nothing compared to that! Just ask him to give us the stone, and we'll pay him back. Is it enough to give him a senior true treasure? We can give him more if he thinks it's not enough."

"Yes," some universe masters said, nodding. "I agree."

"Though he obtained it by himself, it would be a waste to let him keep it! After the Disambiguation Temple opens, the stone will be useless. However, that stone might bring us humans a pinnacle true treasure."

"I agree."

"I do, too."

The universe masters voiced their opinions one after another.

"Although what you said makes sense," said a gentle voice, "I need you all to remember that Luo Feng is a timeless and peerless talent of our race! And it's easy to imagine him to be proud! The disambiguation mirror stone is important, but it's also important not to damage our relationship with Luo Feng. We need to be careful, and we must learn from what happened with Flame Emperor. Luo Feng's potential is not inferior to that of Flame Emperor, and chances are that he might become a universe master in the future."

"That's different!"

"Luo Feng is completely different from Flame Emperor. Flame Emperor is extremely selfish, and he didn't even know what it meant to protect his own race. I don't feel sorry for losing him at all. Instead, I felt great about it! It would be an insult to me if I had to fight along with him!"

"Flame Emperor is different from Luo Feng."

The gentle voice continued, "For what it's worth, we all know the pride of those super talents. The more talented they are, the more

pride they have! And they'll be upset if we can't deal with it appropriately. Technically, the stone belongs to Luo Feng, and he has a right even to waste it. It'll be the best if Huge Axe brings the stone into the Temple, and it's likely for him to get the true treasure with Huge Axe's power."

"Yes."

"I agree with what Qing Dong Master said."

"We need to be careful."

"It'll be a waste to leave it with Luo Feng, but we need to come up with a good way to persuade him."

"It'll be a bit difficult to persuade Luo Feng."

Only Primal Chaos City Leader remained silent. All the universe masters agreed that it would better to placate Luo Feng. They all valued Luo Feng highly even though they were universe masters who ruled the human race.

"What do you think, Chaos?" one of them urged.

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "I won't disagree with you guys. We should take the disambiguation mirror stone back, but we can't damage our relationship with Luo Feng. We can't let Luo Feng proceed in the footsteps of Flame Emperor."

All the universe masters nodded. It was not unusual for great beings to join other powers. For one thing, in general, the families of great beings all fell. For another, the more powerful great beings became, the more confident they got, and they could be stubborn on some issues. Once they were infuriated, they would break away from the powers they belonged to.

"I'll leave this to you, Chaos," the wild man said with a grin. "You're his teacher, and he'll listen to you."

"Haha! Chaos, please take care of this."

"Haha...!"

The universe masters all broke into laughter. Primal Chaos City Leader could only nod.

"Please try everything to persuade Luo Feng," the wild man said. "The disambiguation mirror stone is related to the super true treasure in the Disambiguation Temple, after all."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "I'll try my best."

Chapter 1089: Luo Feng's Resolution

In the vast sky of Remote Ocean, a godly light could be seen, emitted by the golden sanctuary.

Luo Feng sat cross-legged in front of the sanctuary, but his eyes were looking at the limitless god country, with pictures of secret engravings running through his mind. These recollections were constantly at the back of his mind, and occasionally, he would recall the three mysterious yet marvelous techniques of teleportation, strangulation, and space sealing... Being accomplished in the studies of pictures of secret engravings had led Luo Feng's creation of technique to contain a complete set of space laws, which was why whenever he thought of those sculptures with secret engravings... he would be slightly astir with emotions.

"A little bit. Just a little bit. The feeling is getting nearer and nearer. It feels like I can gain full comprehension to achieve a breakthrough anytime. I just need a little more."

Luo Feng's brows were slightly furrowed as he stopped midway through his cultivation session. He had connected to the virtual universe with his consciousness and had received a message of high importance.

In his mail settings, messages from ordinary friends were set as "do not disturb." Only mail from important people like his wife, sons, and teacher would pass the screening test by a virtual assistant and reach him even if it would be disrupting his cultivation progress.

"Teacher Primal Chaos City Leader wants to see me?" said Luo Feng. "He wants to see me? Could it be...?"

A thought suddenly arose in Luo Feng's mind, and he could not help but start to worry.

******

In the virtual universe, an endless chaotic airflow enshrouded Thunder Island. On a winding corridor behind the palace, Luo Feng walked alongside Primal Chaos City Leader. After a few moments, Luo Feng broke the silence.

"Teacher, you summoned me here, and yet you are not saying anything. This is making me very unsettled."

"I am not saying anything because I am thinking about how I should go about convincing you. Luo Feng, you should be able to guess what I am driving at." Primal Chaos City Leader cast his gaze at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng nodded when he heard this. "I was at Primal Chaos City, and when the virtual universe system identified a disambiguation mirror stone... I knew that you were bound to call on me regarding this. Earlier on, I was still wishfully hoping that the virtual universe system would keep the secret for me and not let this news go public."

Prior to the identification, it had never crossed Luo Feng's mind that Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress coveted the disambiguation mirror stone. If he had guessed the degree of importance of this item, then the result would not have brought about such an uproar. After the identification process was completed, when Luo Feng found out it was a disambiguation mirror stone, it was all too late.

"The virtual universe system normally maintains confidentiality," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "After applying a thorough and logical judgment on the results, it must have reached a final confirmation... that this matter will affect the entire race. Therefore, it chose to forward the information to every one of us universe masters."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Now the situation is very simple," said Primal Chaos City Leader. He walked to the dining table outside the corridor and casually summoned his servants. Two servants soon entered in a

reverent manner and lined the table with a delectable spread of fine cuisine. "Luo Feng, sit. Sit while we talk."

Luo Feng followed suit and sat down. The moment he saw that there were food and drinks laid out, he knew that Primal Chaos City Leader, his teacher, was taking this matter very seriously. At the very least, he had made exquisite arrangements just for their meetup. In the past, whenever teacher and student had conversations, it was always chatting by the cliff in front of the palace or within the palace hall. This time, it was at the back of the corridor—and even called for sitting down for a conversation? This was unprecedented.

"The situation is simple, because when you were at Primal Chaos City to identify the valuable, the virtual universe system sent the information to the Huge Axe Creator and all the other universe masters of our human race." Looking at Luo Feng, Primal Chaos City Leader added, "Which means that... every great being of the human race who is a higher-up will know. How should we handle this matter? Let's make a decision."

Luo Feng's cheek twitched. Decision? He glanced over at his teacher,

Primal Chaos City Leader saw his reaction and said, "I believe you can guess the outcome."

"What outcome?" Luo Feng could not help but exclaim.

"Our race really needs this disambiguation mirror stone," Primal Chaos City Leader solemnly informed him. "The disambiguation mirror stone involves a super true treasure. The Disambiguation Temple is one of the greatest treasure vaults that has emerged during the opening of the entire Original Star. It is vital to our race! The human race may be strong and powerful, but we do not have a single supreme true treasure to reign dominance over the others. With one more domain type true treasure of a pinnacle level... it would greatly benefit our race."

"No supreme true treasure to reign dominance over the others?" Luo Feng was stunned for a moment.

The human race... had no supreme true treasures.

"We humans really do not have any supreme true treasures?" Luo Feng could not help asking.

Primal Chaos City Leader hesitated for a while, then shook his head and replied, "No. We used to. But not now."

"Used to?"

Luo Feng grew increasingly suspicious. There seemed to be more than met the eyes. Yet, according to the information he had found on the virtual universe network—especially now that his status allowed him access to much more important information—he realized that supreme true treasures were indeed an extremely rare sight in the universe.

Based on what Sitting Mountain Guest had told him, even for universe supreme beings, there were a few of them who did not own any supreme true treasures! Universe supreme beings would go crazy over supreme true treasures without fail. The predominant treasure of the universe's greatest power, the Ancestral God School... was none other than a piece of a supreme true treasure.

Through all this coveting and all the information, Luo Feng could discern the rarity of supreme true treasures, but what he had not expected was that, as strong and comparatively powerful as they were, even the Hong Alliance and the human race did not own any supreme true treasures.

"Yes, indeed, there are none." Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng and said, "Out of the top nine powers in the universe, five of them possess a supreme true treasure, but our human race certainly doesn't."

Luo Feng felt a twinge of anxiety. This was one of the

shortcomings of the human race.

"The true treasure that the disambiguation mirror stone involves should be comparable to the most important true treasure that we human race possess." Primal Chaos City Leader gazed at Luo Feng. "And all the universe masters are in consensus that... the disambiguation mirror stone is in your hands; thus you should be allowed to venture into Disambiguation Temple. But the outcome may not be ideal. If it were given to Huge Axe Creator instead, the chances of succeeding would be much higher.

"Huge Axe Creator?" Luo Feng's heart lurched. That was a universe supreme being!

"Of course, I won't force you." Primal Chaos City Leader held up his wine glass, looked at the wine through the transparent glass and continued. "The decision is yours to make." Then he looked Luo Feng straight in his eyes and said, "I hope that you will help our race this once."

Luo Feng was taken aback. Help? He was no fool, having attained the level of cultivation of today. Besides, he had led the life of a vagrant roaming the universe for 50,000 years, which had widened his horizons and allowed him a penetrating view of all the deception and dishonesty common in the universe. There were many things that he could have figured out on his own. He could have guessed why Primal Chaos City Leader summoned him here.

The negotiation tactic that Primal Chaos City Leader deployed was considerably dignified and aboveboard. There was no other method than to come up with a detailed analysis of the entire situation and present all the facts to Luo Feng outright. Then in his capacity as an honorable universe master, as well as his position of a teacher to Luo Feng, he would ask Luo Feng to help their race this once!

This put Luo Feng in a spot. He was not mentally prepared for this. He found it difficult to reject him then and there.

"Teacher..." Luo Feng began.

Primal Chaos City Leader was still looking at Luo Feng.

"This time around," Luo Feng continued, "there are 36 disambiguation mirror stones scattered all over the 10,081 original starts, yet our human race does not own a single one at all?"

"Not one." Primal Chaos City Leader raised his head to down his wine. Based on Luo Feng's question, he could already detect his unwillingness. Putting down his wine glass, he said, "The number of great beings within the human race is one of the fewest in the universe. We form the minority. Take the Northern Territory Alliance, for instance. It is the alliance with the greatest number of great beings on the universe. The number of universe knights that they have is more than 100 times that of our Hong Alliance! The more the number of great beings dispersed in the various primal stars, the higher the chances of obtaining these ambiguation mirror stones. My speculation of the situation at present is that the Northern Territory Alliance would, at most, have obtained one or two disambiguation mirror stones. After all, in contrast to the entire universe, the Northern Territory Alliance only constitutes a small portion. If even they are unlikely to own more than one, then how many can we humans possibly obtain?"

"That few?" Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

The number of heirs and universe knights of the Hong Alliance was a far cry from that of the Northern Territory Alliance. This time, in the Original Stars, the number of universe knights from the Northern Territory Alliance who had died at his hands exceeded 20.

"There is still a large batch of top-tier powers within the universe that are in the lead, like the Nine Territories Alliance and the Thorn Ring Alliance, and also some other allied powers that are much weaker... Although they are weak, their numbers are many, which is why most of the 36 disambiguation mirror stones were

taken by these powers. When the time comes, they will enter Disambiguation Temple through the 36 different paths... These powers will then get the chance to obtain even more powerful true treasures. Maybe this was a balancing method of the universe."

Luo Feng nodded his head as he listened on.

Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng and said, "Give me an answer. Are you willing or not?"

Luo Feng gave a straightforward reply. "Teacher, I am unwilling to."

Primal Chaos City Leader gave a slight frown, but his expression softened thereafter, and he said, "You are unwilling to? Out of 36 great beings entering the Disambiguation Temple this time around, there may be a few great beings who have obtained these disambiguation mirror stones that we are not acquainted with. But those going in... more than half of them range from universe masters to universe supreme beings. Others will most likely be top-tier universe overlords and universe overlords. If you do not have the capability of a universe overlord, then you do not qualify to enter! This is the rule that countless generations have observed whenever it comes to vying for the greatest treasure each time the Original Stars open. And ultimately, the ones who obtain the supreme true treasures... are almost always universe masters or universe supreme beings!"

Primal Chaos City Leader stared at Luo Feng and added, "Do you even know... what a universe supreme being is? Even for someone of my level, meeting a supreme being means doomsday has arrived. They are the most powerful and fearsome life forms within the universe." Primal Chaos City Leader was starting to sound anxious. "And you still want to go?"

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes."

It was precisely because he knew the details of the entire situation; and also, he knew that the disambiguation mirror stone

was not distributed according to how capable or how strong the great beings were, but rather, distributed at random. Therefore, strong and weak alike might stand a chance of obtaining these mirror stones. Besides, every one of these great beings would be entering through a different path, so it was all a gamble one had to take.

From a historical point of view, since countless generations before, during every opening of the Original Stars, the greatest treasure—according to what Primal Chaos City Leader knew—was most likely to be claimed by a universe master or a universe supreme being.

If I were to attain the level of a universe knight, thought Luo Feng, my godly body would become much bigger and stronger. Then Force Armor would be able to muster its third form! I might even be able to try to obtain the fifth black metal board. From what I heard from Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest, the fifth black metal board may present me with an accidental surprise. Regardless, by that time, I will already be able to mobilize Star Tower. Even if I were to face a universe supreme being, I would be able to hide in Star Tower, and he could not do anything to me!

After all, Star Tower... was a supreme true treasure!

The human race did not owe any supreme true treasure; Star Tower did not have a master to control it and was placed out of any territory and on the battlefield. This had brought about war among the four pinnacle races, where universe supreme beings went crazy for them but no one could claim it. This was power!

Luo Feng counted upon Star Tower... Naturally, he was fearless of any other being. He was brimming with confidence.

The Disambiguation Temple... of course he would be the one going in! If he got stronger, his race would get stronger likewise.

"Don't you feel that your abilities may not make the grade?" Primal Chaos City Leader could not help but ask. "Going there is

too dangerous for you."

"Teacher," Luo Feng said, looking at Primal Chaos City Leader. "Your disciple now possess the power of a top-tier universe overlord."

Chapter 1090: My Home Planet: Earth

There were all sorts of delicious dishes from different territories in the universe, but Luo Feng hadn't touched any of them. Primal Chaos City Leader poured the wine and looked at Luo Feng.

"Top-tier universe overlord?" said Primal Chaos City Leader. "I know that your godly body can rival that of a universe knight, and you have your Remote Ocean body to serve as an endless godly power source. And your Golden Horned Beast body is also 600 miles long. And with your senior true treasure armor... Even a top-tier universe overlord will find it difficult to kill you, but that doesn't mean you're at that level."

However, Luo Feng gazed at his teacher firmly.

Primal Chaos City Leader gazed right back at Luo Feng. "Are you sure?" he asked.

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes."

"Did you kill all those universe knights of other races?" Primal Chaos City Leader couldn't help asking.

Luo Feng nodded.

Primal Chaos City Leader kept staring at Luo Feng. He was a witness to Luo Feng's rise in power, and it was beyond his imagination how quickly he had improved. What Luo Feng had just said was terrifying, yet Primal Chaos City Leader found it almost convincing based on their relationship for 100,000 years.

"We'll talk about it later!" Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head. "Luo Feng, I'm your teacher, so trust me, I'm doing it for your best interest."

"Please continue, teacher," said Luo Feng.

"The disambiguation mirror stone is related to the most important true treasure ever—since the original stars have

opened," Primal Chaos City Leader said solemnly. "The universe masters and Huge Axe Creator know that you have a disambiguation mirror stone. Although they won't force you to give them the stone, they'll be upset with you if you don't. You're meant to be one of the top seniors of us humans, and it would be unwise for you to upset them now."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Even if you have the power of a top-tier universe overlord," Primal Chaos City Leader went on, "it's not going to help you much. Half the beings who will enter the Disambiguation Temple are universe overlords, and there might even be one or two universe supreme masters! Though the 36 portals give special consideration to the weak, power is all that matters in the end. It must be universe masters or even universe supreme masters who fight for the true treasure! Even you, someone as strong as a top-tier universe overlord, will have to back down."

Primal Chaos City Leader gazed at Luo Feng. Luo Feng said nothing.

"If you insist on going," said Primal Chaos City Leader, "not only will you upset universe overlords, but you won't be able to get the true treasure either. Why do that?"

He had begun this conversation from the perspective of the race, and now he was trying to sway Luo Feng from the perspective of costs and benefits. He only had one goal: to persuade Luo Feng to hand over the disambiguation mirror stone.

"Besides," he continued, "our race will make it up to you. After all, you're the owner of the disambiguation mirror stone. How much do you think a disambiguation mirror stone is worth? 20 true treasure points? 30 true treasure points? Our race will definitely give you compensation if you give it up."

Luo Feng couldn't help sighing. If it had been a universe master who gained the stone, there wouldn't have been this much trouble.

The race was talking to him politely because he had the potential to become one of the top-tier seniors. If Luo Feng were only an ordinary universe knight, their attitude at the moment might have been completely different. However, he had obtained the disambiguation mirror stone by himself! The stone belonged to him!

Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng. "I hope that you will hand it in."

Luo Feng wouldn't have given a darn if it were any other universe masters trying to persuade him, but Primal Chaos City Leader had been generous to him by leading him and guiding him.

"Teacher, did you just say that our race will compensate me if I contribute it to our race?" Luo Feng took a deep breath. "I don't have high requirements... I'll hand in the disambiguation mirror stone if I can get half the ownership of Earth back! Which means I want Earth, my home planet, back!"

"Is this the only condition?"

"If you say yes," said Luo Feng, "I'll hand in the disambiguation mirror stone to our race. I want nothing more than the other half of ownership of Earth. If you say no, then I won't give away the stone."

Primal Chaos City Leader was dazed. "Earth?"

"Yes, Earth." Luo Feng nodded.

Silence. Both supreme beings sitting at two sides of the dining table both had gone silent.

"You want Earth back?" Primal Chaos City Leader said gradually after staying silent for a long while. "What are you going to do about the immigrants from foreign planets?"

"When I lost half my ownership to 50 billion mixed elements," Luo Feng said solemnly. "I also allowed in lots of immigrants from other planets to live in the oceans and floating cities in the sky

above the oceans. However, they're after immigrants instead of earthlings! The Earth is the origin place of us earthlings, and it's my home planet. I'll ask those immigrants from foreign planets. Mainland and oceans. They all belong to earthlings!"

He could only give away half the ownership of the Earth under pressure from his race! However, Luo Feng had been waiting to get Earth back! In the past years, the immigrants had been arrogant, and Luo Feng could only try to stop them from behaving recklessly. However, the immigrants looked down upon the earthlings from the bottom of their hearts. The blue planet belonged to earthlings, after all!

"You want to chase them out?" Primal Chaos City Leader whispered.

"Teacher, I gave it away for 50 billion mixed elements only." Luo Feng smiled. "50 billion mixed elements isn't even worthy of a treasure. I'm offering the disambiguation mirror stone now! If you calculate the benefits, it's millions of times more valuable!"

"I understand." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "I can't decide on this issue, but I'll give you an answer soon."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng wasn't a fool, and neither was he a fool who would buy into something like making a "sacrifice" for the race. He wouldn't give away a valuable to make another great being stronger!

Ever since Luo Feng first stepped off his home planet, he had been carrying the responsibility of the Earth! The fate and future of the earthlings depended on him, which was why he wouldn't give up any opportunities to become more powerful. Besides, he had obtained the disambiguation mirror stone by himself!

The Disambiguation Temple was the most important valuable since the original stars opened! Luo Feng really wanted to go there. But his teacher had asked him personally, and his teacher was

sincere. Taking back Earth was a more important dream to Luo Feng! Compared to taking back Earth, disambiguation mirror stone was much less significant.

Taking back Earth is not an easy task in my plan, thought Luo Feng. If I can take this opportunity to take back Earth, I won't care about the disambiguation mirror stone.

The race and the Earth. Though Luo Feng had a sense of belonging to the human race, he had much stronger ties to Earth! He was, first and foremost, the leader of the earthlings and carried the fate of Earth! He was a member of the human race second. Besides, the disambiguation mirror stone was only something that could make the humans stronger. It had nothing to do with the destiny of the human race... He didn't need to worry about that.

******

Starlight shone brightly in space as the universe masters sat on both sides of the bench.

"Has he agreed, Chaos?"

"Is there an issue? Did Luo Feng say no to you, his teacher?"

"How can he say no? It will be a waste to leave him with the disambiguation mirror stone! I'll go talk to him if you failed."

Huge Axe Creator glanced around, and all the universe masters went silent.

"Chaos, tell them," Huge Axe Creator said.

"Luo Feng said yes." Primal Chaos City Leader looked around at the other universe masters. "But he gave one condition."

"Nice."

"He agreed?"

"It's good that he agreed! As for the condition, we'll compensate him."

"What is his condition?"

Some universe masters asked while others simply stared at Primal Chaos City Leader said. He wouldn't have summoned them if the issue were simple.

Primal Chaos City Leader continued, "His condition is straightforward... He wants the other half of ownership of Earth. The Earth is his home planet! We bought the Earth for 50 billion mixed elements, and after that, all the powers were able to send their candidates to Earth. Now, he wants Earth back."

"But what about the candidates of other clans?" said a cold voice.

"Luo Feng wants to drive out all the candidates from foreign planets and leave only the earthlings," said Primal Chaos City Leader.

"No way!"

"Certainly unthinkable."

"Not possible!"

The universe masters voiced their opinions one by one, irritated at the very idea. Earth had drawn special attention when it was discovered... However, when Huge Axe Creator deemed that Earth was a special planet created by Sitting Mountain Guest, the universe masters were only curious. They hadn't realized how precious Earth was.

However, after 100,000 years, generations of candidates from foreign planets were born on Earth. And all the candidates born there were more likely to have better comprehension, which led to better dispositions, and higher chances of becoming great beings and talents!

"Disposition" was an attribute that appeared unimportant at the start of training, but the more powerful one got, the more important it became! This amazed the universe masters. What an amazing planet—Earth! What an amazing achievement by

Mountain Sitting Guest!

The descendants born on Earth had completely different souls, which made them more likely to have better dispositions. For 100,000 years, there had been a large group of geniuses and great beings, and there were numerous sector lords. As time went by, Earth might become a mighty clan within the human race, like the Flame God Race! And compared to Flame God Race, the earthlings had higher potential!

"No way!" the universe masters said.

"That's a specially made planet by Mountain Sitting Guest. It's priceless!"

"Ask him to change a condition."

Chapter 1091: Turmoil

"Earth? No way."

"The disambiguation mirror stones. There are 36 of them. There is no way that one can replace Earth!"

Seeing how the other universe masters were disagreeing, Primal Chaos City Leader could not help but frown as he spoke. "Back when I came forward in the capacity of the Virtual Universe Company, I spent a mere 50 billion mixed elements to buy Earth's ocean ownership rights. Those 50 billion mixed elements were not a one-time payment; it was split into three installments. Now that I am using this disambiguation mirror stone to trade... I think the amount should be about the same."

"Primal Chaos City Leader!"

"Primal Chaos City Leader!"

Two universe masters called out at the same time. They looked at each other, then one of them—a giant with three sharp horns and a body covered with a scaly armor—said in a deep, low voice, "Back then, Luo Feng was a mere nobody. 50 billion mixed elements was a sky-high amount. Although you signed a contract in the name of the Virtual Universe Company... you also have an agreement with us, the Universe Mercenary Alliance, and some other parties! The Earth's ocean ownership rights and ocean high-altitude ownership rights are shared among the five of us! All five of us have sent our descendants down to dwell on Earth. It has been 100,000 years since then, due to the unique characteristics of Earth, which you all should already know.

"What an amazing planet! The children who are born on Earth could be so much stronger in their ability to learn and acquire power. While their initial speed of improvement matches that of descendants on other planets, as time goes by, with continual learning and acquisition, the rate at which they improve far

surpasses descendants on other planets. Sitting Mountain Guest is unbelievably remarkable. To think he could create such a planet! Who knows how many years he spent creating a planet where the souls of babies could undergo evolutionary changes? This is really too incredible for words." The giant sighed in awe. "Sitting Mountain Guest really lives up to his status as the most senior of all universe supreme beings."

Positioned at the highest societal level of the human race, they all knew about Sitting Mountain Guest. The human race might have universe supreme beings, but during the time when the universe was just emerging, humans were like toddlers stumbling about as they learned how to walk, slowly and unsteadily multiplying in numbers. At that time, the special life forms that ran rampant in the universe were the invincible beings. These special life forms were naturally endowed with strength and power, like the Eight Natural Beast Gods...

As for Sitting Mountain Guest, during the most ancient period following the birth of the universe, he had already become a loner among the universe supreme beings.

"Earth is continually creating great beings," the giant continued in his low, deep voice. "It can create such a huge branch like the human race, giving it value not inferior to that of a pinnacle domain type true treasure. There is no way I will agree to trade it for anything that easily!"

"I disagree, too."

"Disagreed."

Authoritative figures of the two major powers, the Universe First Bank and the Universe Star River Bank, voiced their disagreements together. This worried Primal Chaos City Leader. He gave a slight frown.

"So, the disambiguation mirror stone. What should be done about it?" Huge Axe Creator's booming voice sounded from his

throne. "If no one is willing to return Earth, then Luo Feng will not be handing over the disambiguation mirror stone."

"What our human race lacks is a supreme true treasure!" the giant continued. "As for the pinnacle domain type true treasure... considering this level, the human race already owns quite a few pieces. Besides, the disambiguation mirror stone only represents a chance of obtaining a true treasure of a pinnacle level. Haven't we met with quite a number of similar chances so far? Like the Universe Ocean... If we dared to go all-out, it is possible to obtain a pinnacle domain type true treasure anytime."

"With a one in 36 chance of obtaining a pinnacle domain type true treasure! Using this to trade for Earth is out of the question."

"That's right."

"I agree with Deserted Mirror."

The authoritative figures of the Universe Mercenary Alliance, Universe First Bank, and Universe Star River Bank voiced their opinions.

"Dear all. My disciple, Luo Feng," Primal Chaos City Leader began. "His ability has reached that of a top-tier universe overlord standard."

Hua!

All the universe masters, including Huge Axe Creator, looked over.

"Primal Chaos City Leader, you are not kidding?"

"Luo Feng just started cultivation not long ago. A top-tier universe overlord?"

"Have you witnessed it personally?"

"It can't be true."

"Impossible."

Not a single one of the universe masters could believe that Luo Feng, who had only 10,000 years' worth of cultivation and had only become undying 20,000 years ago was now at the top-tier universe overlord level. In the entire universe, almost no one would have found such a claim believable.

"Primal Chaos City Leader, is it true?" Huge Axe Creator could not help asking.

Primal Chaos City Leader scanned his surroundings. Then, with a slight nod, he replied, "I have yet to test it for myself. However, we have been teacher and disciple for 10,000 years, and based on my understanding of him... if he dares say so, it must be true!"

"You have yet to test him personally."

"So, this claim is not tested or proven yet."

The universe masters who had not really crossed paths with Luo Feng laughed and shook their heads.

Deserted Mirror, the authoritative figure of the Universe Mercenary Alliance laughed aloud. "Primal Chaos City Leader, Luo Feng may be using the disambiguation mirror stone and matters on Earth to add to his capital. He is taking advantage of his relationship with you. He may be saying it on purpose because he has faith that you, his teacher, will believe him."

"Deserted Mirror, you think my disciple is like yours?" Primal Chaos City Leader said, his eyes burning with a trace of anger.

Deserted Mirror smiled but did not dare say anything further. After all, Primal Chaos City Leader wielded the highest authority in the Virtual Universe Company. In terms of ability or status, no one else present, other than Huge Axe Creator, was qualified to oppress him! Furthermore, even the primal universe was under his jurisdiction... All of these accolades raised Primal Chaos City Leader's status by leaps and bounds.

Out of the five major powers within the human race, Huge Axe

Dojo and the Virtual Universe Company were the strongest; the Universe Mercenary Alliance, the Universe First Bank, and the Universe Star River Bank were one notch lower.

"If Luo Feng claims to be a top-tier universe overlord and wants to try his hand at entering the Disambiguation Temple, let him be. He needs to taste a little suffering. As for trading back Earth... the disambiguation mirror stone is a far cry from sufficient."

"A disambiguation mirror stone in exchange for the Earth's ownership rights is definitely unacceptable."

Primal Chaos City Leader suppressed a sigh as he noted the circumstances. Noble beings such as these universe masters... How strange their temperaments were! Cold and arrogant, obstinate and unruly, kind to look at but ruthless in heart. These beings had so many faces! They could steer clear from touching the bottom line, so humans naturally would tolerate their presence. These super beings enjoyed special privileges, so long as they did not touch the bottom line!

Out of all the universe masters, Primal Chaos City Leader was usually the one who presided major events pertaining to issues of the human race. He was also the one who always held such issues in the highest regard.

From his point of view, Earth might be important, but regardless of whether geniuses were cultivated by other major powers, or cultivated by human dwellers living on Earth—weren't they all essentially part of the human race? Overall, the human race was still strong and powerful and able to earn Luo Feng's gratitude and loyalty. Furthermore, the humans' territory was vast... even if there was a branch of Earth that was comparable to the Yan Shen race, it was still only a small part of the overall power of the human race.

The current matter concerns their own benefits, so none of them are willing to relent easily, thought Primal Chaos City Leader and

sighed inwardly.

From his throne, Huge Axe Creator shouted his orders. "This discussion shall end here!"

The other universe masters fell silent as they looked toward him.

"Primal Chaos City Leader," Huge Axe Creator said, looking at him.

With a slight bow to indicate his respect, Primal Chaos City Leader was on all ears.

"You have to inform Luo Feng that using the disambiguation mirror stone to exchange for Earth's ownership rights is impossible. If he is unwilling to accept our other proposals, the race will not force him to." Huge Axe Creator smiled. "As for Earth's ownership rights... do tell him that so long as his ability and power could attain a certain level that is considered sufficient, then of course, nothing is impossible."

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "I understand."

On the contrary, the other universe masters were a little caught by surprise.

"Huge Axe Creator."

"Huge Axe Creator, this..."

Huge Axe Creator's gaze scanned the hall as he said coldly, "The time when Luo Feng is able to sit here with us will be the time to return Earth's ownership rights to him."

A couple of universe masters could only lower their heads in compliance.

When Huge Axe Creator gave out orders, not a single soul in the human race would dare to go against him.

******

Luo Feng caught wind of the news very quickly.

When he heard the news from his teacher, Luo Feng was understandably angry. But he also saw a glimmer of hope. He was mad because a mere 50 billion mixed elements had bought half the Earth's ownership rights, but now, even with his disambiguation mirror stone that was worth 10,000 times more—or even a million times more. Yet he could not even use it to exchange for the ownership rights!

As for the glimmer of hope, he was looking forward to the promise Huge Axe Creator made to him!

That shows how important the Earth is, thought Luo Feng. It will not be returned to me so easily. Sitting together with them, is it? Soon. Earth... ultimately belongs to us Earthlings.

For close to 100,000 years, he had been diligently cultivating himself to become stronger and more powerful so that one fine day, he could hold up the entire sky for his fellow earthlings! He would do that because he was the greatest being of all the earthlings—the "God" that they worshipped. He would become the spiritual leader for all earthlings!

Actually, back when Luo Feng first stepped into the universe, especially when he was a horde leader of Earth, he had warded off many rounds of danger for Earth, which was the reason the earthlings worshipped him.

There were those who worshipped him simply for who he was! There were those who worshipped him immensely as a hero!

As time passed, day after day, year after year, they naturally came to worship him even more. Especially the earthlings who were roaming the universe like Luo Feng, who came to know more about the benefits he had brought them. From then up to 100,000 years later... the worshipping of Luo Feng, being handed down to many generations thereafter, had eventually led to Luo Feng becoming a symbol—and a leader of the human race on Earth!

"My power will soon be able to completely protect the human

race living on Earth," Luo Feng said to himself.

******

At the Northern Territory Alliance, in the palace of Star River Master.

"Star River Master."

Flourishing Light Horde Leader's two heads were bowed and full of respect.

A voice sounded amidst the darkness that shrouded the palace. "Alliance Master has resurrected you. But you were saying... The one who killed you was Luo Feng?"

"Yes," Flourishing Light Horde Leader replied respectfully. "He killed me with one strike—with just only one strike!"

Luo Feng had left the Beast God sector to return to the primal universe, and when he arrived back at the Original Star once again... he was a mobile treasury in human form, ripe for the picking by the great beings of other races. Back then, the first one to cross paths with him had been Flourishing Light Horde Leader, and he had been killed by Luo Feng with a single strike of his sword.

"Are you sure it was Luo Feng? With only one strike?" asked the voice amidst the darkness again.

"Star River Master, I am dead sure," said Flourishing Light Horde Leader. "This was the scene of how he killed me back then!"

Flourishing Light horde leader replied deferentially as he recalled his memories through his godly power, playing it as though it were a video clip. Luo Feng's cold and sharp blade transformed into a dazzling golden light. With one strike, it sliced through Flourishing Light Horde Leader's ordinary true treasure armor and sent him to kingdom come without hesitation.

Silence.

Star River Master went silent, too. He had resurrected a great number of universe knights, and had already heard of a few claiming that they had been killed by Luo Feng... That implied that Luo Feng already had the power of a universe overlord.

But Flourishing Light Horde Leader was a universe overlord! And just one strike was enough to kill him... That sort of power was only possible by a top-tier universe overlord.

"Becoming undying in just 2,000 years..." The voice in the dark space was full of shock. "Send out my orders."

The voice resonated throughout the entire palace grounds and was heard by all the universe knights, who immediately went about carrying out his orders.

"The human, Luo Feng, possess the power of a top-tier universe overlord, and his power is comparable to that of the human, Heaven Erosion Palace Master. Send out this information to the whole universe. Everyone in the universe must know, especially powers like the bug soldiers, demons, and automaton race—all those who bear great enmity against the human race! They are bound to go through any means to eliminate Luo Feng as soon as they can. He was able to attain Heaven Erosion Palace Master's standard in such a short time. If he has another few hundred years, then won't the human race have another great being like Primal Chaos City Leader?"

"Yes!"

"Yes!"

"Yes!"

Every universe knight within the palace grounds received the order.

******

News started spreading out quickly from every channel of the Northern Territory Alliance. The Northern Territory Alliance was

one of the biggest super powers within the universe, with the highest number of races and a massive number of universe knights. When they initiated the dissemination of news, word spread quickly.

Within one day, all nine great powers of the universe, various top-tier powers—almost everyone in the entire vast universe—had heard the news.

The news naturally reached the human race, too, and every human universe knight caught wind of it. True Yan Knight, Bound Time Knight, Sir Nine Blade, Ganwu Country Master, Heaven Erosion Palace Master, Undying Knight, Gui Yi Knight... All of them received this universe-shattering news about an unbelievably incredible life form who was powerful beyond comprehension—Luo Feng. The one who had thrown into turmoil every higher-up in all the various races in the universe.

Chapter 1092: My Heart is Peaceful

Inside Flame God Territory, in the main palace surrounded by endless flames.

"That human Luo Feng has the power of a top-tier universe overlord? He killed Flourishing Light Horde Leader with one attack? Not possible!" Flame Emperor raged and roared, and his eyes were glinting with madness. He was innately proud, and he was proud of being cultivated by Mountain Sitting Guest.

He looked down upon his older brother, as he was originally a slave of his teacher, and he had inferior potential and true treasures compared to him. He already craved to become an equal of Mountain Sitting Guest or even stronger!

However, after Luo Feng showed up, Mountain Sitting Guest also devoted his time and energies to this third disciple, and he had even prepared a supreme true treasure Star Tower for Luo Feng! Flame Emperor longed for that supreme true treasure, but it was no use. He had been wary of that third brother, as he found him to be the biggest threat to him.

"100,000 years!" Flame Emperor growled. "How is it possible for him to have the power of a top-tier universe overlord in only 100,000 years! How is it possible? It must be teacher Mountain Sitting Guest! It's got to be because of his arrangements! Luo Feng isn't capable of accomplishing that all by himself! Teacher Mountain Sitting Guest favors third brother too much! He gave him the supreme true treasure! And now he helped him gain the power of a top-tier universe overlord after he's been undying for only 20,000 years."

Flame Emperor's face twisted with fury. "Just wait and see... Just wait and see, Teacher Mountain Sitting Guest! He'll never catch up with me, even with your help! I'll always be his better! I'll be stronger—stronger even than you!"

The space around Flame Emperor cracked, and the eyes under his sole horn looked crazed and terrifying.

******

The news was widely spread, and it shocked all the powers in the universe.

Para-chopper Knight from the bug race had been resurrected. He had a senior true treasure armor yet was still killed by Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng was the one who killed me," Para-chopper Knight said. "I had a senior true treasure armor, but one attack from him damaged more than half of my godly body, and two attacks killed me directly!"

That news was more shocking! A universe overlord wearing a senior true treasure armor being killed by two attacks was even more terrifying than Flourishing Light Horde Leader being killed by one!

"A senior true treasure? A universe overlord was killed even while wearing a senior true treasure?"

"That's outrageous."

"He must be a top-tier universe overlord!"

"What a coincidence! The Bug Race Alliance gave out the news right after the Northern Territory Alliance gave out the news."

"It's extremely difficult to resurrect a universe overlord. Para-chopper Knight must have been revived after the news spread that Flourishing Light Horde Leader was killed by Luo Feng... The bug race resurrected Para-chopper Knight just to verify the news. Nobody expected Para-chopper Knight to say something so shocking."

The two pieces of news were spread in one day, and they took the universe by storm!

******

Inside the universe owned by the automaton race.

Countless threads were connecting the planets and stars, giving the universe the appearance of a gigantic net.

A voice resounded in every corner in that universe. "My children," it said, "that human who's only been training for 100,000 years is so powerful that he can kill a universe overlord wearing a senior true treasure? Is that true?"

"Father God, I've contacted the Thorn Ring Alliance, and they said it's true."

"I've done my research as well, and it is true. I've seen the footage of Para-chopper Knight being killed."

"Father God, we can't leave Luo Feng alive!"

"Father God!"

Automation race was a peculiar race, as all the members in the race were intelligent life forms, but there was a command for them to obey at their very core! They surrendered themselves completely to the greatest being in the automation race, a universe supreme being known as "Father God." They would happily die if it was a command from their Father God, and there was an exceptional bond among the creatures within automaton race.

Father God's voice was spread all across the universe, saying, "It's only been 20,000 years since he became undying, and he has the power of a top-tier universe overlord now. He'll definitely be a threat to our race if we just let him roam free! My children, follow my order. Search for Luo Feng and kill him! We must kill him before he becomes a universe master!"

"Yes."

"Yes, Father God!"

******

The automaton race, bug race, and demon race were all terrified.

The human race, bug race, demon race, and automaton race lived nearby each other, and they had been fighting against each other for an eternity. There had been a myriad of feuds among them, and one great being after another was born in the course of war! They looked down upon prison race and the crystal race.

Once a particular race of the four pinnacle races became stronger, other three races would often form an alliance without discussion. The other three races would take action if an exceptional genius was born, as they couldn't allow any one power among them to be visibly stronger! Of course, if a race suddenly stumbled and fell, it would be a pleasant surprise to the other three races. The responses to news of Luo Feng came as expected.

"He's been growing too fast!"

"He'll be another Primal Chaos City Leader if we let him roam free. We must kill him as soon as possible. Otherwise, he'll become so powerful that even universe supreme masters aren't able to kill him!"

"Kill him!"

"Kill him before he becomes a universe master!"

"Pass along my order! Every great being on the original stars should keep an eye on Luo Feng!"

"Pass along my order!"

The automaton race, bug race, and demon race all made this a top priority. They all knew that if a supreme being was born within the race, like Nine Remoteness Master—although he wasn't technically a universe supreme master—he could make all the pinnacle races desperate.

Luo Feng had an inherited technique: clone! He could be reborn even if one of his godly bodies was killed! A powerful universe master with clone technique would be a nightmare to enemy races! And he would definitely become a pillar of his own race.

"We must kill him!"

******

The Northern Territory Alliance also wanted Luo Feng dead, but they felt relatively relieved. They knew that the automaton race, demon race, and bug race ought to be the anxious ones! As for the Ancestral God School, the Space Beast Alliance, the prison race, and they crystal race... They were looking forward to watching the fight among the four pinnacle races.

"That human Luo Feng is indeed incredible."

"If he can survive this and become a universe master, nobody will be able to hurt him."

******

No one was more shocked than the human race.

In the open-air bar in the virtual universe, most of the universe knights had gathered. Normally, there were only a few thousand of them, but today, more than 90 percent of the universe knights of the human race were here! Universe knights of other races were also here. There were discussions everywhere.

"Is Luo Feng that incredible?"

"He's improved too fast!"

"Even Flame Emperor can't compare with him."

Jealousy was to be expected in the face of such power, just as how Luo Feng had upset many universe knights when he'd moved to the mountainside of Thunder Island. However, Luo Feng had exceptional power now. He was so powerful that he could kill a universe overlord with one attack... That kind of power was awed by universe knights.

"It's a miracle."

"Legendary!"

"It's a miracle within our race! Where's True Yan Knight? He's Luo Feng's teacher."

"True Yan turned off his communications already. Perhaps too many universe knights are looking for him."

Ganwu Universe Country Master was also laughing loudly. Other universe knights were all talking about Luo Feng. Ganwu Universe Country Master was a bit dazed, but he became happy instantly. After all, Luo Feng was close to him. He was the teacher of Luo Feng's son!

"Is Luo Feng's son your disciple?"

"Haha, yes."

"Luo Feng has a son."

******

Inside the god country, the endless Remote Ocean was tumbling and expanding. Lots of creatures were being created, and they expanded the Remote Ocean.

"It's crazy."

Luo Feng was sitting in the godly temple, soaked in golden light. He shook his head and smiled. He had known he couldn't hide the fact that he had killed all those universe knights and universe overlords. He knew that the news would be impossible to keep quiet once those great beings were resurrected. However, he hadn't expected everyone to be so angry about it.

After talking with Primal Chaos City Leader and True Yan Knight, he turned off the acceptance of the virtual universe.

"I'll keep practicing."

Luo Feng closed his eyes and smiled. It was filled with hustle and bustle out there, but it was tranquil and peaceful in his god country.

Hua! Hua!

The water in the endless Remote Ocean was flowing. All was a racket outside! But it was quiet in his god country.

"Teleportation, hang, seal," Luo Feng whispered.

He opened his eyes, and his godly power triggered law threads. Three broken engraving pictures showed up in the sky, and they merged. A perfect engraving picture showed up. It was an engraving picture that looked like the seventh picture of the "Nine Universe Primal Chaos Tablet."

"I've finished the space law," Luo Feng said with a smile.

Hong! Long!

Endless universe origin law arrived at the god country, and the Remote Ocean started to churn.

Chapter 1093: The Foundation Is Built

Above the boundless Remote Ocean was a gigantic five-colored whirlpool with a diameter of tens of billions of miles. It covered the sky above the Remote Ocean. Gold, wood, water, fire, and ground—all five laws were perfectly merged. At the center of the whirlpool was a space, and it was emanating endless force of space law origin!

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Unlimited godly power flooded out from the space and poured into the boundless Remote Ocean.

"It's incredible when the universe origin arrives." Luo Feng looked up and was amazed.

Many beings became universe knights throughout history, and there was lots of footage thereof. Luo Feng had watched some footages of the breakthroughs of other great beings, and every time someone made a breakthrough, a five-colored space whirlpool of space origin ocean would arrive.

However, the five-colored space whirlpools were generally small, with a diameter of around 60 miles. Yet the whirlpool above him had a diameter of tens of billions of miles!

Hua! Hua!

Endless godly power poured out.

Hong! Long! Long!

They dashed into the boundless Remote Ocean like a waterfall while the Remote Ocean body kept absorbing the godly power to help him finish the transformation from an undying fighter to a universe knight.

"The scene I caused when I became undying was more incredible than many great beings becoming universe knights. Though the

scene now is not as mysterious as those who become universe masters, it's still as powerful as supreme beings becoming universe masters."

Luo Feng was thrilled. The scene during the breakthrough indicated one's power. The godly body would become 100 times stronger when someone graduated to a universe knight from an undying fighter!

Normally, human beings' power would surge to 10 million times that of a sector lord from 100,000 times that of a sector lord. However, Luo Feng's Boundless Remote Ocean and Golden Horned Beast had both reached perfect life gene levels, and the godly power in their natural state was already 10,081 times! The Golden Horned Beast and the boundless Remote Ocean could swallow immense amounts of power!

"Seize the moment! I must seize every minute and every second to swallow the godly power and transform my godly bodies."

Luo Feng looked up at the sky. Unlimited godly power was pouring from the billion-mile portal.

"Absorb! Absorb! Absorb!"

The waves were tumbling in the boundless Remote Ocean. It was swallowed the waters of godly power voraciously, eager to trigger the transformation in his body.

Generally, when someone without another body, like True Yan Knight, became a universe knight, the universe origin would arrive on top of the individual directly so that he could swallow the godly power more efficiently! As for those who had other bodies, like Luo Feng, the universe origin would arrive on top of the largest body with the most energy so that it could swallow godly power more efficiently.

Luo Feng's original earthling body, Golden Horned Beast body, and Mosha body were scattered across the universe. When he

became a universe knight, the universe origin showed up above the boundless Remote Ocean, which could absorb godly power much more quickly than the Golden Horned Beast body or the original earthling body. The universe always arrived at the best choice.

The universe origin only stayed for a while. Only when someone became undying could they absorb as much energy as they wanted to transform their godly bodies; on the contrary, when becoming a universe knight or universe master, the time allotted for absorbing godly power was very short. This meant that the amount of power one was able to absorb depended on his strengths.

After a short while, everything withered away. The boundless Remote Ocean turned peaceful again, but the godly power was being transformed. Luo Feng, Golden Horned Beast body, and Mosha body were looking down. The other three bodies Luo Feng had were easily transformed, with their godly bodies becoming 100 times stronger.

The Remote Ocean is too large, thought Luo Feng. Even though it tried to absorb the power as much as possible, only 12 percent of it was transformed.

After almost 20,000 years, the boundless Remote Ocean had grown to a diameter of almost 12 billion miles. Though the Remote Ocean body absorbed an incredible amount of power, only 12 percent of it was transformed.

"When Teacher True Yan became a universe knight, 92 percent of his godly power was transformed," Luo Feng murmured. "Normally, 90 percent of the godly bodies of human great beings are transformed, and once in a while, that amount can reach 100 percent. As for the Golden Horned Beasts from Space Beast Alliance, 50 percent can be transformed."

Regardless, 50 percent of the Golden Horned Beasts' godly power was zillions of times greater than that of humans. And 12 percent of the boundless Remote Ocean's godly power was also zillions of

times more than that of Golden Horned Beasts.

"With this boundless Remote Ocean, I might be able to kill even a top-tier universe overlord if I perform 'I Am the Universe."

Luo Feng was thrilled. It was difficult even for universe masters to kill top-tier universe overlords. It would be difficult for him as well; however, it would be more likely if he used I Am the Universe. Although he had never fought a universe master, he realized that he was not significantly weaker than universe masters.

"It is difficult for universe masters to kill top-tier universe overlords," he said. "I'm 100 times stronger. If I meet universe masters... I'll definitely fight them."

Luo Feng looked down at the boundless Remote Ocean and could feel the churning godly power in his body.

******

A god country was the root of an undying fighter! As undying fighters became stronger, their god countries would also morph. Luo Feng had reached perfect life gene level when he was only a sector lord, and the diameter of his internal world reached 600 billion miles, which was why his god country was stronger than that of many universe knights when he had just become undying.

After 20,000 years, the boundless Remote Ocean kept expanding. The god country also gradually became stronger, but it was not a sharp change.

At the moment when Luo Feng became a universe knight, however, his god country was fundamentally changed.

Hong! Long!

The sky and land trembled. The god country was gradually transformed while absorbing the godly power from the boundless Remote Ocean. The Remote Ocean was letting out his godly power slowly to make sure it could recover it. Of course, the absolute

amount of godly power let out was already terrifying based on the volume of the Remote Ocean.

"It's stable!" said Luo Feng. "I have better control!"

He looked up at the boundless sky and land, and it was like looking watching a shack turn into a mansion. The god country before could have been easily damaged or even destroyed if a universe master had tried, but his god country now might not even be damaged even if a universe master gave all his efforts to the task.

After three days, everything went back to normal. In the sky above the boundless Remote Ocean, a towering temple was surrounded by dark space, emanating endless space law power.

Luo Feng stood in front of the temple and looked off into the distance. A being flew toward him.

Remote Ocean body is here, Luo Feng thought.

After his god country had finished being reconstructed, he had summoned back Remote Ocean body, who had been busy guarding Earth.

Hua!

Remote Ocean body immediately dismantled, and godly power merged with the boundless Remote Ocean. His armor and blade floated in the sky. After a short while, another Remote Ocean body was created using Luo Feng's inherited technique "Creation." The quality of the godly power of the newly created Remote Ocean body could rival that of Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress—a universe knight who was a special life form with a life gene level of 1,000 times!

Remote Ocean body just became 100 times stronger, Luo Feng thought. I bet he can suppress even the most powerful World Tree! He's adequate to guard Earth. And I can get back there in time if he encounters something tricky.

"Haha... Four bodies," said Luo Feng. "My boundless Remote Ocean is the fountain which provides unlimited godly power. Star Tower, Force Armor, and Beast God Armor... All of them are exceptional true treasures, and my godly body has reached a perfect status for universe knights. With my strong god country, I don't need to be afraid of universe masters. I've successfully built my foundation. I won't need to fear anything after I get Star Tower."

Luo Feng's eyes glinted ferociously. It was so forceful that the entire god country trembled. He hadn't hidden his identity when he killed Para-chopper Knight and Flourishing Light Horde Leader, as he'd known that it was almost time for him to show his true power to the entire universe.

"I, Luo Feng, won't need to be afraid anyone after becoming a universe knight. I've built my foundation. Other races, it's too late for you to kill me now."

Luo Feng turned around and disappeared into his god country.

******

Inside a spaceship traveling to the primal universe.

"Mr. Luo Feng."

When Luo Feng entered the spaceship, that emperor-level captain was startled. He was responsible for transportation between the virtual universe headquarters and the primal universe, so he knew that the peerless genius Luo Feng had become a mighty, supreme being who was much more powerful than ordinary universe knights. There were many beings of other races who were dying to kill him.

"Don't tell anyone about Mr. Luo Feng—be mindful of spies." This was an order from the seniors of the human race, and the captain knew of it.

"Leave," said Luo Feng. "I don't need servants."

"Yes, Mr. Luo Feng." The captain left the room and gave the order. "Time to go!"

Some undying fighters and sector lords who wanted to go to the primal universe grew anxious.

"We haven't boarded yet!"

"Wait for us!"

"Why did the spaceship leave before we board?"

The captain said, "Tell the head office that this spaceship will transfer Luo Feng to the primal universe. Ask them to arrange another spaceship for those undying fighters and sector lords! Mr. Luo Feng is exceptional, and nobody is allowed to disclose information about seeing him. As for those undying fighters and sector lords, it's better for them not to see Mr. Luo Feng."

"Yes, sir." The crew immediately went to report to the head office.

The spaceship arrived at Primal Chaos City in a short while. The captain and the crew were greeting Luo Feng.

He walked out and looked down on Primal Chaos City, which was not different from the last time he came here.

Sou!

Luo Feng took a step and went to Primal Chaos City.

Chapter 1094: Farewell

Primal Chaos City was the human race's land for cultivation. One look at those ancient buildings, and there would usually be human great beings sitting cross-legged on the rooftops of the cultivation residences. The atmosphere was always filled with the strong aura of cultivation.

"Universe level?" Luo Feng swooped down from a high altitude and saw the human great beings on the rooftops of the cultivation residences. There were some who had only reached the universe level. "This bit of power, and they are allowed into Primal Chaos City? Could they be participants from the previous War of Talents?

Some of the cultivators who were looking up at the sky to study the explicit display of secret engravings of universe laws caught sight of Luo Feng and recognized him in an instant.

"Look, it's Sir Luo Feng."

"It's Sir Luo Feng."

Having gained fame within such a short time, Luo Feng might have been the most sensational figure among the human race in the past 100,000 years. It was similar to how many of these cultivators did not know of the ancient Heaven Erosion Palace Master and some others. If, trillions of years ago, these individuals had died or been annihilated, and every piece of information pertaining to Luo Feng had been set to extremely high-level access rights, then many would naturally not know of Luo Feng. At best, they might have very limited information about him. But as of now, Luo Feng was the most prominent one.

"Is that Sir Luo Feng from the Legendary Wall of Talents that took place 110,000 years ago?"

"Yes, that's Sir Luo Feng."

"During the War of Talents that took place 110,000 years ago,

there were three rare geniuses, of which Bolan and Rong Jun achieved breakthroughs to become undying beings, and they are now emperors! Sir Luo Feng was said to have reached the levels of sector lord and universe knight way earlier than the others."

"So impressive. I heard that even universe knights have been annihilated by Sir Luo Feng."

Those young fellows who were only at the universe level were getting emotional. The way they looked at Luo Feng was even more awe-filled than how Luo Feng and his peers had looked at Sir Nine Blade back then! After all, Luo Feng had emerged onto the scene only 110,000 years ago during the War of Talents. Plus, his fame and the various rumors about him were much more than those of Sir Nine Blade. But these undying, sector lords, domain masters, and universe level beings were all pretty low on the social scale... so the stories about Luo Feng killing some universe overlords were unknown to them. If they ever caught wind of that news, they would have been rendered speechless.

Such high-level information would only be known by the universe knights. In addition, some of the undying emperors who were usually quite well-informed might have caught wind of it.

"Generations of participants in the War of Talents are continually emerging. The number of great beings among the humans is increasing as well."

Luo Feng looked down and revealed a trace of a smile. Then with a great leap forward, he speedily made his way to City Leader Palace.

Luo Feng entered the City Leader Palace and connected to the virtual universe with his conscious mind. Because news about the closing of the virtual universe had been disseminated previously, this was the first time he had made a connection after the opening of the virtual universe.

The moment he connected, virtual helper Babata—the subsidiary

intelligence helper—promptly informed Luo Feng: "882,901 messages! 9,010 telephone requests! 106 important messages! 11 important telephone requests!"

"So much mail!" Luo Feng was walking in the City Leader Palace while scanning through his mail with his consciousness. He opened the message, and with his consciousness revolving rapidly, he finished looking through all his mail within only a short time.

"Other than Primal Chaos City Leader, the other three universe masters have contacted me too, especially Huge Axe Creator... He actually contacted me."

Luo Feng's eyes flashed with a hint of surprise. The three universe masters and Huge Axe Creator had each sent a mail message to him, and the messages were the same: a simple congratulatory mail.

The messages looked simple, but when it came to their status, these were from universe masters and a universe supreme being! To receive messages from them... was simply extraordinary.

"I should write a letter to thank them."

Without further ado, Luo Feng replied to the three universe masters and Huge Axe Creator with a thank you letter.

After settling all these, Luo Feng put up a request to contribute a true treasure to his race. To enter that side palace of City Leader Palace, the only way was to put up such an application.

******

The bronze doors opened slowly, and Luo Feng stepped in. Thereafter, the doors closed again.

"Let's begin."

Luo Feng waved.

Hua!

At that moment, true treasures started appearing one after the

other and floated about in midair. Then they drifted over to the stone plate in the center of the hall of the palace. Countless green threads of light were rising and moved to envelop the treasures in a winding manner. These true treasures were obtained by Luo Feng through his numerous battles, and in total, there was a total of four senior true treasures.

"These four senior true treasures will all be contributed, but I doubt they are enough." Luo Feng brooded over his contribution.

Previously, when Luo Feng was thrown into the whirlpool by Craftsman Master and ended up in the Land of Extremis, he had killed Demon Sword Knight and obtained two true treasures (of which one was a senior true treasure). And when he came back from the Beast God sector and entered the Original Star for close to a year, he had killed several universe overlords and a large number of universe knights, thus obtaining a total of four senior true treasures!

Killing Tian Yang Knight had also been very rewarding. Not only had he gained the Flowing Light Wings and disambiguation mirror stone, but he also obtained an attack series true treasures, senior true treasure battle armor, and an ordinary domain type true treasure. However, his Remote Ocean body had taken three of the senior true treasures with him, so there were only five senior true treasures (including the Eight Shuttles), which Luo Feng did not require at that moment. Keeping one of these five senior true treasures—the true treasure armor—Luo Feng contributed the other four to his race.

"Contributing four senior true treasures equaled only 52.1 true treasure points," said Luo Feng. "Still quite a fair distance from a top-tier true treasure."

Luo Feng gave a slight shake of his head. Then he started the exchange for true treasure.

One flying-palace type ordinary true treasure, the "Wood Grain

Boat," a true treasure of the ground category, required 23 true treasure points.

One ordinary territory type true treasure, "Numerous Worlds," required 18 true treasure points.

One senior blade type weapon, "Bo He," which was something like the ghost blade, required 9 true treasure points.

A total of three true treasures cost him 50 true treasure points.

******

In Primal Chaos City, at True Yan Knight's residence.

"Senior."

"Senior"

"Senior is back."

"Brothers."

As Luo Feng walked within the mansion, he met with some fellow brothers who greeted him respectfully... but cautiously. They were cautious for two reasons. One, Luo Feng had not spent much time with them on a long-term basis. Two, as disciples of True Yan Knight, they were all well-informed. They knew that quite a fair number of several universe overlords had been annihilated by Luo Feng.

Luo Feng simply smiled and returned the greetings in a leisurely manner. When he walked out of sight, the group of brothers immediately began a heated discussion.

"Brother Luo Feng is simply too powerful! Even universe overlords were annihilated by him. Doesn't that mean he is close to becoming a universe master?"

"Hmm. He has far surpassed our teacher! I believe the Hong Alliance palace master... will have a place for brother Luo Feng in future."

******

Luo Feng could hear all the content of their discussions from afar, but he maintained his inner peace, staying still as undisturbed waters as he walked to where True Yan Knight resided.

"Teacher," Luo Feng said. He stood outside the door and waited.

"Come in."

The doors opened automatically. True Yan Knight was seated at the far end of the table, which was laid out with a fine spread of food and wine.

"Tsk tsk, Teacher," said Luo Feng. "This is some fine-quality wine you have here. You must have spent quite a fortune." Luo Feng reached the table in two steps and sat across from True Yan Knight. He reached for a flat vessel containing some wine and took a close look. "Is this the era-aged 'Zhe Gui Wine'?"

"My disciple has gained such great fame among the 100 million races in the universe that there could be no one who has not heard of you," said True Yan Knight. "Everyone sees you as a super being. If you were part of another race, you could lead the entire race with your power. You could go rampant roaming the universe." True Yan Knight caressed his golden beard. With a mildly triumphant tone, he continued, "Even a few universe overlords have been annihilated by my disciple! How is that not worth celebrating? At such a time, would I be so stingy over wine?"

Luo Feng blinked and said, "Teacher, if you flatter me too much, I might fly off to cloud nine."

"You are already capable of flying!" True Yan Knight joked.

This brought some warmth to Luo Feng. He felt as though he had gone back in time to the past. True Yan Knight was a very straightforward and candid character, and he would commonly jest with his disciples. He simply had no regard for social status.

"Aren't you going to drink?" True Yan Knight filled his own glass.

"I am. Of course, I will," Luo Feng replied immediately.

"Haha...! Come, let me fill your glass."

"I will help myself."

Luo Feng and True Yan Knight drank and chatted about the recent happenings in the outside world. While Luo Feng had been spending time on cultivation recently, the outside world had undergone many great changes.

"You definitely gave the races of the universe a good scare this time around." True Yan Knight put down his wine glass and sighed. "The rate of your growth was so fast that even I, as your teacher, was pretty shocked, let alone the other races. There is all kinds of news circulating around in the universe, saying that at the rate you are progressing, you'll likely attain Primal Chaos City Leader's level in the future. Spies from other races are all over! We have caught and killed a large number of spies. Some have tried to infiltrate Primal Chaos City, or even reach my very doorstep."

True Yan Knight looked towards Luo Feng and continued, "We have killed many of these spies, but the killing is never-ending. It seems like the other races are no longer concerned about the price they have to pay. They would rather sacrifice the many spies they have sent out as they get exposed... and still search frantically for news about you."

"Oh?" Luo Feng nodded slightly.

"All those spies who waited in ambush," said True Yan Knight. "The loss for one is actually quite a sizable amount. Yet now, races are willing to lose them one after the other. I speculate that other races are already aware that you are cultivating in your god country. They are in the midst of locating the whereabouts of your god country. Bug soldiers, the automaton clan, demons... All of them are finding ways to enter the human territory to kill you."

True Yan Knight paused, then warned, "If it were not for them, there would be no rush at all. You have to be very careful."

"Ha...!" Luo Feng laughed. "Teacher, let's not talk about this. I am well-prepared for it. My purpose in coming here to see Teacher today is for some other matter."

With a wave of Luo Feng's hand, three true treasures instantly appeared and hung suspended in midair. They were an earth-yellow wooden boat, a crystal ball, and a piece of black armor.

The wooden boat was a flying-palace type true treasure. The crystal ball was a domain type true treasure named "Numerous Worlds." And the piece of black armor was a senior true treasure armor! With these three true treasures, True Yan Knight's survival ability would reach a new high. The only pity was that a soul type ordinary true treasure would require at least 36 true treasure points. Luo Feng could not afford that amount.

"You, this is..." True Yan Knight got to his feet and looked at the three true treasures, stupefied.

"Teacher, I am going to leave the human territory on an adventure," Luo Feng said reverentially. "If everything happens as I anticipate it will, some major bloodshed will likely take place. You are my teacher, so I am afraid trouble may find its way to you. These three true treasures may be helpful to you, so it is my hope that you will accept them."

Luo Feng was worried that True Yan Knight might not accept the treasures because they were too valuable! So he did not reveal the actual value of these three true treasures.

"You want to leave the human territory?" True Yan Knight was taken aback.

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes."

He had to go claim Star Tower and obtain the fifth black metal board. Of course, he had to go.

"But you are aware that the automaton clan, bug soldiers, and demons alike... They are all looking to eliminating you," said True Yan Knight. "Even if you are in the human territory, there are chances of assassination attempts. Yet you want to head out? Once you are out there, there are no human great beings who can give you timely protection. You will be exposed to danger." True Yan Knight started to panic at the thought.

"Yes, I am aware of that," said Luo Feng. "This time, when I head out, there is bound to be a bloodbath." Luo Feng smiled. "But please rest assured, Teacher." He bowed slightly. "I shall take my leave now."

Turning around, Luo Feng took a step and vanished.

True Yan Knight looked to where Luo Feng had vanished. He kept silent for a long time. He understood... Luo Feng had reached an even higher level.

"Three true treasures. A universe overlord. Three true treasures are all that he got!"

True Yan Knight thought these were ordinary true treasures, so with an extended finger, he shot out threads of godly power, and speedily penetrated the three true treasures. That very moment, a surge of information was transmitted... Flying-palace type, domain type, senior true treasure armor... This information had True Yan Knight rooted on the spot for a long while.

"He did not tell me," he whispered. "He left immediately because he was worried I might accept these if I knew. This disciple of mine..."

Chapter 1095: Star Tower Disappeared

Inside the Palace of Primal Chaos Ruins.

Luo Feng went to visit Primal Chaos City Leader after leaving the palace of True Yan Knight. He was not content with trading his disambiguation mirror stone for half the ownership of Earth! However, he knew that Primal Chaos City Leader was only one of the dozens of universe masters in the human race. Though he was powerful, he wasn't at Huge Axe Creator's level. Besides, Primal Chaos City Leader had been guiding him patiently, and Luo Feng admired the character of his teacher.

True Yan Knight and Primal Chaos City Leader had completely different personalities. True Yan Knight was frank and forthright, and he would do anything for those he cared about. When Luo Feng was chased by Bark Mirror Emperor, True Yan Knight went to fight him even though he wasn't sure whether he was going to win or not.

As for Primal Chaos City Leader, he was responsible for the entire human race, and many important issues concerning the human race were determined by him. The rise and fall of the humans were all under his consideration. He had always been fair, and his principle was to "put the race first" when he was treating his disciples, which made Luo Feng respect him.

"Teacher." Luo Feng gave a salutation.

Garnet armor with complex patterns and a scaled tail spread out from a set of battle gear. Under several fiery horns was a fierce face with engravings on it. It was another body of Primal Chaos City Leader. The eyes were broad like the sky and intimidating.

"Why are you here to see me?" asked Primal Chaos City Leader.

"I plan to leave the human territory, and I wanted to tell you before I left," answered Luo Feng.

"Oh? It seems that you went to visit True Yan about this, too." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. He was the guard of the primal universe, which meant he knew everything going on in the primal universe. However, he hadn't eavesdropped on the conversation between Luo Feng and True Yan Knight.

"Do you know how dangerous it is for you on the outside?" asked Primal Chaos City Leader.

"I do." Luo Feng nodded. "The bug race, the demon race, and the automaton race all want me dead."

"But you're still going out?" Primal Chaos City Leader continued.

Luo Feng nodded.

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Then go. You're not weak in any aspect, which means you should be the one who makes all your own decisions. But remember, you're not only representing yourself. You're still representing your family and your earthling bloodline. Just remember this."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded and bowed. "Then I'll leave now."

"Go," Primal Chaos City Leader said, then added, "If you can't handle the danger by yourself, crush the keepsake I left you."

Luo Feng nodded, and with the space ripple, he disappeared.

Primal Chaos City Leader was left alone in Primal Chaos Ruins.

This disciple of mine manifests such power after hiding for almost 20,000 years, Primal Chaos City Leader thought. And now, he's leaving the human territory. He must have some peculiar experiences, and they happened at some place in the universe.

Primal Chaos City Leader had figured this out a long time ago, but he wouldn't try to influence Luo Feng. From his perspective, if Luo Feng had Remote Ocean body, then even he was killed outside, he could easily resurrect himself. The true treasures would be the only things lost.

Bug race, demon race, automaton race? thought Primal Chaos City Leader. They would be desperate if they knew Luo Feng has a Remote Ocean body. All they can get is the true treasures he carries.

Primal Chaos City Leader was confident. Although he was more proficient in close combat, he was also a master in souls, and in the primal universe—which was under his control—he could tell that Luo Feng's mind and willpower were already at the universe master level!

Godly power determined minds. Minds affected willpower as well! After 180 million years of training and becoming a universe knight, Luo Feng's mind and willpower had already reached the universe master level.

However, Primal Chaos City Leader was wrong about one thing. If those other races killed Luo Feng's body, they would get exceptional true treasures: Force Armor, Shi Wu Wings, and Beast God Armor.

******

After leaving Primal Chaos City, Luo Feng first went back to his god country. Then he went to Star Tower by god country transportation!

In the center palace of the Star Tower, the light started to dim. Luo Feng walked out.

"Star Tower," Luo Feng said as he looked around the palace where he received life or death inheritance. "My godly power should be enough to drive Star Tower."

Hong!

The godly power on Luo Feng started to burn and spread along the ground. It went into the center of Star Tower like electricity, transferred to the pillars and seal stars. The burning godly power flowed like water in the river, channeled through the pillars and

seal stars, however. Those engravings were too difficult; Luo Feng was only able to understand the easiest ones.

After only a short while, the burning godly power merged with every inch of Star Tower.

"Rise!" Luo Feng growled.

Weng!

Star Tower rose eight inches and fell eight inches slowly. Such a tiny ripple was imperceptible.

Luo Feng took back his godly power, and the Golden Horned Beast in the world ring started to transfer the godly power to his original earthling body.

"My original earthling body is also a universe knight with a life gene level of 9,800 times, and it's strong enough to drive Star Tower. However, the godly power consumed is too much. If it weren't for the Golden Horned Beast, that move would have consumed 30 percent of my godly body. My understanding of the engravings in Star Tower is too limited."

He was able to drive it with his godly power if he wanted, but it consumed too much power. If he were able to fully comprehend the engravings, it would be much easier.

Luo Feng left the center palace and started to wander through Star Tower. He went to various locations via the internal transportation. He couldn't even see the end of the heavenly pillars.

Luo Feng perused the engravings on the heavenly pillars and couldn't help exclaiming, "Incredible! Even the simplest engravings are so amazing. The engravings in Star Tower are even more complex and complete than those of the miniature universe. No wonder it's a supreme true treasure."

He walked around and saw the heavenly pillars and seal stars. He even went to tour the spaces in Star Tower where lots of other

races were adventuring and fighting. Luo Feng was able to see the mysteries formed by those spaces.

******

After 32 days of walking through Star Tower, Luo Feng went back to the center palace and sat down with his legs crossed. His consciousness was fully integrated with Star Tower, and all the engraving sculptures flooded his mind... He started to study them carefully. The deeper he understood those engravings, the more power he could wield.

Mysterious! Complicated! Space, time, gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, lightning, and light... All law threads were mixed together perfectly, and they were 10,000 times more complicated than the miniature universe engraving picture. After all, the miniature universe only had a diameter of six billion miles while Star Tower was nine light years tall! If the miniature universe was a small room, the Star Tower was a skyscraper comprised of countless small rooms.

Fortunately, I'm on the engraving-picture path, thought Luo Feng. Otherwise, it would take me forever to reach full comprehension if I only know of space law and gold law.

He sat with his legs crossed for three years before he opened his eyes.

"Finally," he said, "I've finished understanding the first level of mysteries.

However, after understanding the first level, Luo Feng better grasped how incredible Star Tower truly was.

"I'm only able to fully comprehend the first level." He looked up at the center palace. "It should be easier to drive now."

Hong!

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, and his godly power started to burn. Endless godly power immediately infused Star Tower, and the

easiest engravings at the periphery were completely driven. Luo Feng felt much more comfortable.

I need to drive those warriors out before taking it back, he thought.

******

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

Beings of different races were being driven out through the portals at the bottom, and millions of beings showed up outside Star Tower. They were all in shock.

"What happened?"

"I was adventuring there, but I was driven out."

"Me too!"

"Why did Star Tower drive us out?"

All the other races were astounded. This had never happened in all the time since Star Tower showed up in the outer-domain battlefield.

All of them had been driven out today? It was bizarre!

"Look! The nine whirlpool nebulas disappeared!"

"They disappeared!"

All the undying fighters were shocked to their very core.

"Look! Star Tower is shrinking!"

"It's shrinking!"

Star Tower, which was nine light years tall, was quickly contracting. After only a short while, it became half a mile tall, and then, it disappeared completely.

"Star Tower disappeared!"

"How is that possible?"

Everyone was terrified.

The news spread like wildfire. No one exaggerated anything this time, but the news that Star Tower had disappeared was thousands of times more shocking than Luo Feng killing a universe overlord! A supreme true treasure craved by billions of races in the universe... had just vanished!

Chapter 1096: Looking for Star Tower

The virtual universe, in the space belonging to Huge Axe Creator.

Amidst the darkness, flashes of starlight could be seen from afar where a plain-looking palace was suspended in the core of the dark space. There were long stone benches in front of the palace where figures were appearing out of nowhere, one after the other.

In just a short time, many had arrived, including Huge Axe Creator, Primal Chaos City Leader, and Deserted Mirror Master, who were all unable to conceal their shock expressions.

"I believe everyone has heard," Huge Axe Creator said, scanning his surroundings. "Star Tower has disappeared!"

"Hmm."

"We all just heard."

"How could Star Tower disappear? It has been standing firmly in the void space for an eternity. Even universe supreme masters are unable to take it down by force, so how can it disappear so suddenly?"

This breaking news had all the higher-ups, even the most strong-hearted ones, in shock and disbelief.

"Look." Huge Axe Creator pointed far into space.

Hua!

A scene played before them in the faraway, dark sky. Star Tower was throwing millions of undying soldiers out of it, followed closely by the dispersion of the nine whirlpool nebulas. Then Star Tower shrunk, teleported, and vanished from its spot.

"Undoubtedly," Primal Chaos City Leader whispered, "there must be some great being controlling Star Tower. That is how the undying fighters of various races could be thrown out of every plane of Star Tower within such a short time! This great being

caused the nine whirlpool nebulas to disperse and Star Tower to shrink and teleport away."

"But who?"

"Who wields such power?" said a universe master wearing elegant, golden armor with purple engravings between his brows. "Back then, the automaton race, the bug soldiers, the demons, and us—we all fought for this supreme true treasure that suddenly appeared. We fought and killed like crazy, yet in the end, all four pinnacle races were unable to do anything to Star Tower. Even when Huge Axe Creator entered personally, he too was unable to take Star Tower."

"Void Gold Master is right," someone else spoke up. "Purely based on power, who could have done it?"

There was incessant chattering all over as the universe masters of the human race voiced their opinions.

Huge Axe Creator nodded and said, "We all have reached a consensus that purely based on power, it is indeed impossible to take Star Tower! After all, in the countless years that Star Tower has been out in the battlefield, not only have the four pinnacle races tried and failed; even other great powers of the universe like the Ancestral God School, the Space Beast Alliance, the Northern Territory Alliance, and some other weaker powers have all tried discreetly, but no one has succeeded."

All the universe masters nodded.

"Including myself," added Huge Axe Creator. "I'm afraid all of the universe supreme masters have already tried." He shook his head. "All have failed! With power alone, it is indeed impossible. Taking Star Tower requires an opportunity with a touch of luck! My guess is, a certain great being has gotten lucky and managed to take Star Tower in a stroke of good fortune. Many true super beings in the universe have been trying since long, long ago but have not succeeded. This time, the one who has managed to take Star Tower

must be a very powerful being."

"A weakling?"

"An undying? Universe knight?" Universe masters instantly started shouting.

"Regardless of who he is, so long as he can control Star Tower... he is no weakling." Huge Axe Creator scanned everyone. "Hiding within Star Tower? Even I cannot achieve that."

The other universe masters nodded with envy in their eyes. Star Tower was a supreme true treasure, indeed! Even a pinnacle race like the humans did not have a supreme true treasure to reign dominance! Every supreme true treasure had unbelievably strong power... to the extent of having strange characteristics; universe supreme masters coveted them, but universe supreme masters were very rare. There were only a few of them. However, there were still a number who did not possess any supreme true treasures. Huge Axe Creator, for one, did not own any!

"We must get to the bottom of it!" Huge Axe Creator ordered, "Make use of the resources from my Hong Alliance and conduct a thorough search for information. We must get to the bottom of the matter... Whose hands have Star Tower fallen into? If he is a weakling, then he won't be able to hide inside Star Tower forever. We can still find the chance to take Star Tower from away him or even find out how he managed to control it."

"Yes, sir."

"Yes!"

All the universe masters accepted his order.

Huge Axe Creator emphasized with solemnity, "We humans lack such a supreme true treasure. We must find a way to get it."

******

In the universe that belonged to automaton race, a voice

representing the noblest being of the automaton race sounded and was transmitted to every corner.

"My children, go look into it! Find out who has taken Star Tower! Even if he has the supreme true treasure, he will not be able to hide inside Star Tower forever. If he is a weakling, we definitely have a chance to take Star Tower away from him."

"Yes, Father God."

"Yes, Father God."

All universe masters of automaton race received the order.

******

Hua!

In the vast, starry sky, a giant being whose body was entirely covered with black scales made a gradual appearance. The surroundings within a radius of a few light years instantly fell into a world of endless, dark flames, and within this area, all levels of stars seemed to disintegrate into nothing and vanish from sight. This towering presence was all that existed.

"How long since I have been back in the primal universe," said the figure. "How familiar it feels. This is my homeland. If not for Star Tower, I cannot imagine how long it would have taken for me to make it back here from Universe Ocean. Back then, I was unable to take Star Tower away! Yet there was some fellow in the primal universe who actually succeeded... I must find Star Tower and find that fellow. I must find out how he controlled Star Tower. If not for the lack of a supreme true treasure, would I have been defeated by that old Beast God from the Space Beast Alliance...?"

The figure in black scales moved slowly.

Hua.

It vanished into thin air.

******

The top nine powers in the universe were all eager to take action, as a supreme true treasure was simply too tempting! Even the few great beings who were universe supreme masters that roamed about as loners had taken action, let alone the universe masters who had clans under their leadership. There were some clans with merely one universe master. Those were the ones who greatly desired to own the Star Tower.

"If I manage to get the Star Tower, then I won't even have to fear universe supreme masters."

"By that time, my Tamar Race will have hopes of being a pinnacle race."

The shocking news of the human known as Luo Feng killing a universe overlord was nothing compared to the breaking news that the supreme true treasure, Star Tower, had disappeared! It was enough to shake the foundation of a pinnacle race.

Star Tower was the most precious existence within the entire universe! With hundreds of billions of people from various clans looking for it, those who had been concerned about Luo Feng dwindled in number. Even if there were any, they were most likely the most persistent ones among the demons, automaton race, and bug soldiers, so keen on eliminating Luo Feng that they would never let their guard down.

******

Ancestral God Secret Region, Redbud Island.

The commotion that arose from the disappearance of Star Tower caused quite a stir, thought Luo Feng. The excitement has boiled over.

Luo Feng appeared at Redbud Island in the residence that belonged to him. This was the third day since he had taken Star Tower, and since then, he had been following everything that happened on the outside through the virtual universe.

All was turmoil! The Hong Alliance's universe masters and all those undying beings who had made their way to the battlefields were engaged in heated discussion. And that was only within the Hong Alliance. There were also other powers in the universe... but through the information being disseminated within the Hong Alliance, it could be seen that everyone had gone mad over this news.

No wonder Sitting Mountain Guest Teacher strictly commanded me not to divulge the news about Star Tower, Luo Feng thought. He was appalled. If I had been exposed, and the outside world found out I could control Star Tower... Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest alone would certainly not be able to protect me. Luckily, I can protect myself now, so I can make a foothold independently in this turbulent universe.

He took a step forward, opened the doors of his mansion, and flew off in the direction of the palace in front of the public square, where the island master of Redbud Island resided.

"Look, it's Luo Feng."

"It's the human, Luo Feng."

"He is back on Redbud Island. It has been 200,000 years since he last appeared!"

"Luo Feng has power that matches that of a top-tier universe overlord, so rarely coming to Redbud Island is nothing strange at all."

There were many cultivators from various races on Redbud Island, and this discussion started when a team of candidates spotted him while they were flying.

Luo Feng, on the other hand, was flying toward the public square. Passing through the water curtain of a fountain, he arrived at the "land of inheritance." There were clearly a great many opportunities for inheritance.

******

A while later, Luo Feng made his exit and flew directly back to his mansion. There, Luo Feng stayed in isolation for five days before he once again made his way to the land of inheritance to accept his share.

Retreat! Inherit! Retreat! Inherit! Almost every other day, Luo Feng would enter once to accept his inheritance. This quickly aroused the attention of many cultivators on Redbud Island. There were many such discussions about this.

"After all those battles that Luo Feng welcomed with untamed abandon, he has since earned a humongous amount of opportunities for inheritance. But even if he has that many opportunities, is there a need to be so wasteful?"

"Without feeling what it's like to undergo cultivation, accepting all those inheritances would be totally pointless."

"What a waste."

However, Luo Feng simply paid no heed to all the things others were saying, shaking his head to himself.

I am highly accomplished in the studies of pictures of secret engravings and can comprehend by analogy. Every time I make my way in to accept my inheritance, I can quickly comprehend a large quantity of content pertaining to the beast god path. How fast is my speed of cultivation?

Without the ability to comprehend, a beast god inheritance would mean nothing. Yet Luo Feng was able to feel and comprehend a large amount of information because he was highly accomplished in the studies of pictures of secret engravings, so every time he went for another round of inheritance, he would be able to make additional progress.

After all, in terms of level, Luo Feng had already created a technique that matched the level of an ultimate technique of a

universe master. With the "heart of Beast God," he had attained an extremely high level of comprehension, so naturally, accepting the beast god path was a piece of cake.

Once every five days, he would accept one Beast God inheritance; when he was only at his third round of inheritances, Luo Feng could already grasp full comprehension of the fourth stage of the beast god path. It was like a university student studying doing elementary school homework.

There was also "Inheriting," a rapid method to boost the speed of comprehension. However, he was much slower in progressing at the fifth stage of the beast god path.

******

Bug soldiers, demons, and members of the automaton race were all racking their brains in search of a solution.

"Hurry! Report to the race! Luo Feng is here on Redbud Island!"

"That annoying Luo Feng... The guts he has to come here to Redbud Island."

"If you want to kill Luo Feng, you would have to get a universe master involved. However, the moment any of our universe masters showed up at Redbud Island... they will be annihilated right away by the Five-Color Aurora Lake. As for us, we do not even own the qualifications or the rights to enter the island."

"If we are disguised within the human territory, we could still have a shot! But given the Ancestral God School's power, which is much stronger than that of humans, if Luo Feng decides to hide on Redbud Island, there is really nothing we can do."

******

Luo Feng remained on Redbud Island, cultivating at his leisure.

"My golden horned beast body has gone through two months of traveling among the stars. It has finally arrived at the destination

of the fifth black metal board."

Luo Feng revealed a trace of a smile.

Chapter 1097: Ancient Chin Secret Region

Two months before, just after taking Star Tower, Luo Feng had separated his bodies. The original earthling body went to Redbud Island with his Mosha body to attract the attention of other races. He practiced in public, and he even flew to the land of inheritance instead of teleporting himself there every time he went because he wanted the other races to know where he was.

As for Golden Horned Beast body, he arrived at a faraway territory in the universe through god country transportation and then flew to his destination, the Ancient Chin Secret Region, by spaceship

"I'm a high-achiever on the engraving-picture path. If it weren't for the bet with Ancestor, I would've reached an extremely high level on laws. Perhaps I would've finished the sixth level of beast god path by now. But concentrating on the engraving-picture path did help me a lot."

Still, the beast god inheritance from the Ancestral God School is also beneficial, thought Luo Feng. Without beast god inheritance, I'll need ten years to complete the fourth level, and it might take me 100,000 years to finish the fifth level. And this is with the help of advances on the engraving-picture path. Those beast god inheritances give me maximum efficiency. As long as I want, I can receive those inheritances as much as I can. It seems that I need to stay on Redbud Island for a while longer.

Luo Feng flew out of his palace and flew toward the Island Leader's palace. Many onlookers took notice.

"Luo Feng's here."

"He goes to receive beast god inheritance once every several days."

Some other races kept careful records of Luo Feng's activities, as

they had been ordered to gather as much information about him as possible. It was important to gather such information if they wanted to kill that supreme being Luo Feng.

Go ahead and take records, thought Luo Feng. Take records of all my moves. You've miscalculated my power, and you'll miss everything. I'll show you what "going for wool and coming home shorn" means.

Luo Feng flew into the spring and went to the land of inheritance.

******

The Ancient Chin Secret Region was a region that had a diameter of 1.2 million light years. Though it was much smaller than Ancestral God Secret Region, it was still extremely dangerous.

A seeming ordinary garnet spaceship flew through space. Inside the control room, a lovely Golden Horned Beast at on the couch and gazed outside.

"Based on the information from Master Mountain Sitting Guest, the fifth black metal is in this region! The Ancient Chin Secret Region..."

Information about the Ancient Chin Secret Region from the virtual universe immediately flooded Golden Horned Beast's mind. This ancient region had been born when the universe first came into being. There had been several wars fought here for the valuables.

Gradually, the number of valuables in the secret region had lessened, and because it was extremely dangerous, supreme beings stopped coming. However, some undying fighters and universe knights would occasionally come here and try their luck. It was extremely dangerous, and most of the valuables had been taken! That made the region highly unattractive. Even many special life forms left, and it became desolate.

"A desolate secret region. Dangerous and containing almost no valuables. The fifth black metal is here? Master Mountain Sitting Guest really knows how to find places to hide things. I sensed it!"

The Golden Horned Beast's eyes gleamed, and all every cell in his godly body was thrilled. He could sense the powerful summoning.

Shua!

Golden Horned Beast teleported himself outside and put the spaceship back in his world ring.

"That direction!"

Golden Horned Luo Feng teleported himself toward the source.

It was hazardous, but Golden Horned Beast, who was much more powerful than top-tier universe overlords, easily passed across all of them.

The fifth black metal... thought Golden Horned Luo Feng as he gazed into the distance.

Endless black mist permeated the space. Everything was dark. However, Luo Feng was certain that the fifth black metal was there! Though his Golden Horned Beast body didn't need it anymore, the original earthling body did need it. One the earthling body reached the perfect life gene level, he could also have a godly body 55,000 miles tall. Then he would be able to perform "I Am the Universe" as well.

"Be careful," he told himself. "Nine Tiger River."

Hong!

Golden water started to churn in the space, covering an area with a radius of 19 million miles. Nine strange beasts were frolicking in the golden waves, surrounding a black Golden Horned Beast.

"Move forward."

Golden Horned Luo Feng flew slowly in the dark while Nine Tiger River checked for dangers. After a short while, he had flown

a hundred million miles.

Hua! La!

A giant being flew past him, glaring at the black Golden Horned Beast in the golden waves.

Golden Horned Beast kept flying into the deep. He had performed space seal and kept Nine Tiger River running. He felt like he was being watched by a great being.

I know Teacher wouldn't let me have the fifth black metal so easily, he thought.

Golden Horned Luo Feng was careful. Suddenly...

Hong!

A gigantic being showed up in the dark and dashed toward his Nine Tiger River domain.

Hong! Long!

Nine Tiger River tried to stop him, but the efforts were rendered useless. The giant being slashed through the waves and raced at Luo Feng.

"Huh?"

Golden Horned Beast saw a black-crystal giant a million miles tall. He was waving all six of his thick arms and held a red hammer in each of his hands.

"Black Sky Horde Leader?"

The Golden Horned Beast was startled. There lived some extremely powerful special life forms in the Ancient Chin Secret Region, and Black Sky Horde Leader was a top-tier universe overlord who could rival the most powerful World Tree. He was a unique mountain giant! And he had a life gene level of 8,000 times. All six hammers he wielded were senior true treasures, and he was invincible with his inherited techniques.

I'm in trouble, Golden Horned Beast thought as he stared at the mountain giant. I can defeat him, but that giant body... It's too difficult to kill him!

"Get out! Get out!" Black Sky Horde Leader roared.

"Black Sky Horde Leader, I don't mean to offend you, but don't try to stop me," said the Golden Horned Beast as he grew to a million miles long. With his black scales on, and he gazed at Black Sky Horde Leader in the distance.

"Golden Horned Beast, you can't come here," Black Sky Horde Leader said.

In no time, Black Sky Horde Leader had cut through all the obstacles in the Nine Tiger River with a radius of 19 million miles.

"Get away!" the Golden Horned Beast roared and became a beam of golden light.

Sharp and cold, his giant, scaled wings slashed at Black Sky Horde Leader. Black Sky Horde Leader was also a renowned being in the universe. He rarely showed himself, as he had been living in the Ancient Chin Secret Region, but he was as powerful as Heavenly Erosion Palace Leader and the most powerful World Tree.

"Damn it!" Black Sky Horde Leader roared. Golden engravings showed up on his black crystals. Countless engravings covered his entire godly body, and the space around him was torn.

The Golden Horned Beast felt a black hole being formed!

Six hammers smashed at the Golden Horned Beast, and six black space whirlpools were formed under the special techniques mixed with his inherited techniques. All went dark. Light was totally swallowed under the move by Black Sky Horde Leader, and Luo Feng, in the domain of Nine Tiger River, sensed six whirlpools racing toward him.

Peng!

Under the wing, all six space whirlpools crumbled, and the wing hit the chest of Black Sky Horde Leader.

Hua!

Black Sky Horde Leader bounced away and rolled through Nine Tiger River. Everything around them was annihilated before it started to recover slowly.

"Amazing, Golden Horned Beast," said Black Sky Horde Leader. "I'm not your match."

Black Sky Horde Leader roared and flew outside. Golden Horned Beast didn't stop him. Because of the Beast God Armor, Luo Feng was able to use every part of his body to fight, and the most powerful part was the horn. However, he knew that it was almost impossible to kill Black Sky Horde Leader, who had the same quality of godly body as he did. All he needed to do was to intimidate him.

Black Sky Horde Leader turned his head and transmitted the voice the second he exited the domain of Nine Tiger River. "Golden Horned Beast, you're not supposed to be here. I admire your power since you're stronger than me. But leave if you want to survive. Otherwise, my master will kill you."

Black Sky Horde Leader flew off into the dark.

Black Sky Horde Leader's words shocked Luo Feng.

"His master?" muttered Luo Feng. "Black Sky Horde Master is a top-tier universe overlord, and he's difficult to kill even by universe masters... but he has a master? Just where have you hidden the fifth black metal, Teacher?"

Luo Feng understood that this was not an easy task.

"Just wait and see. I'll see who the master of this Black Sky Horde Leader is. I'm not afraid even of universe supreme masters!"

Luo Feng kept moving forward, stepping on the golden waves.

The Golden Horned Beast was at the center of Nine Tiger River, and he kept going, moving deeper into the secret region.

Chapter 1098: Blood Cloud Palace

Surrounded by the rolling Nine Tiger River, Golden Horned Beast advanced and penetrated his way through carefully.

In the faraway darkness...

"That golden horned beast is making its way to Master's palace! We have to stop him. We cannot let him bother Master!"

"Silver Dragon, not even I am able to stop him. It's the same for you."

"I may not be able to stop him, but Black Sky... you are definitely able. Our powers may be comparable, but your godly body is much bigger than mine! With such a massive godly body, you may be able to pester him persistently and hold him back for a long time! But you are retreating after your first defeat. Don't you know that Master's stateliness should never be compromised? Yet you condoned the Golden Horned Beast's act of intruding into Master's palace!"

"No, Silver Dragon. His power is much stronger than you think. If he had really wanted to shake me off his tracks, there would have been no way I could stop him."

"What? You can't stop him? Could he possibly be a universe master?"

"Even if he isn't, his powers are comparable," Black Sky Horde Leader said. "We shall take things a step at a time. Let him meet with Master for now! Since he does not want to heed my advice, if he gets annihilated, we are not to blame... If he meets our Master and causes a disturbance, his only end will be to face annihilation!"

"That's right," another cold voice said. "That Golden Horned Beast is going to regret this."

"Let's go."

Black Sky Horde Leader, together with the other small figure on his body, disappeared quickly into the darkness.

******

Golden waves surged forward rapidly and swept through the void space, clearing all obstacles in its way.

Golden Horned Beast cast his gaze into the distance. Black Sky Horde Leader's words made him cautious. After all, this was the place Sitting Mountain Guest Teacher had arranged. Earlier, the third black metal board had been found to be with the Green Knight and Purple Knight; those were definitely universe overlords! As for the fourth black metal board, he'd had to meet with Craftsman Master. Now, for the fifth piece—the final black metal board—this would probably be an extraordinary experience, too.

"If he can enslave Black Sky Horde Leader, this 'Master' must be at least a universe master," Luo Feng speculated.

Following the intense beckoning of the black metal board, Golden Horned Beast advanced progressively.

******

Half an hour later, there were no longer any obstructions in the way. Obviously, all the other special life forms were apprehensive after witnessing the loss Black Sky Horde Leader had suffered. They gave up trying to stop this Golden Horned Beast.

"That annoying Golden Horned Beast. How dare he bother Master!"

"He is indeed very powerful; Sir Black Sky was defeated by him."

"We shall see. When he meets with Master, he is going to regret it. But by then, it will be too late for regrets."

******

Golden Horned Beast could faintly feel the other special life

forms secretly watching him from afar, but they were not bothering him, so he did not feel like paying them any attention. Half an hour after he started out, amidst the dark mist ahead, the corner of the large palace started to show up indistinctly.

This towering palace was fully cloaked with a coat of blood red, and the single corner that was revealed was simply unbelievable.

"A palace?"

Golden Horned Beast manipulated Nine Tiger River to advance at a rapid speed, and soon, he arrived at the main doors of the palace. The doors seemed ordinary, but they exuded an overwhelming amount of power. Above the doors, there were three extremely complicated sets of secret engravings. Though they were indecipherable, the meanings of the three words were directly transmitted into his mind: Blood Cloud Palace!

"Blood Cloud Palace...?" Riding the rolling, golden waves in front of the palace, Golden Horned Beast's face registered a shocked expression. "The legendary Blood Cloud Palace? The... the fifth black metal board is here in Blood Cloud Palace."

Golden Horned Luo Feng was thunderstruck. At the same time, on the faraway Redbud Island, the moment his original earthling body got this news, it connected with the virtual universe without delay and started a deliberate investigation.

Luo Feng was no stranger to Blood Cloud Palace. It was very prominent among the billions of super great beings of various races in the universe. Yet wherever Blood Cloud Palace traversed became a sea of bloody massacres!

Blood Cloud Master was a strangely wicked character. Whenever he found a certain great being to be an eyesore, he would kill without a second thought, and the killing extended to the home of the great being. At times, he would even attack the core of a race's territory... When he had a target in mind, he killed without mercy!

However, as far as his background, identity, what race was he from, and his true power... all of these were unknown!

All that was known about him was that his Blood Cloud Palace was a flying-palace type true treasure. Back when it had run rampant in the universe, it killed countless and made enemies with almost 99 percent of all the powers in the universe! There were many universe masters who wanted him dead, but although Blood Cloud Palace Master was a loner, he was powerful to the extent of annihilating two universe masters single-handedly! The number of universe overlords who had fallen at his hands was even more alarming. Moreover, the moment he sensed that the situation might not be favorable to him, he would flee the scene in his Blood Cloud Palace at top speed.

Over the course of many long years, there had been no great being who could contain this Blood Cloud Palace Master! And if there was some power who went head-on with Blood Cloud Palace Master, he would react like a raving lunatic and conjure up all sorts of retaliation methods to deal with his opponent.

An evil lunatic, powerful and mysterious! This was Blood Cloud Palace Master!

No one knew where his home was, what the true threshold of his power was, whether he was a special life-form, or if he belonged to a certain race. Everything about him was a mystery. Because he was always dressed in a blood-red battle robe and wore a blood-red mask, his true appearance was also a mystery. During his craziest moments, he once made the entire universe hate him while he continued living at ease and comfort and even annihilated two universe masters.

Battles between universe masters were always close; the victor was always difficult to predict. Yet he had killed two! This was strong evidence of how overpowering he was.

Rumors had it that Blood Cloud Palace Master was of human

origins! Because no matter how perverse Blood Cloud Palace Master was—killing and annihilating countless lives, including great beings from the Ancestral God School, the Northern Territory Alliance, the crystal clan, the prison clan, the bug clan, the demon clan, the automaton race, and the Space Beast Alliance—the human race was always free from harm...

As for the Nine Territories Alliance and others, which were one notch lower in strength, they would undoubtedly suffer a great deal.

If a universe overlord of a certain race was killed by Blood Could Palace Master, it was best to let the matter go. If the race decided to continue fighting on, they would suffer greater losses. After all, even the various top powers in the Ancestral God School were unsuccessful in dealing with this Blood Cloud Palace Master.

"Blood Cloud Palace," Golden Horned Beast said. It raised its head to look at the three engraved words on the top of the palace doors.

Back when Blood Cloud Palace Master ran rampant in the universe, so full of arrogance as if nobody could beat him, he was definitely a mysteriously overpowering presence. However, since that glorious period, rumors of him have dwindled. He eventually started to disappear from the scene. Thereafter, he only emerged twice. The last time he made an appearance was about three million eras ago. He has disappeared for much too long.

There has been no news at all, and various powers of the universe have speculated that Blood Cloud Palace Master must be one of the universe masters in disguise, assuming another identity. But there is no longer any need for this disguise now. So he has yet to make another appearance.

Luo Feng finished looking into the relevant detailed information that he found within the virtual universe. He only had one thought in mind. This was a lunatic! A powerful lunatic! He was a loner free of all constraints and attachments. Even top powers who fought

him suffered in the end. Whoever came forth to provoke him... would simply have to fight!

Who would have known that the Blood Cloud Palace was hiding here? And with Black Sky Horde Leader guarding it!

Luo Feng was dumbfounded.

No wonder not a single great being could find it. After all, the universe masters do not really care much about visiting ancient secret regions, and the ordinary universe knights wouldn't even be able to make it to the doors with Black Sky Horde Leader standing guard. Various races of the universe only know that this is Black Sky Horde Leader's territory. What they didn't know... is that this is actually the home of Blood Cloud Palace Master.

"What should I do? Should I go in or not?"

Blood Cloud Palace Master's fame was overwhelming, his strength was overpowering, and he had killed two universe masters single-handedly. Based on calculated estimations, his power had to be a close match to Primal Chaos City Leader! No wonder Black Sky horde leader had been so confident earlier on. Moreover, Blood Cloud Palace was a flying-palace type true treasure. However, based on what he could sense, that black metal board was within this palace type true treasure.

"How about I enter this true treasure?" Golden Horned Beast hesitated for a while but was quick to come to a decision. "A flying-palace type true treasure's main purpose is to protect its owner! I have never heard of this Blood Cloud Palace being able to trap a great being."

Sou!

The palace doors were open. No more hesitation. Golden Horned Beast shrank the size of Nine Tiger River right away while flying straight for the palace doors.

Flying through the doors, he reached a gigantic and spacious

public square from which he had a clear of three faraway palaces. The main palace was in the middle, while the other two were side palaces. Indistinctly, he could see that there seemed to be other palaces behind the main palace.

"It must be in the main palace."

Golden Horned Beast could clearly sense the intense beckoning from where he was, so at top speed, he flew in the direction of the main palace.

The main palace exuded a murderous and overbearing aura that seemed to know no limit. As Golden Horned Beast entered, a blood-red throne in the main palace was the first sight that greeted him. But there was no one on the throne.

"Where is Blood Cloud Palace Master? Could it be that he is not here?"

He is the master of Blood Cloud Palace. The moment I entered, he should have been able to sense my presence. Why is he not showing himself?

Such thoughts were running through Golden Horned Beast's mind, but he did not show signs of hesitation. He had to act. Following the beckoning, he speedily arrived at the rear chamber of the main palace! The palace was divided into the main palace, several other side palaces, and many rear chambers. Golden Horned Beast moved at an alarming speed along the corridors.

"Here it is."

He rammed his way through the doors and entered and found his way into a secret room.

Upon entering, the sight that greeted Golden Horned Beast was mildly startling. In this room, there was a large quantity of valuables that exuded various kinds of powerful auras. Judging by their auras, there must have been a large amount of precious materials among them... There was a startling number of treasures

in the room. Even at one quick glance, he could see at least several tens of thousands of treasures, of which there must be as many as 100 true treasures. Based on Luo Feng's assessment, these should only be ordinary true treasures!

"Is this a treasure vault?" Luo Feng wondered. "But the doors were pushed open so easily. No... This is Blood Cloud Palace, how can its master be so confident? Just laying everything out in the open? My guess is, to Blood Cloud Palace Master, these may not be precious after all."

Hundreds of true treasures, tens of thousands of treasures, vast amounts of materials... All of them gave this treasure vault a boundless breath of life. Yet Golden Horned Beast only had eyes for that one item placed directly in the middle of the materials—a piece of black metal board that seemed to be incomplete.

"The fifth piece!"

However, Golden Horned Beast felt strange. Could it really be this easy?

Sou!

A thread of godly power shot out from the sharp pointed tip of Golden Horned Beast's horns and intruded on the metal board. Very quickly, the last section of information from the Nine Volume Manual surged into Luo Feng's consciousness in a frenzied, unrestrained manner.

Chapter 1099: Palace Leader Shows Himself

Luo Feng had already gotten four black metals, and after getting the information of the fifth one, the Nine Volume Manual became complete. Only after he successfully got the complete Nine Volume Manual did he realize how extraordinary the manual was.

"Incredible." The Golden Horned Beast closed his eyes.

The words on Nine Volume Manual kept floating in his mind, and the combination of the words themselves formed a giant engraving picture! Each letter was a part of the engraving picture, and combining them made an engraving picture more complex than that of the miniature universe!

"How incredible! The letters in the manual constitute an engraving picture? I've never heard of such a thing."

Luo Feng was amazed. He understood that it was because the Nine Volume Manual had reached an extremely high level! The closer it was to the universe origin, the more mysterious it would be.

Like beast gods, their shapes were the manifestations of laws. The Nine Volume Manual was even rejected by universe operation law, and it couldn't be taught. Fortunately, Sitting Mountain Guest used Heavenly Soul Crystal to pass it, but he was only able to pass it on to one life. Others, like supreme inherited techniques, were bestowed by the universe directly! But Nine Volume Manual was rejected by the universe, which meant the manual was more powerful than supreme inherited techniques! And it couldn't be created by universe masters.

Golden Horned Beast was dazed in front of the black metal. He was thrilled at the sight of the complete manual, but he recovered shortly.

"I can't stay here for long. I need to leave now."

Golden Horned Beast put the black metal into his world ring using his godly power and glanced across the valuables beside it.

Hong!

A powerful force arrived and permeated the entire Blood Cloud Palace. The time and space in Blood Cloud Palace were completely controlled. Space ripples were paused.

"No!" Golden Horned Beast was startled. "It's a universe master!"

The Golden Horned Beast turned his head around and saw a ferocious being walking in. He wore a fiery cape and had two golden horns on his head. He also wore a mask, and his tail showed at the back of his armor. He stopped and stared at Golden Horned Beast.

"Blood Cloud Palace Leader," Golden Horned Beast said, turning around.

A universe master... thought Luo Feng. So what?

"Golden Horned Beast!" Blood Cloud Palace Leader gazed at him, then walked toward him. "You're right. I am Blood Cloud Palace Leader. However..."

His godly body started to change. The fiery cape became ordinary cyan armor. His aura changed. Fierceness became tranquility. The golden horns transformed into crystal, and the mask disappeared, revealing a familiar face.

"T—Teacher?" Golden Horned Beast blurted, baffled by the sight. Blood Cloud Palace Leader had turned into the shape of Master Sitting Mountain Guest! The aura was exactly the same as Sitting Mountain Guest, and aside from his aura, the power he emitted was stronger than that of Primal Chaos City Leader; that couldn't be replicated.

"Luo Feng." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled and said, "Did you expect this to happen?"

Golden Horned Beast blinked and recalled his conversation with Sitting Mountain Guest in the Beast God Sector. Luo Feng had asked whether it would take a trial for him to get the fifth black metal, and Sitting Mountain Guest had given him an ambiguous answer.

Luo Feng had been curious and kept asking, but Sitting Mountain Guest refused to answer him.

******

Outside the main palace of Blood Cloud Palace.

Sitting Mountain Guest looked at the endless black airflow in the space in the distance. Golden Horned Beast adjusted to the size of Sitting Mountain Guest and stood before him like a lion.

"Teacher, I didn't expect Blood Cloud Palace Leader to be you," said Golden Horned Beast body. "No wonder no one can deal with the Blood Cloud Palace."

"Blood Cloud Palace is only a body I made." Sitting Mountain Guest looked out into space and sighed. "Although it's only a body, it's as powerful as Primal Chaos City Leader. It's enough to roam the universe."

"Why were you posing as Blood Cloud Palace Leader?" Golden Horned Beast's eyes glinted with confusion. Sitting Mountain Guest didn't need any disguise, given his power.

"Because of you!" said Sitting Mountain Guest.

"Me?" The Golden Horned Beast was dazed.

Sitting Mountain Guest nodded. "Yes. To be exact, this is an identity I prepared specially for my third disciple. Whoever meets my requirement will inherit this position."

"Blood Cloud Palace Leader...? Inherit it?" Golden Horned Beast was stupefied.

Damn! thought Luo Feng. Teacher is bringing me trouble! Blood

Cloud Palace Leader is a maniac who has enemies all over creation! All the powers want nothing but his demise! And Teacher seems to want to have me inherit that position.

"Just as I cultivated your second brother," Sitting Mountain Guest exclaimed, "I created another identity, Northern Prison Master! When your second brother is powerful enough, I'll have him inherit that position."

"What?" Golden Horned Beast was even more shocked.

Blood Cloud Palace Leader and Northern Prison Master! Both of them were bodies made by Sitting Mountain Guest?

Northern Prison Master was an evil supreme being who was as infamous as Blood Cloud Palace Leader. He had a flying-palace type true treasure, "Northern Prison," that had the powers of sealing and suppression. When he fought his enemies, he liked trapping them inside the prison, and if they didn't have the clone technique, they would have to resort to self-destruction! He was even more ancient than Blood Cloud Palace Leader—an evil being well-known at the beginning of the universe, but he disappeared afterward.

"I meant to have your second brother inherit the position of Northern Prison Master." Sitting Mountain Guest shook his head. "However, he still fails to satisfy me after an eternity, which is why I made Northern Prison Master vanish. Your second brother is not qualified to be him."

Luo Feng was startled. Made him vanish?

"I don't have much hope for your second brother, which is why I devoted all my time and energies to you." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled and looked at Luo Feng.

"If second brother disappointed you, I might disappoint you someday," Golden Horned Beast said and lowered his head.

Sitting Mountain Guest smiled. "You already proved that you're better than your second brother when you successfully drove Star

Tower. Star Tower is extremely powerful. Universe knights, universe masters, and even universe supreme masters don't have a chance of using it. The weaker ones don't have a strong enough willpower. It's impressive of you to survive life or death inheritance as a sector lord. That said, although you are better than your second brother, you still haven't met my goal."

"Goal?" Golden Horned Beast looked at his teacher.

"Universe supreme master!" Sitting Mountain Guest said. This was the first time that he expressed his true will in front of Luo Feng. "When you become a universe supreme master, I'll succeed. If your second brother becomes a universe supreme master, I'll succeed as well. However, I don't think it's possible that he can become a universe supreme master, as he's walked in a wrong path."

Luo Feng was shocked. Both his oldest brother and second brother were universe masters, yet Sitting Mountain Guest was still disappointed and cultivated the third disciple. It turned out that Sitting Mountain Guest would like his disciple to become a universe supreme master! What a crazy idea!

There were only few universe supreme masters in the universe. A race would be a pinnacle race if it had just one universe supreme master! And a power would be a superpower if it had one! Even those universe supreme masters that roamed the universe alone were the greatest and eternal beings! It was already incredible that Sitting Mountain Guest could reach the level himself, but he wanted to make his disciple a universe supreme master! Crazy!

However, Luo Feng couldn't help admiring his teacher. Sitting Mountain Guest did a wonderful job. He had cultivated the bloodline of the Flame God Race and earthlings, and he even made incredible true treasures like Force Armor and Original Soul, which were easy for him to create. He even created a supreme true treasure: Star Tower!

"It is extremely difficult to become a universe supreme master," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "You'll never become a universe supreme master if you keep practicing all by yourself! Each universe supreme master became one because of their experience and luck, but all of them became universe supreme masters through blood and fire! You can't train yourself by excessive killings because of the bond you have with your race. Which is why I give you the identity of Blood Cloud Palace Leader! No one will know who you are, and your enemies are all around the universe... Once you show yourself up in the universe, all your enemies will race toward you."

Sitting Mountain Guest gazed at Luo Feng. "You'll grow with all the training you have from your enemies. This is the best way I know to cultivate a universe supreme master."

"They'll recognize me!" Golden Horne Beast blinked his eyes and was dazed.

"They won't!" Sitting Mountain Guest waved his hands, and a bloody pearl showed up. "This is a special true treasure called 'Blood Cloud Pearl.' It can change your aura and even camouflage your armor. No one will be able to recognize you, and the flying-palace type true treasure Blood Cloud Palace will be yours too. Of course, if you disappoint me, I'll take back Blood Cloud Palace and Blood Cloud Pearl as I did to your second brother."

Sitting Mountain Guest gazed at Golden Horned Beast. "My disciple! It'll be a new journey for you when you become Blood Cloud Palace Leader! Do you dare to accept it?"

Chapter 1100: Promise

The golden eyes of Golden Horned Beast glinted fiercely, "I do!"

Killing? A path of great beings? A new journey? It all sounded interesting!

"You crave for killing innately." Sitting Mountain Guest gazed at Golden Horned Beast and nodded contently. "You're a fit for Blood Cloud Palace Leader." He threw out the Blood Cloud Pearl. "Seal your life imprint in it and control the pearl."

Golden Horned Beast immediately penetrated Blood Cloud Pearl in the sky with a trace of his godly power, and the pearl recognized Luo Feng as its master instantly. Blood Cloud Pearl, a true treasure specially coined by Sitting Mountain Guest, had no information contained on it, and its function was peculiar.

Actually, many true treasures coined by Sitting Mountain Guest had peculiar attributes, like Original Soul and Force Armor. They all had strict conditions for users, and those who failed to meet the conditions were not able to use them, which showed the ability of Sitting Mountain Guest to coin true treasures.

Hu!

Golden Horned Beast opened his mouth, and the Blood Cloud Pearl flew inside.

Suddenly, the godly body of Golden Horned Beast started to change. His hind legs became longer and stronger while his chest and belly had more strength. The previously crouched creature became a standing one! There was a silver mask on his face, and there were two golden horns on his forehead. The scaled wings on his back immediately disappeared, and even the color of the Beast God Armor started to change slowly. It became a fiery cape, and a scaled tail extended out.

Endless killing power emanated from its body! Wicked! Mad! He

became the shape of Blood Cloud Palace Leader.

"Hahaha! This Blood Cloud Pearl of mine. Isn't it fantastic?" Mountain Sitting Guest stood aside and looked at the transformed body as if it were an exquisite piece of artwork.

"Incredible!" Luo Feng couldn't help exclaiming. "Both my power and my aura are given out by Blood Cloud Pearl! It's even able to change the structure of my godly body, but my power isn't affected at all after turning from a Golden Horned Beast! It's also able to camouflage my Beast God Armor. It's magical."

"I needed to kill a universe master to create the Blood Cloud Pearl," Sitting Mountain Guest continued. "And I had to kill him by soul to preserve his godly body! Then, I used a large amount of material on his godly body to transform it into a Blood Cloud Pearl so that it could give out special power and aura! It's even able to change your godly body into the structure I designed and camouflage a true treasure..."

Luo Feng was dazed.

Blood Cloud Pearl was a peculiar true treasure. It didn't have any combat power, but it was desired by many supreme beings. However, Luo Feng didn't expect it to require a universe master to be killed by soul before it could be created. Perhaps only universe supreme masters were able to do that.

"Remember!" Sitting Mountain Guest said. "Be careful when you use Star Tower. If you use Star Tower for attacks, it might not be identified by other great beings, but if you use it to flee, it'll definitely be exposed."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

Star Tower shrank to the size of a palm, taking the shape of a cone. It could be used as a horn. However, Luo Feng would need to enlarge Star Tower if he used it to run, and then it would be exposed.

"You'll definitely expose yourself if you use it to save your life." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled. "Whether you use Star Tower as Blood Cloud Palace Leader or Luo Feng depends on you."

Luo Feng nodded. If Luo Feng used Star Tower exposed and Blood Cloud Palace Leader used Star Tower exposed, he would basically be telling the universe that Luo Feng was Blood Cloud Palace Leader!

"There's another valuable for you to save yourself, Blood Cloud Palace. I just took back my life imprint." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled. "And from now on, it belongs to you."

"Blood Cloud Palace?"

Luo Feng turned around and looked at the towering palace. He immediately infused his godly power to the ground and sealed his life imprint in the palace. Blood Cloud Palace became a part of him, and everything inside the palace was under his control. He could even see the treasure vault inside.

"Blood Cloud Palace is a top-tier flying-palace type true treasure." Sitting Mountain Guest said. "It's extremely precious. Remember, you can use it only when you disguise yourself as Blood Cloud Palace Leader. Otherwise, your identity will be exposed."

Luo Feng nodded.

"I hope I will not take it back someday." Sitting Mountain Guest grinned.

"I am not my second brother," Luo Feng replied.

"I'll make you a promise, just as I did with your second brother. "

"A promise?" Luo Feng listened carefully.

Sitting Mountain Guest smiled. "If you can kill ten top-tier universe overlords or one universe master when you're a universe knight, I'll coin a pinnacle true treasure for you with the material you give me. The material needed to make a pinnacle true treasure

is one-tenth the worth of a pinnacle true treasure itself."

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. Pinnacle true treasures were desired even by Primal Chaos City Leader and Huge Axe Creator. Ancestor and Sitting Mountain Guest bet on valuables at this level as well.

"However, if you become a universe master, the conditions will be much demanding. You'll need to kill at least 100 top-tier universe overlords or 10 universe masters before I make a pinnacle true treasure for you." Sitting Mountain Guest smiled strangely. "When I say 'pinnacle true treasures,' that includes domain type true treasures and flying-palace type true treasures."

Luo Feng's eyes shone. Damn! The best true treasures currently owned by the human race were pinnacle domain type true treasures.

"I'll make a list of the materials needed for the true treasure you want," said Sitting Mountain Guest. "Don't expect too much. The materials needed for pinnacle domain type true treasures are so scarce that even your race might not be able to gather it all."

"They will," Luo Feng said, feeling motivated.

"Remember, you need to kill 10 top-tier universe overlords or one universe master when you're a universe knight, and if you become a universe master, the number will be tenfold." Sitting Mountain Guest sighed. "I gave the promise to your second brother as well. He was already a universe master when he inherited the identity of Northern Prison Master, but he never met my conditions."

Luo Feng was rendered speechless. Killing 10 universe masters? How demanding was that!

Power wasn't all that mattered. Universe masters were experts at surviving. Even when it came to universe overlords, they were able to stall and call for help so that a supreme being or even a universe supreme master could arrive! After all, all of them had powers supporting them, and they would call for help if they knew their

lives were at risk.

Even universe supreme masters would find it difficult to kill 10 top-tier universe masters. No wonder Flame Emperor had failed!

"I need to kill 10 top-tier universe overlords or one universe master?" Luo Feng exclaimed. "None of the top-tier universe overlords are easy to deal with, and they might even summon universe masters to save them. As for universe masters, the best I can do is to fight them. Kill them?"

The conditions Sitting Mountain Guest put forward were incredibly difficult to meet, but the promise enticed Luo Feng.

"My teacher just wants me to kill." Luo Feng saw through Sitting Mountain Guest.

"This is Blood Cloud Token." Sitting Mountain Guest threw out a red token.

Luo Feng took it. It looked like the token his teacher had given him for contact.

"After it recognizes you as its master, you can give orders to the 18 servants using this token," Sitting Mountain Guest explained. "All the 18 slaves are universe knights, and they're responsible for other special life forms."

"Servants?" Luo Feng was curious.

"When I created Blood Cloud Palace Leader, I saved some special life forms during my adventure in the universe. They all begged to recognize me as their master. I'm a special life form myself, so I wanted to protect them. The more time I spent, the more life forms I saved. 18 of them became universe knights under my instructions, and three of them are top-tier universe overlords. You can use the token to learn the basic information about the 18 universe knights. I've been protecting them for an eternity, and now, it's your turn. Take care of them when you can."

Sitting Mountain Guest paused for a moment. "Star Tower, Force

Armor, and Blood Cloud Palace... You've got everything. And I've done everything I can. And now, you're the one who can shape your future."

Sitting Mountain Guest looked at Luo Feng, and then, he disappeared.

Luo Feng remained standing where he was. He felt the expectations in the look Sitting Mountain Guest gave him. Sitting Mountain Guest had cultivated Flame Emperor, and he was cultivating Luo Feng now. Apparently, he wanted a disciple who was a universe supreme master.

Perhaps there's a secret behind this, Luo Feng thought.

Luo Feng immediately took up Blood Cloud Token. Teacher Sitting Mountain Guest asked him to take care of those special life forms as much as he could. He should definitely devote some effort to this.

******

Luo Feng gave an order to the 18 servants through the token; he asked them to bring all the special life forms under them to see him in Blood Cloud Palace.

"Master wants to see us."

"Quick."

"You're lucky, little one. Master is seeing you."

"Ah! We're only sector lords. Can we really see our master?"

Teams of special life forms in Ancient Chin Secret Region started to rush toward Blood Cloud Palace. It was like a pilgrimage to them. After all, Blood Cloud Palace Leader only stayed in contact with those 18 knights. Other special life forms had no way to contact the palace leader.

They finished gathering after a little over a day. All 18 universe knights led the special life forms under them to move forward in

the dark and flew toward Blood Cloud Palace.

The door of the palace was opened. Traces of light flew across them.

Inside the main palace of Blood Cloud Palace, Black Sky Horde Leader, Silver Dragon Knight, and Black Thorn Devil Master were at the front, followed by 15 universe overlords and senior universe knights. They were followed by hundreds of undying special life forms who were, in turn, followed by thousands of sector-lord special life forms.

"Master," the three top-tier universe overlords groveled.

"Master," all the special life forms groveled.

Blood Cloud Palace Master sat in his bloody throne, looking down upon them.

Table of Contents

- Swallowed Star
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1001: Talent Technique
  - Chapter 1002: Creation!
  - Chapter 1003: Change after 500 Years
  - Chapter 1004: I Am the Universe
  - Chapter 1005: Luo Feng's World
  - Chapter 1006: Laws Are Finished – Become Undying
  - Chapter 1007: Ultimate Techniques
  - Chapter 1008: 50,000 Years Wandering in the Universe
  - Chapter 1009: Undying Fighter Luo Feng
  - Chapter 1010: Forceful
  - Chapter 1011: Luo Feng's God Country
  - Chapter 1012: Mountainside
  - Chapter 1013: Honor
  - Chapter 1014: Bark Mirror Emperor and Blade River Emperor
  - Chapter 1015: Mad Luo Feng
  - Chapter 1016: Universe Overlord
  - Chapter 1017: Blade River Emperor, You Are Vicious!
  - Chapter 1018: Prove Himself
  - Chapter 1019: Supreme Council
  - Chapter 1020: Weaponize
  - Chapter 1021: Turn Back Time
  - Chapter 1022: Golden Thread Aurora Mirror
  - Chapter 1023: The Cusp of Public Opinion
  - Chapter 1024: Supreme Council Meeting
  - Chapter 1025: The Original Star
  - Chapter 1026: Great Beings Come
  - Chapter 1027: Going to the Yan Shen Race
  - Chapter 1028: Flame Emperor
  - Chapter 1029: The Impenetrable Net between Heaven and Earth
  - Chapter 1030: Universe Overlords
  - Chapter 1031: One Strike, All Out
  - Chapter 1032: The Original Star Opened

Chapter 1033: The First Encounter
Chapter 1034: Flame Emperor’s Ambition
Chapter 1035: This is the Force Armor!
Chapter 1036: Entering the Original Stars
Chapter 1037: Chancing upon a Valuable
Chapter 1038: All Out
Chapter 1039: A Pair of Wings for a Shield
Chapter 1040: Blade River Luo
Chapter 1041: Escape
Chapter 1042: Qi Blood Spear
Chapter 1043: Superpowers that Should Not Be Underestimated
Chapter 1044: A Meeting on the Original Stars
Chapter 1045: Tian Yang Knight
Chapter 1046: Fu Mo Master
Chapter 1047: Three Universe Masters Meet Each Other
Chapter 1048: Space Beast Alliance Sanctuary
Chapter 1049: Nine Tiger River
Chapter 1050: Take Off
Chapter 1051: Yin Fa Secret Region Craftsman Star
Chapter 1052: Chrysalis Knight
Chapter 1053: In the Flames
Chapter 1054: Flame Space of the Craftsman Star
Chapter 1055: Craftsman Master is Back
Chapter 1056: Land of Extremis
Chapter 1057: The Prisoner in the Land of Extremis
Chapter 1058: The Golden River in the Sky
Chapter 1059: Star Tear Gold
Chapter 1060: Space God Mountain
Chapter 1061: Golden Horn Master
Chapter 1062: Space Beast Ancestor
Chapter 1063: Beast God Sector
Chapter 1064: The Only Possibility
Chapter 1065: Accident
Chapter 1066: Miniature Universe
Chapter 1067: Hundreds of Millions of Years
Chapter 1068: A Technique Made in Heaven
Chapter 1069: Fight Ancestor
Chapter 1070: It Was Named ‘Northern Rock’
Chapter 1071: Back to the Original Universe

Chapter 1072: Plight
Chapter 1073: Paying a Visit
Chapter 1074: A Moving Treasure Vault
Chapter 1075: It’s Luo Feng!
Chapter 1076: Prey
Chapter 1077: It’s a Trap!
Chapter 1078: Top-Tier Universe Overlord
Chapter 1079: Reputation Gained
Chapter 1080: The Runaway Tian Yang Knight
Chapter 1081: Why is it Dark?
Chapter 1082: The Wings Were a True Treasure
Chapter 1083: Change in the Wing
Chapter 1084: Lord of Fan Nuo Fortress and Luo Feng
Chapter 1085: Blossoming Snow Vine
Chapter 1086: Resurrection
Chapter 1087: The Disambiguation Temple
Chapter 1088: Decision
Chapter 1089: Luo Feng’s Resolution
Chapter 1090: My Home Planet: Earth
Chapter 1091: Turmoil
Chapter 1092: My Heart is Peaceful
Chapter 1093: The Foundation Is Built
Chapter 1094: Farewell
Chapter 1095: Star Tower Disappeared
Chapter 1096: Looking for Star Tower
Chapter 1097: Ancient Chin Secret Region
Chapter 1098: Blood Cloud Palace
Chapter 1099: Palace Leader Shows Himself
Chapter 1100: Promise